





Class PC 2109

Book L 7

PRESENTED BY

1839







# CLASSIC.

PRINTED

W. E. DEAN, 2 ANN-STREET.

**KEY TO BONNYCASTLES ALGBERA**: containing correct Solutions of all the Questions. By James Ryan. 18mo.

**RYAN'S ASTRONOMY** on an improved plan, in three Books; systematically arranged and scientifically illustrated with several cuts and engravings, and adapted to the instruction of youth, in Schools and Academies. 18mo.

**PLAYFAIR'S EUCLID**: a New Edition, Revised and Corrected; for the use of Schools and Colleges in the United States. By James Ryan.

**BONNYCASTLE'S ALGEBRA**: with Notes and Observations, designed for the use of Schools. To which is added, an Appendix on the Application of Algebra to Geometry. By James Ryan. 12mo.

**RECUEIL CHOISI de Traits Historiques et de Contes Moraux**: with the signification of Words in English at the bottom of each page: for the use of Young Persons of both Sexes. By N. Wanothrocht. 12mo.

**HISTORY OF CHARLES XII.** in French, by Voltaire. 18mo.

**LEVIZAC'S FRENCH GRAMMAR**: revised and corrected by Mr. Stephen Pasquier, M. A. With the Voltarian Orthography, according to the Dictionary of the French Academy. 12mo.

**JACOB'S GREEK READER**; Corrected and Improved, with numerous Notes, Additions, and Alterations, not in any former edition; also a copious Lexicon. By Patrick S. Casserly, T.C.D. 8vo.

**VALPY'S HOMER**; for the use of Schools. With English Notes. By John D. Ogilby. 8vo.

**COLLECTANEA GRÆCA MINORA**; with extensive English Notes and a Lexicon. 8vo.

**VALPY'S GREEK GRAMMAR**; greatly enlarged and improved, by Charles Anthon, LL. D. 12mo.

**ADAM'S LATIN GRAMMAR**; with numerous expansions and Additions, designed to make the work more elementary and complete, and to facilitate the acquisition of a thorough knowledge of the Latin language. By James D. Johnson, A.M. 12mo.

**MYTHOLOGICAL FABLES**: translated by Dryden, Pope, Congreve, Addison, and others; prepared expressly for the use of Youth. 12mo.

**BECK'S CHEMISTRY**: a New and Improved Edition.

**CONKLING'S YOUNG CITIZEN'S MANUAL**, a new edition, enlarged and improved; with the Constitution of the United States and State of New York added. 18mo.

Edin-  
Carson,  
added, Copi-  
and an Exempli-  
David Patterson,

John D. Ogilby. 12mo.

EXERCISES illustrated with English  
of Proper Names. By David Patterson, A. M.

12mo.

**LATIN READER**; Parts I. & II. by Frederick Jacobs and Frederick William Doring; with Notes and Illustrations, partly translated from the German and partly drawn from other sources. By John D. Ogilby. 12mo.

**LEMPRIERE'S CLASSICAL DICTIONARY**; containing the principal Names and Terms relating to the Geography, Topography, History, Literature, and Mythology of the Ancients. Revised, corrected, and arranged in a new form, by Lorenzo L. da Ponte and John D. Ogilby. 8vo.

**ADAM'S ROMAN ANTIQUITIES**; a new Edition, from a late English Copy, illustrated with upwards of 100 Engravings on steel and wood, with notes and improvements, by L. L. da Ponte, Editor of the Seventh, Eighth, Ninth, and Tenth American Editions of Lempriere's Classical Dictionary.

**BLAIR'S LECTURES ON RHETORIC**; abridged, with questions for the use of Schools. 18mo.

**ENGLISH EXERCISES**: adapted to Murray's English Grammar, consisting of Exercises in Parsing, instances of False Orthography, violations of the Rules of Syntax, Defects in Punctuation; and violations of the Rules respecting Perspicuous and Accurate Writing Designed for the benefit of private learners, as well as for the use of Schools. By Lindley Murray. 18mo.

**BLACKSTONE'S COMMENTARIES** on the Laws of England: with Notes by Christian, Chitty, Lee, Hovenden, and Ryland. Also a life of the Author: and References to American Cases. By a Member of the New-York bar. 2 vols. 8vo.

**MURRAY'S MATERIA MEDICA AND PHARMACY**, including Translations of the Edinburgh, London, and Dublin Pharmacopœias. With Notes and Additions, by John B. Beck, M. D. 8vo.

**PARIS' PHARMACOLOGIA**: with Notes and Additions, by John B. Beck, M. D. 8vo.

**RICHERAND'S PHYSIOLOGY**: translated from the French, by G. J. M. de Lys, M. D. With Notes and a copious Appendix, by James Popland, M. D. 8vo.

**COBB'S FIRST BOOK**, or Introduction to the Spelling-Book designed for the use of small children.

**COBB'S JUVENILE READER**, No. 1; containing interesting, moral, and instructive Reading Lessons.

**COBB'S JUVENILE READER**, No. 2; containing interesting, moral, and instructive Reading Lessons.

**COBB'S JUVENILE READER**, No. 3; containing interesting, historical, moral, and instructive Reading Lessons.

958915  
4854 F  
48  
Dean's Stereotype Edition.

A

THEORETICAL  
AND  
PRACTICAL GRAMMAR  
OF  
THE FRENCH TONGUE;

IN WHICH THE  
PRESENT USAGE IS DISPLAYED,

AGREEABLY TO THE DECISIONS OF

THE FRENCH ACADEMY.

*Jean Pons Victor Lecouty*  
BY M. DE LÉVIZAC.

REVISED AND CORRECTED BY

MR. STEPHEN PASQUIER, M. A.

OF THE UNIVERSITY OF PARIS, AND TEACHER OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE TO THE  
CHARTER-HOUSE SCHOOL.

---

FIFTEENTH AMERICAN EDITION,

WITH THE VOLTARIAN ORTHOGRAPHY, ACCORDING TO THE DICTIONARY OF THE  
FRENCH ACADEMY.

TO WHICH HAVE BEEN ADDED

SEVERAL TABLES ON THE FORMATION OF VERBS, AND  
THE CONSTRUCTION OF PRONOUNS,

FROM THE

SYNOPTICAL FRENCH GRAMMAR,

BY PROFESSOR J. MOULS.

---

NEW YORK:

W. E. DEAN, PRINTER & PUBLISHER, 2 ANN ST.  
COLLINS, KEESE & CO., 254 PEARL STREET.

1839.

PC 2109  
L 7  
1839

ENTERED,  
According to the Act of Congress, in the year 1835, by  
WILLIAM E. DEAN,  
In the Clerk's office of the District Court of the Southern District of  
NEW YORK.

John A. Reed  
July 31 '25

---

STEREOTYPED BY FRANCIS F. RIPLEY,  
NEW YORK.



## PREFACE.

---

THE distinguished success that has attended the Grammar of M. de Lévizac, which has been adopted by the most celebrated Schools in England, is a sufficient proof that it is one of the most useful that has hitherto appeared: it has, indeed, one advantage, that will always secure it a preference above every other: all the principles it contains, as well as the Orthography of Voltaire, are sanctioned by the authority of the French Academy, and by all the Grammarians of eminence, who for nearly a century have laboured to ascertain and fix the true rules of the French Language. Another advantage, not less valuable, is, that almost all the phrases given as examples or exercises, being drawn from the Dictionary of the Academy, or the most approved French writers, the Student of this Grammar will store his mind with none but pure and correct forms of speech, and will not be liable to contract vicious modes of expression, and imbibe error while aiming at instruction. The proprietors have been particularly careful with respect to the correctness and simplicity of the present Edition, which they have submitted to a strict revision, and which, on a comparison, will be found to surpass preceding Editions, both in the copiousness of its remarks and its general perspicuity.

# EXPLANATION

## OF THE ABBREVIATIONS USED IN THE EXERCISES

m.	stands for	masculine.
f.	-	- feminine.
pl.	-	- plural.
s. or sing.	-	- singular.
h m.	-	- h mute.
h asp.	-	- h aspirated.
pr.	-	- preposition.
art.	-	- article.
pr.-art.	-	- article contracted.
pron	-	- pronoun.
inf-1	-	- present of the infinitive.
inf-2	-	- the past.
inf-3	-	- participle present.
inf-4	-	- participle past.
ind-1	-	- present of the indicative.
ind-2	-	- imperfect.
ind-3	-	- preterit definite.
ind-4	-	- preterit indefinite.
ind-5	-	- preterit anterior.
ind-6	-	- pluperfect.
ind-7	-	- future absolute.
ind-8	-	- future anterior.
cond-1	-	- present of the conditional.
cond-2	-	- first conditional past.
cond-3	-	- second conditional past.
imp.	-	- imperative.
subj-1	-	- present of the subjunctive
subj-2	-	- imperfect.
subj-3	-	- preterit.
subj-4	-	- pluperfect.

\* in the exercises denotes that the word under which it is placed, is not expressed in French.

— denotes that the English word (see page 74) is spelt alike in French, or at least the part under which this sign is placed.

= denotes that the French word differs from the English only by its termination, as directed page 75.

Those French words which are followed by the above signs, are to take the form which they point out.

In the *Third part* the \* is no longer placed under the word, but after it.

In filling the exercises, the order of the figures placed sometimes in the phrases after the French words, is to be observed.

In the exercises, when several English words are included between a parenthesis, they must be translated by the only words placed under.



# CONTENTS.

	PAGE		PAGE
THE French Alphabet.....	1	Exercises on Monosyllables.....	10
General Observations.....	2	———— Dissyllables.....	12
The Vowels.....	2	———— Words of Three	
Accentuation and Punctuation..	3	Syllables.....	14
TABLE I. The seventeen Simple		Of Consonants.....	17
Sounds.....	4	Of Gender.....	37
TABLE II. Coalition of Letters, re-		A Vocabulary, French and Eng-	
presenting the 17 Simple Sounds	5	lish.....	43
TABLE III. The Diphthongs.....	6 & 7		
Observations upon the two first		GRAMMAR.	
Tables.....		8 Introduction.....	71
Of the Y.....	4	9 Apostrophe and Elision.....	75 and fol.

## PART I.

### OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR NATURE AND INFLECTIONS.

CHAPTER I.			
Of the Substantive.....	78	Of the Degrees of Signification of	
Substantive Common.....	79	Adjectives.....	93
Proper.....	79	Positive.....	93
Collectives.....	79	Comparative of Superiori-	
Of Masculine Gender.....	79	ty.....	93
Feminine Gender.....	79	Inferiority.....	94
Of Singular Number.....	79	Equality.....	94
Plural Number.....	80	On MEILLEUR, MOINDRE, and PIRE	95
Of the Formation of the Plural.	80	Of the Superlative.....	96
General Rule.....	80	Agreement of the Adjective with	
		the Substantive.....	97
		Nouns and Adjectives of Num-	
		ber.....	99
CHAPTER II.			
Of the Article.....	82	CHAPTER IV.	
Elision of the Article.....	82	Of the Pronoun.....	102
Contraction of the Article.....	83	1. Of the Personal Pronoun..	102
Cases in which contraction does		Pronouns of the First Person	103
not take place.....	84	Second Per-	
General Rules on the Article....	85	son.....	103
Of the Article in a partitive sense	86	Third Per-	
		son.....	104
CHAPTER III.		Reflected or Reciprocal Pro-	
Of the Adjective.....	87	nouns.....	107
Of the Formation of the Feminine		Of EN and Y.....	105 and 109
Adjectives.....	88	2. Possessive Pronouns.....	110
Exceptions.....	90	Of those that always agree	
Of the Formation of the Plural of		with a Noun <i>expressed</i> ....	110
Adjectives.....	91		

	PAGE		PAGE
Of those that always agree with Nouns <i>understood</i> ...	111	Conjugation of the impersonal Verb <i>y AVOIR</i> .....	181
3. Of Relative Pronouns.....	113	Of the Irregular Verbs.....	182
4. Of Pronouns Absolute.....	114	Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation.....	182
5. Of Demonstrative Pronouns	115	Irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation.....	184
6. Of Indefinite Pronouns.....	116	Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation.....	191
First Class.....	116	Irregular Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation.....	196
Second Class.....	118	Irregular Verbs of the First Branch of the Fourth Conjugation.....	196
Third Class.....	119	Irregular Verbs Second Branch.....	202
Fourth Class.....	120	Irregular Verbs Fourth Branch.....	204
CHAPTER V.		Observations.....	209
Of Verbs.....	120	Table of the Primitive Tenses of the Four Regular Conjugations	210
Characteristics of Verbs.....	120	Table of the Primitive Tenses of the Irregular and Defective Verbs.....	210
The Five Sorts of Verbs.....	122	Moul's Table of the Formation of Verbs.....	213
Of Conjugations.....	124	CHAPTER VI.	
Of the Auxiliary Verb <i>AVOIR</i> ....	130	Of Prepositions.....	215
The same Verb with a Negative	132	CHAPTER VII.	
interrogatively.....	133	Of the Adverb.....	222
and affirmatively.....	133	CHAPTER VIII.	
interrogatively.....	134	Of Conjunctions.....	227
and negatively.....	134	CHAPTER IX.	
Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb <i>ETRE</i> .....	136	Of Interjections.....	232
1. Conjugation in <i>ER</i> .....	142		
2. <i>IR</i> .....	151		
3. <i>OIR</i> .....	158		
4. <i>RE</i> .....	162		
Conjugation of the Pronominal Verbs.....	168		
Passive Verbs.....	176		
Conjugation of the Neuter Verbs	177		
Of the Impersonal Verbs.....	178		
Conjugation of the impersonal Verb <i>FALLOIR</i> .....	179		

## PART II.

### THE SYNTAX, OR WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION.

CHAPTER I.		CHAPTER IV.	
Of the Substantive.....	233	Of the Pronouns.....	245
Of Compound Nouns.....	233	1. Of Personal Pronouns.....	245
CHAPTER II.		Of the Place of Personal Pronouns.....	245
Of the Article.....	235	Of Personal Pronouns used as Subject.....	245
A comparative Table on the Use of the Article.....	236	Of Personal Pronouns used as Regimen.....	246
CHAPTER III.		Moul's table of the Construction of Pronouns....	249
Of the Adjective.....	239	2. Of the Relative Pronouns..	252
Difference of Construction between the English and French Languages.....	241	3. Of Pronouns Absolute.....	255
Regimen of the Adjectives.....	242	4. Of Demonstrative Pronouns	258
Promiscuous Exercises.....	243	5. Of Indefinite Pronouns....	260
		First Class.....	260
		Second Class.....	263

	PAGE		PAGE
Third Class.....	265	Agreement of the Participle Past	
Fourth Class.....	270	with its Subject.....	289
A general exercise on the Pro-		Agreement of the Participle Past	
nouns.....	272	with its Regimen.....	291
CHAPTER V.		CHAPTER VI.	
Of the Verb.....	274	Of the Adverbs.....	295
Agreement of the Verb with the		Situation of Adverbs.....	295
Subject.....	274	CHAPTER VII.	
Of the Regimen of Verbs.....	277	Of the Conjunctions.....	297
— Nature and use of Moods		— Conjunction QUE.....	297
and Tenses.....	280	Government of Conjunctions....	299
— Indicative.....	280	Conjunctions that are followed by	
— Conditional.....	283	an Infinitive.....	299
— Imperative.....	284	Conjunctions that govern the In-	
— Subjunctive.....	285	dicative.....	300
— Infinitive.....	286	Conjunctions that govern the	
— Participle.....	287	Subjunctive.....	301
— Participle Present.....	287	Promiscuous Exercises.....	301
— Past.....	289		

## PART III.

### IDIOMS, OR WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES.

CHAPTER I.		Of QUOI and OÙ.....	352 and 353
Of the Substantive.....	306	ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS—Of QUI, OÙ,	
CHAPTER II.		and QUOI.....	355
Of the Article.....	309	DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.....	355
Cases in which the Article is to		INDEFINITE PRONOUNS—Of ON....	359
be used.....	309	Of QUINCONQUE and CHACUN....	360
Cases in which the Article is not		Of PERSONNE, L'UN ET L'AUTRE,	
used.....	314	and NI L'UN NI L'AUTRE, TOUT,	
CHAPTER III.		and RIEN.....	362
Of the Adjective.....	318	Of TOUT.....	365
— with the Article.....	318	OI QUELQUE—QUE and QUEL QUE.	
The Place of Adjectives.....	320	364 and 365.	
Regimen of Adjectives.....	323	CHAPTER V.	
Adjectives of Number.....	324	Of the VERB.—Agreement of the	
CHAPTER IV.		Verb with its Subject.....	366
Of Pronouns.....	326	Of the Collective Partitive.....	367
PRONOUNS PERSONAL.....	326	Place of the Subject, with regard	
On the Pronoun SOI.....	332	to the Verb.....	369
Cases in which the Pronouns		Government of Verbs.....	375
ELLE, ELLES, EUX, LUI, LEUR,		On the Use, proper and accident-	
may apply to things.....	333	al, of Moods and Tenses, Indic-	
Difficulty respecting the Pronoun		ative.....	375
explained.....	336	Use of the Conditional.....	382
Repetition of the Personal Pro-		REMARK on the Use of the Condi-	
nouns.....	338	tional and Future.....	384
Relation of the Pronouns of the		Use of the Subjunctive.....	385
Third Person to a Noun ex-		Relations between the Tenses of	
pressed before.....	341	the Indicative.....	383
Explanation of some Difficulties		Relations between the Tenses of	
attendant on the POSSESSIVE		the Subjunctive and those of	
PRONOUNS.....	343	the Indicative.....	390
RELATIVE PRONOUNS—Of QUI....	347	Farther Observations upon the	
Of QUE.....	350	Conditional and Subjunctive....	394
Of LEQUEL and DONT.....	351	Relations between the Tenses of	
		the different Moods.....	395
		Relations of the Indicative.....	395
		— to the Conditional, &c....	396

	PAGE		PAGE
Relations of the Present and Future Absolute, &c.....	396	<b>CHAPTER IX.</b>	
Principal Relations with the Subjunctive.....	398	Of Grammatical Discordances, Amphibologies and Gallicisms.....	419
Of the Infinitive.....	398	Of Amphibologies.....	421
<b>CHAPTER VI.</b>		Of Gallicisms.....	422
Of Prepositions.....	401	FREE EXERCISES.....	424
The Use of the Article with Prepositions.....	403	Phrases on some Difficulties of the French Language.....	433
Repetition of the Prepositions....	403	On the Collective Partitives.....	435
Government of Prepositions....	404	Of some Verbs which cannot be conjugated with AVOIR.....	435
<b>CHAPTER VII.</b>		On Words of Quantity.....	435
Of the Adverb—Of the Negative NE.....	405	On the Personal Pronouns.....	435
Of the Place of the Negatives....	406	On <i>SOI, LUI, SOI-MEME, and LUI-MEME</i> .....	436
Of the Use of <i>PAS</i> and <i>POINT</i> ....	406	On the Relative Pronouns.....	436
When may both <i>PAS</i> and <i>POINT</i> be omitted?.....	407	On the Demonstrative Pronouns	437
When ought both <i>PAS</i> and <i>POINT</i> to be omitted?.....	407	On the Verbs <i>AVOIR</i> employed impersonally.....	437
On <i>PLUS</i> and <i>DAVANTAGE</i> .....	411	Promiscuous Phrases.....	438
On <i>SI, AUSSI, TANT, and AUTANT</i> ..	412	Phrases in which the Article is used.....	440
<b>CHAPTER VIII.</b>		Phrases in which the Article is omitted.....	441
Of Grammatical Construction....	413	On the Pronoun <i>LE</i> .....	442
Of Inversion.....	416	On the Participle Past.....	443
Of the Ellipsis.....	417	On the Principal Relations of Moods and Tenses.....	443
Of the Pleonasm.....	418	On the Negative <i>NE</i> .....	444
Of the Syllepsis.....	419	On some Delicacies of the French Language.....	446

# FRENCH GRAMMAR.

GRAMMAR, in general, is the art of *speaking* and *writing* correctly.

*To speak*—is to convey our thoughts by means of articulated sounds.

*To write*—is to render those thoughts permanently visible by means of certain signs, or characters, called *Letters*, and their number disposed in order, constitutes what is called the ALPHABET.

## FRENCH ALPHABET.

ROMAN LETTERS. ITALIC LETTERS. OLD PRONUNCIATION. NEW PRONUNCIATION.

A	a	A	a	ah	ah
B	b	B	b	bay*	be*
C	c	C	c	say	ke
D	d	D	d	day	de
E	e	E	e	a	a
F	f	F	f	eff	fe
G	g	G	g	jay†	ghe
H	h	H	h	ahsh	he
I	i	I	i	e	e
J	j	J	j	jeet†	jet†
K	k	K	k	kah	ke
L	l	L	l	ell	le
M	m	M	m	emm	me
N	n	N	n	enn	ne
O	o	O	o	o	o
P	p	P	p	pay	pe
Q	q	Q	q	ku†	ke
R	r	R	r	heir	re
S	s	S	s	ess	se
T	t	T	t	tay	te
U	u	U	u	u†	u†
V	v	V	v	vay	ve
X	x	X	x	eeks	kse
Y	y	Y	y	e grec	e grec
Z	z	Z	z	zed	ze

\* Here both the old pronunciation and the new are expressed by English sounds, and in the new the letter *e* after each consonant is sounded as in the English word *battery*.

† The two consonants *g* and *j* are sounded in the Alphabet like *s* in *pleasure*, or *z* in *azure*.

‡ See the second note, page 4.



## GENERAL OBSERVATIONS.

The French ALPHABET contains, as we see, *twenty-five letters*, which are divided into *Vowels* and *Consonants*.

A *vowel* is the simple emission of the *voice* forming an articulate sound by itself.

A *consonant*, on the contrary, cannot be articulated without the assistance of a *vowel*.

The vowels are *a, e, i, o, u*, and *y*, which sometimes has the sound of *one i*, and sometimes of *two*.

The nineteen remaining letters, *b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, x, z*, are consonants.

## THE VOWELS.

N. B.	<p>The French language comprehends more distinct simple sounds than are here represented by the above five vowels; for, according as these are pronounced close or broad, short or long, with the appropriate accentuation, they furnish—<i>ten simple sounds</i>.</p> <p>Add to these—<i>three</i> other <i>simple sounds</i>, each represented by the combination of two vowels, and</p> <p>Lastly—<i>four nasal simple sounds</i>, which again, for want of more appropriate signs, are represented by the coalition of <i>n</i> or <i>m</i> with the above vowels, and they complete the number of</p>	<p><i>seventeen simple sounds</i>. — See TABLE I. p. 4.</p>
-------	--	---

The vowels are either long or short;

The long vowels require more, the short vowels less time in pronouncing, thus:

a is long in	pâte	dough	and short in	patte	pav
e	tempête	storm		trompette	trumpet
i	gîte	abode		petite	little
o	hôte	host		hotte	wicker basket
u	flûte	flute		hutte	hut

Besides the *simple* there are also the *compound* sounds, in which two vowels are distinctly heard by a single emission of the voice; these are the *diphthongs*. See Table III. p. 6 and 7.

The sound of one or more letters, pronounced with a single emission of the voice, is called a syllable; one or more syllables make a word.

## ACCENTUATION AND PUNCTUATION.

In reading, due attention should be paid to the *accents* and *cedilla*, to the *apostrophe*, *diæresis*, *hyphen*, &c. the two former of which are peculiar to the French language.

There are three accents, the

{	<i>acute</i>	(´) never placed but on <i>e</i> , as in <i>bonté</i> .
	<i>grave</i>	(` ) placed over <i>a</i> , <i>e</i> , <i>u</i> , as in <i>voilà</i> , <i>procès</i> , <i>où</i> .
	<i>circumflex</i>	(^ ) employed over any long vowel, as <i>plâtre</i> , <i>rêve</i> , <i>épître</i> , <i>apôtre</i> , <i>bûche</i> .

The *cedilla* is a kind of comma placed under *c*, giving it the sound of *s* before *a*, *o*, *u*, as in *façade*, *façon*, *reçu*.

The *apostrophe* (') marks the suppression of a vowel before another vowel, or *h* mute, as in *l'église*, *l'oiseau*, *l'homme*, *s'il vient*, for *la église*, *le oiseau*, *le homme*, *si il vient*.

The *diæresis* (¨) is placed over the vowels *e*, *i*, *u*, to intimate that they are to be pronounced distinctly from the vowels by which they are accompanied.

The *hyphen* (-) is particularly used in connecting compound words, as in *Belles-lettres*, *tout-puissant*, *chefs-d'œuvre*, *arc-en-ciel*, &c.

All the other distinctive marks, as the *comma*, *semicolon*, *colon*, *period*, *interrogation*, *note of admiration* and *exclamation*, *parenthesis*, &c. &c. are the same in the French as in the English language.

## TABLE I.

*The Seventeen Simple Sounds of the French Tongue.*

## EXAMPLES.

SOUNDS.				SOUNDED AS,	
1	a short	ami	friend	a in	amateur
2	â long	bas	stockings	a	bark
3	e	tenir	to hold	e	battery
4	é	été	summer	a	paper
5	è	modèle	model	e	met
6	ê (1)	tête	head	e	there
7	i	imiter	to imitate	i	timid
8	o short	école	school	o	scholar
9	ô long	côte	rib	o	note
10	u	vertu	virtue	(2)	—
11	eu short	jeune	young	u	shun
12	eû long	jeûne	fast	(2)	—
13	ou	soupe	soup	ou	soup
14	an	ange	angel	en	encore
15	in	lin	flax	en	length
16	on	long	long	on	long
17	un	brun	brown	un	—

(1) Besides these four sorts of *e*, there is one entirely mute at the end of many words, as in the above *modèle*, *tête*, *école*, *côte*; and sometimes in the beginning and middle, as in *cependant*, *javeline*, *Roquefort*, *souquenille*, *l'empereur*, &c.

(2) The sound of the French *u*, to which there is no similar, nor even approximate sound in English, must be heard from the master, and it may be necessary to add, that though we have attempted to exhibit the French sounds by English letters, yet they can only be correctly learnt by hearing them from the lips of a native. In particular, the nasal sounds cannot be conveyed by any combination of English letters.

N. B. The figures in the following tables relate to the above seventeen simple sounds.



## TABLE II.

*Coalition of Letters representing several of the Seventeen Simple Sounds.*

Simple Sounds represented by examples.

1	a	ea	il gagea	he betted
		ai	aigu	sharp
4	é	eai	geai	jay
		ée	année	year
		œ	œsophage	œsophagus
		ai	aide	aid
		aie	baie	bay
5	è	ei	baleine	whale
		eai	je nageais	I did swim
		ai	faible	weak
		aie	monnaie	money
6	ê	ai	ainé	eldest
		ai	paraître	to appear
7	i	ie	folie	folly
8	o	au	aurore	dawn
		eo	flageolet	flageolet
		au	auteur	author
9	ô	eau	marteau	hammer
		eo	geole	gaol
		eu	gageure	wager
10	u	eue	eue f	had
		ue	laitue	lettuce
11	eu	œu	sœur	sister
12	eù	œu	nœud	knot
		eue	queue	tail
13	ou	oue	il joue	he plays
		aoû	Août	August
		am	jambe	leg
14	an	ean	affligeant	afflicting
		em	membre	member
		en	entendre	to hear
		aim	essaim	swarm
		ain	crainte	fear
15	in	ein	peinture	picture
		im	impoli	impolite
		ym	symbole	symbol
		yn	syntaxe	syntax
16	on	eon	pigeon	pigeon
		om	ombre	shade
17	un	eun	à jeun	fasting
		um	parfum	perfume

TABLE III.

*Diphthongs.*

Compound Sounds represented by examples.

7	i	}	ia	}	fiacre	hackney-coach
1 or 2	a				galimatias	nonsense
7	i	}	iai	}	je défiai	I challenged
4	é				amitié	friendship
		}	iez	}	vous riez	you laugh
					biais	bias
7	i	}	iè	}	bière	beer
5	è				ciel	heaven
		}	iai	}	je purifiais	I purified
7	i				iolon	violin
8 or 9	o	}	iau	}	miauler	to mew
7	i				reliure	binding
10	u	}	ieu	}	relieur	bookbinder
7	i				mieux	better
11 or 12	eu	}	iou	}	chiourme	{ crew of a galley
7	i				viande	meat
13	ou	}	ian	}	audience	audience
7	i				chrétien	christian
14	an	}	ien	}	passion	passion
7	i				bois	wood
15	in	}	ion	}	boîte	box
7	i				foie	liver
16	on	}	oi	}	moelle	marrow
8	o				voisin	neighbour
		}	eoi	}	nageoire	fin
6	è				besoin	want
8	o	}	oin	}	nuage	cloud
15	in				je remuai	I moved
10	u	}	uai	}	éternuer	to sneeze
1	a				dénué	stript
		}	ue	}	nuée	cloud
10	u				uée	
4	é	}	ué	}		

## TABLE III.

*Diphthongs continued.*

Compound Sounds represented by examples.

10	u	ue	menuet	minuet
5	è	uai	il suait	he perspired
10	u	ui	buisson	bush
7	i	uie	parapluie	umbrella
10	u	uo	impétuosité	impetuosity
8	o			
10	u	ueu	lueur	glimmering
11	eu			
10	u	ueu	majestueux	majestic
12	èû			
10	u	uan	nuance	shade
14	an	uen	influence	influence
10	u	uin	Juin	June
15	in			
10	u	uon	tuons	let us kill
16	on			
13	ou	oua	rouage	wheel-work
1	a			
		oue	dénouer	to untie
13	ou	oué	déjoué	frustrated
4	é	ouée	filie enjouée	cheerful girl
		ouai	je jouai	I played
13	ou	oue	fouetter	to whip
5	è	ouai	je dénouais	I untied
13	ou	oui	combouis	cart grease
7	i	ouie	l'ouie	hearing
13	ou			
11	eu	oueu	boueur	scavenger
31	ou			
12	èû	oueu	nouveux	knotty
13	ou	ouan	louange	praise
14	an	ouen	Rouen	Rouen, a city
13	ou			
15	in	ouin	babouin	baboon
13	ou			
16	on	ouon	jouons	let us play

## OBSERVATIONS UPON THE TWO FIRST TABLES.

*Am, an*, do not take the nasal sound when *m* or *n* are doubled, as in *constamment, année*. *Am* is not nasal at the end of some foreign names, as *Abram, Roboam, &c.*; except *Adam*, which has the nasal sound.

*Em* and *en* are articulated as in the English words *hem* and *men*:

1. In words taken from foreign languages; as *Jerusalem, item, hymen, pollen, solen, amen, &c.* and also in *lemme, gemme, décemvirat, décemvirs, étrenner, ennemi, moyennant, penne, pennage*, and in the second syllable of the compound word *empenné*.

2. In some persons and tenses of the verbs, *tenir, venir, prendre*, and their compounds, as *que je vienne, que tu soutiennes, qu'il comprenne, &c.* in the pronouns feminine, *la mienne, la tienne, les siennes*, in many other words, as *ancienne, magicienne, Vienne, en Autriche, &c.*

3. In many nouns and persons of verbs ending in *ène, ème*, as in *arène, ébène, je me promène, il égrène, il sème*, where however the *e* is somewhat more open.

But *em* in *femme*, and *en* in *enorgueillir, ennoblir*, and *ennui*, must be pronounced as if spelt with *a*, *famme, anorgueillir, annoblir, &c.* and *len* in the second syllable of *so-len-nel*, and derivatives, has only the sound of *la*.

*Aen* has the sound of the French nasal *an* in *Caen*, a town in Normandy.

And *aon* has the same sound in *Laon*, another town in France, in *faon* a fawn, and in *paon* a peacock; but these letters have the sound of *on* in *taon*, an oxfly.

*N* in the monosyllable *en*, both when a preposition and when a pronoun, in *on, mon, ton, son*, pronouns, and in *bon, bien*, and *rien*, ceases to be nasal when these words are immediately followed by a vowel or an *h* mute, as *en Italie, on en aura, mon ami, c'est un bon homme, on a bien essayé, je suis bien-aise qu'il n'ait rien oublié*. But *en* and *on* remain nasal, when placed after the verbs to which they belong; as *donnez-en à votre sœur. A-t-on essayé? va-t'en au logis*.



*Im* and *in* are not nasal,

1. In the word *intérin*, and in proper names taken from foreign languages, as *Sélim*, *Ephraïm*, *Ibrahim*. However the nasal sound is preserved in *Benjamin*, *Jochim*, *séraphin*, *chérubin*.

2. In the beginning and middle of words, when *m* or *n* is followed by a vowel or an *h* mute, as *inanimé*, *imaginable*, *unanimité*, &c.

3. Whenever *m* or *n* is doubled, as *immoler*, *immersion*, *innover*, *inné*, *innocent*, though in this latter word only one *n* is sounded.

*Un* has the sound of *u* close in *une*, *unième*, *unanime*, and of *eun* in *jeune homme*, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, as *un homme*, *un esprit*, *aucun ami*, *commun accord*.

*Um* is pronounced *omm* in some words adopted from the Latin, as *centumvirs*, *album*, *quinquennium*, *ladanum*, *laudanum*, *géranium*.

*U* after the consonants *q* and *g* is generally silent, as in *quatre*, *guerre*, &c. See those letters, p. 21 and 27.

## OF THE Y.

This letter when alone, or when preceded, or followed by a consonant, is pronounced as simple *i*, except in *pays*, *paysan*, *paysage*, and even *abbaye*, which are pronounced *pé-is*, *pé-isan*, *pé-isage*, *abé-ie*. *Y* between two vowels is pronounced *ii*, and when preceded by *a*, it gives to this letter the sound of *ai*, and when by *o* or *u*, it gives to them the sound of the diphthongs *oi* or *ui*. The vowel which follows the *y* is pronounced like one of the diphthongs *ia*, *ie*, &c. for which reason we have deferred speaking of the *y* till after the diphthongs.

Ab-ba-ye	<i>abbey</i>	nous é-ga-yons	<i>we enliven</i>
a-bo-yer	<i>to bark</i>	es-su-yer	<i>to wipe</i>
ap-pu-yer	<i>to support</i>	mo-yen	<i>means</i>
ba-la-yer	<i>to sweep</i>	net-to-yer	<i>to clean</i>
bé-ga-yer	<i>to stammer</i>	je-pa-yais	<i>I was paying</i>
cra-yon	<i>pencil</i>	je ra-ye-raïs	<i>I would erase</i>
cro-ya-ble	<i>credible</i>	ro-yau-me	<i>kingdom</i>
é-cu-yer	<i>esquire</i>	vo-ya-ge	<i>voyage</i>
il ef-fra-ya	<i>he frightened</i>	vo-ya-geur	<i>traveller</i>

## EXERCISES—On Monosyllables, or words of one syllable.

Gras	<i>fat</i>	il rend	<i>he returns</i>
ma	<i>my</i>	il sent	<i>he smells, feels</i>
ta	<i>thy</i>	je vends	<i>I sell</i>
sa	<i>his, her, its</i>	je	<i>I</i>
la	<i>the, her, it</i>	me	<i>me</i>
las	<i>tired</i>	ne	<i>not</i>
pas	<i>step we</i>	te	<i>thee</i>
un plat	<i>a dish</i>	ce	<i>this, that</i>
bac	<i>ferry-boat</i>	se	<i>himself, &amp;c.</i>
sac	<i>sack, bag</i>	le	<i>the, him, it</i>
arc	<i>arch, bow</i>	de	<i>of</i>
parc	<i>park</i>	lé	<i>breadth (of cloth)</i>
bal	<i>ball</i>	né	<i>born</i>
cap	<i>cap</i>	mais	<i>but</i>
car	<i>for</i>	mes	<i>my, pl.</i>
par	<i>by, through</i>	tes	<i>thy, pl.</i>
part	<i>share</i>	ses	<i>his, her, its, pl.</i>
art	<i>art</i>	les	<i>the, them</i>
char	<i>chariot</i>	pré	<i>meadow</i>
dard	<i>dart</i>	près	<i>near</i>
lard	<i>bacon</i>	prêt	<i>ready</i>
tard	<i>late</i>	ver	<i>worm</i>
quand	<i>when</i>	vers	<i>toward, or verse</i>
rang	<i>rank</i>	vert	<i>green</i>
blanc	<i>white</i>	il perd	<i>he loses</i>
sans	<i>without</i>	il sert	<i>he serves</i>
dans	<i>in</i>	cerf	<i>stag</i>
gland	<i>acorn</i>	serf	<i>bondman</i>
pan	<i>notch of a coat</i>	peur	<i>fear</i>
cran	<i>notch</i>	il meurt	<i>he dies</i>
plant	<i>plantation</i>	pleurs	<i>tears</i>
plan	<i>plan</i>	leur	<i>their</i>
flanc	<i>flank</i>	sel	<i>salt</i>
grand	<i>great</i>	tel	<i>such</i>
en	<i>in</i>	quel	<i>which</i>
il fend	<i>he splits</i>	sec	<i>dry</i>
gens	<i>people</i>	bec	<i>beak</i>
lent	<i>slow</i>	chef	<i>chief</i>
main	<i>hand</i>	bref	<i>short</i>
il ment	<i>he lies</i>	neuf	<i>new, or nine</i>
il pend	<i>he hangs</i>	Est	<i>East</i>
il prend	<i>he takes</i>	vingt	<i>twenty</i>
ceint	<i>girt</i>	crin	<i>horse-hair</i>
cinq	<i>five</i>	lin	<i>flax</i>
sain	<i>wholesome</i>	brin	<i>sprig</i>
sein	<i>bosom</i>	pain	<i>bread</i>
saint	<i>holy</i>	pin	<i>pine</i>
seing	<i>signature</i>	vin	<i>wine</i>

fi	<i>fie</i>	front	<i>forehead</i>
fiis	<i>son</i>	rond	<i>round</i>
frit	<i>fried</i>	blond	<i>light (hair)</i>
lis	<i>lily</i>	pont	<i>bridge</i>
pris	<i>taken</i>	long	<i>long</i>
prix	<i>price</i>	fond	<i>bottom</i>
ris	<i>laugh</i>	ils font	<i>they do</i>
riz	<i>rice</i>	jonc	<i>rush</i>
ni	<i>neither, nor</i>	non	<i>no</i>
nid	<i>nest</i>	gond	<i>hinge</i>
si	<i>if</i>	nom	<i>name</i>
il fit	<i>he did</i>	plomb	<i>lead</i>
mis	<i>put</i>	nu	<i>naked</i>
plis	<i>folds</i>	du	<i>of the, sing. m.</i>
fil	<i>thread</i>	il dut	<i>he owed</i>
vil	<i>vile</i>	bru	<i>daughter-in-law</i>
vif	<i>lively</i>	brut	<i>rough</i>
sot	<i>fool</i>	il but	<i>he drank</i>
tôt	<i>soon</i>	cru	<i>raw</i>
clos	<i>shut up</i>	il crut	<i>he believed</i>
nos	<i>our</i>	je fus	<i>I was</i>
vos	<i>your</i>	jus	<i>juice</i>
gros	<i>big</i>	lu	<i>read</i>
trop	<i>too much</i>	il lut	<i>he read</i>
trot	<i>trot</i>	plus	<i>more</i>
croc	<i>hook</i>	tu	<i>thou</i>
or	<i>gold</i>	vu	<i>seen</i>
bord	<i>edge</i>	flux	<i>flux</i>
fort	<i>strong</i>	glu	<i>bird lime</i>
tort	<i>wrong</i>	duc	<i>duke</i>
je sors	<i>I go out</i>	suc	<i>juice</i>
sort	<i>fate</i>	sur	<i>upon</i>
port	<i>port</i>	mur	<i>wall</i>
il mord	<i>he bites</i>	nul	<i>no, none</i>
vol	<i>theft</i>	bout	<i>end</i>
choc	<i>shock</i>	joug	<i>yoke</i>
roc	<i>rock</i>	nous	<i>we, us</i>
bloc	<i>block</i>	vous	<i>you</i>
troc	<i>exchange</i>	clou	<i>nail</i>
dot	<i>dowry</i>	cou	<i>neck</i>
on	<i>one, people, they</i>	coup	<i>blow, stroke</i>
bon	<i>good</i>	trou	<i>hole</i>
bond	<i>bound</i>	mou	<i>soft</i>
ton	<i>thy</i>	tout	<i>all</i>
son	<i>his, her, its</i>	toux	<i>cough</i>
ils sont	<i>they are</i>	pou	<i>louse</i>
mon	<i>my</i>	cour	<i>yard</i>
don	<i>gift</i>	il pleut	<i>it rains</i>
dont	<i>of which, &amp;c.</i>	peu	<i>little, few</i>
donc	<i>therefore</i>	il veut	<i>he is willing</i>

## ON DISSYLLABLES,

*Or words of Two Syllables.*

A-bus	<i>abuse</i>	clé-ment	<i>clement</i>
a-chat	<i>purchase</i>	cli-mat	<i>climate</i>
ac-teur	<i>actor</i>	cloi-son	<i>partition</i>
â-ge	<i>age</i>	co-hue	<i>throng</i>
â-me	<i>soul</i>	com-mun	<i>common</i>
an-neau	<i>ring</i>	com-pas	<i>compasses</i>
ar-deur	<i>ardour</i>	com-te	<i>earl</i>
ar-gent	<i>money</i>	con-gé	<i>holiday</i>
as-tre	<i>star</i>	con-te	<i>tale</i>
au-cun	<i>none</i>	co-quin	<i>rogue</i>
a-veu	<i>confession</i>	cor-deau	<i>line</i>
a-vis	<i>advice</i>	cô-té	<i>side</i>
au-tre	<i>other</i>	cou-ple	<i>couple</i>
bal-con	<i>balcony</i>	cou-reur	<i>runner</i>
ban-que	<i>bank</i>	cous-sin	<i>cushion</i>
bar-que	<i>a bark</i>	cou-vent	<i>convent</i>
ba-teau	<i>boat</i>	crê-me	<i>cream</i>
bâ-ton	<i>stick</i>	cri-me	<i>crime</i>
beau-té	<i>beauty</i>	crot-te	<i>dirt</i>
bê-gue	<i>stammerer</i>	croû-te	<i>crust</i>
bê-te	<i>beast</i>	da-me	<i>lady</i>
keur-re	<i>butter</i>	dan-seur	<i>dancer</i>
bi-ble	<i>bible</i>	dé-bit	<i>sale</i>
blâ-me	<i>blame</i>	de-bout	<i>erect</i>
bon-heur	<i>happiness</i>	de-mi	<i>half</i>
bôn-té	<i>goodness</i>	dé-pôt	<i>deposit</i>
bos-quet	<i>grove</i>	dé-sert	<i>wilderness</i>
bou-quet	<i>nosegay</i>	des-sert	<i>dessert</i>
bour-geon	<i>bud</i>	dis-cours	<i>speech</i>
bour-ru	<i>surly</i>	dou-leur	<i>pain</i>
bras-seur	<i>brewer</i>	é-cu	<i>crown</i>
bri-gand	<i>robber</i>	en-clin	<i>inclined</i>
brus-que	<i>abrupt</i>	en-fant	<i>child</i>
bru-te	<i>brute</i>	é-poux	<i>spouse</i>
buf-fet	<i>cupboard</i>	es-poir	<i>hope</i>
bu-reau	<i>office</i>	é-tain	<i>pewter</i>
bus-te	<i>bus</i>	être	<i>being</i>
ca-deau	<i>present</i>	ex-cès	<i>excess</i>
ca-fé	<i>coffee</i>	festin	<i>feast</i>
ca-hot	<i>jolt</i>	fê-te	<i>festival</i>
ca-non	<i>cannon</i>	fi-lou	<i>pickpocket</i>
ca-ve	<i>cellar</i>	fla-con	<i>decanter</i>
cau-se	<i>cause</i>	flam-beau	<i>flambeau</i>
cer-cle	<i>circle</i>	flû-te	<i>flute</i>
ci-seau	<i>chisel</i>	fo-rêt	<i>forest</i>
ci-seaux	<i>scissors</i>	fou-dre	<i>thunderbolt</i>



four-mi	<i>ant</i>	meu-ble	<i>furniture</i>
fri-pon	<i>knave</i>	mon-de	<i>world</i>
fu-reur	<i>fury</i>	mons-tre	<i>monster</i>
gaic-té	<i>cheerfulness</i>	mou-le	<i>mould</i>
gar-çon	<i>boy</i>	mou-lin	<i>mill</i>
ga-teau	<i>cake</i>	ni-gaud	<i>silly fellow</i>
ga-zon	<i>turf</i>	nou-veau	<i>new</i>
gen-dre	<i>son-in-law</i>	œu-vre	<i>work</i>
gen-re	<i>gender</i>	on-guent	<i>ointment</i>
gi-got	<i>leg of mutton</i>	or-dre	<i>order</i>
gla-çon	<i>piece of ice</i>	ou-bli	<i>oblivion</i>
gou-té	<i>luncheon</i>	pa-rent	<i>relation</i>
gout-te	<i>drop</i>	par-rain	<i>god-father</i>
grâ-ce	<i>favour</i>	pâ-te	<i>dough</i>
gron-deur	<i>grumbler</i>	pâ-té	<i>pie</i>
gru-au	<i>oatmeal</i>	pat-te	<i>paw</i>
guè-re	<i>little</i>	pê-che	<i>fishing, peach</i>
guer-re	<i>war</i>	pé-ché	<i>sin</i>
gueu-le	<i>mouth of a beast</i>	pê-cheur	<i>fisherman</i>
gui-de	<i>guide</i>	pé-cheur	<i>sinner</i>
'hai-ne	<i>hatred</i>	pei-ne	<i>trouble</i>
'hâle	<i>sunburning</i>	pein-tre	<i>painter</i>
'hal-le	<i>market hall</i>	pè-re	<i>father</i>
'har-pe	<i>harp</i>	peu-ple	<i>people</i>
'hâ-te	<i>haste</i>	peu-reux	<i>fearful</i>
'hau-teur	<i>height</i>	pin-te	<i>pint</i>
'ha-sard	<i>chance</i>	plu-me	<i>feather</i>
'hê-tre	<i>beech</i>	por-trait	<i>picture</i>
hom-me	<i>man</i>	pour-pre	<i>purple</i>
hon-neur	<i>honour</i>	prin-ce	<i>prince</i>
'hon-te	<i>shame</i>	pru-neau	<i>prune</i>
hor-reur	<i>horror</i>	ra-gôût	<i>ragout</i>
hôte	<i>landlord</i>	rè-gle	<i>rule</i>
hu-main	<i>human</i>	rè-gne	<i>reign</i>
im-pie	<i>impious</i>	rei-ne	<i>queen</i>
ju-ge	<i>judge</i>	ren-te	<i>annuity</i>
jour-née	<i>day</i>	rê-ve	<i>dream</i>
lai-teux	<i>milky</i>	ri-re	<i>laughing</i>
la-quais	<i>footman</i>	rou-te	<i>road</i>
lar-cin	<i>theft</i>	ru-se	<i>trick</i>
lar-geur	<i>breadth</i>	sa-bre	<i>sabre</i>
li-queur	<i>liquor</i>	sa-lut	<i>salute</i>
lo-gis	<i>dwelling</i>	sa-tin	<i>satin</i>
lon-gueur	<i>length</i>	sau-ce	<i>sauce</i>
mar-bre	<i>marble</i>	sau-teur	<i>tumbler</i>
mar-chand	<i>tradesman</i>	sé-jour	<i>residence</i>
ma-ri	<i>husband</i>	si-gnal	<i>signal</i>
mère	<i>mother</i>	si-gue	<i>sign</i>

som-bre	<i>dark</i>	to-me	<i>volume</i>
sou-hait	<i>wish</i>	tou-pie	<i>top</i>
sou-pe	<i>soup</i>	tour-neur	<i>turner</i>
sou-ris	<i>smile</i>	traî-neau	<i>sledge</i>
su-cre	<i>sugar</i>	trô-ne	<i>throne</i>
sus-pect	<i>suspicious</i>	trou-peau	<i>flock</i>
ta-che	<i>spot</i>	veu-ve	<i>widow</i>
tâ-che	<i>task</i>	vi-gne	<i>vine</i>
tam-bour	<i>drum</i>	zè-le	<i>zeal</i>
tom-beau	<i>grave</i>	zé-lé	<i>zealous</i>

---

WORDS OF THREE SYLLABLES.

A-bi-me	<i>abyss</i>	bra-vou-re	<i>valour</i>
a-bré-gé	<i>abridgment</i>	breu-va-ge	<i>drink</i>
a-bri-cot	<i>apricot</i>	bro-de-rie	<i>embroidery</i>
ab-so-lu	<i>absolute</i>	brou-et-te	<i>wheelbarrow</i>
ab-sur-de	<i>absurd</i>	brû-lu-re	<i>burning</i>
ac-tri-ce	<i>actress</i>	brus-que-ment	<i>bluntly</i>
af-fai-re	<i>business</i>	ca-de-nas	<i>padlock</i>
am-pou-le	<i>blister</i>	cam-pa-gne	<i>country</i>
ap-pé-tit	<i>appetite</i>	ca-rê-me	<i>lent</i>
â-pre-té	<i>asperity</i>	car-ros-se	<i>coach</i>
a-rai-gnée	<i>spider</i>	cein-tu-re	<i>girdle</i>
ar-moi-re	<i>cabinet</i>	ce-pen-dant	<i>however</i>
ar-tis-te	<i>artist</i>	cham-pi-gnon	<i>mushroom</i>
as-si-du	<i>assiduous</i>	cha-pe-lier	<i>hatter</i>
a-tro-ce	<i>atrocious</i>	cha-pel-le	<i>chapel</i>
au-ber-ge	<i>inn</i>	cha-pi-tre	<i>chapter</i>
a-voi-ne	<i>oats</i>	char-la-tan	<i>quack</i>
aus-tè-re	<i>austere</i>	char-ret-te	<i>cart</i>
ba-bio-le	<i>bauble</i>	châ-ti-ment	<i>chastisement</i>
bas-ses-se	<i>baseness</i>	chau-de-ment	<i>warmly</i>
bâ-ti-ment	<i>building</i>	chau-diè-re	<i>copper</i>
bê-le-ment	<i>bleating</i>	chauf-fa-ge	<i>fuel</i>
ber-gè-re	<i>shepherdess</i>	chaus-su-re	<i>shoes, stockings</i>
bê-ti-se	<i>stupidity</i>	ci-viè-re	<i>hand-barrow</i>
bien-fai-sant	<i>benevolent</i>	cla-ve-cin	<i>harpsichord</i>
bien-sé-ant	<i>becoming</i>	clo-a-que	<i>sewer</i>
bien-ve-nu	<i>welcome</i>	co-li-que	<i>colic</i>
blan-châ-tre	<i>whitish</i>	col-lé-ge	<i>college</i>
bles-su-re	<i>wound</i>	col-li-ne	<i>hill</i>
boi-se-rie	<i>wainscot</i>	co-lon-ne	<i>column</i>
bor-du-re	<i>edging</i>	co-lo-ris	<i>colouring</i>
bou-lan-ger	<i>baker</i>	co-mé-die	<i>comedy</i>
bou-ta-de	<i>whim</i>	co-mé-dien	<i>comedian</i>
bou-ti-que	<i>shop</i>	com-mer-çant	<i>merchant</i>
bras-se-rie	<i>brewhouse</i>	com-pa-gnie	<i>company</i>

com-pa-gnon	<i>companion</i>	es-pè-ce	<i>kind</i>
con-duitte	<i>behaviour</i>	es-quis-se	<i>sketch</i>
con-qué-rant	<i>conqueror</i>	es-tra-gon	<i>stragon</i>
con-quê-te	<i>conquest</i>	é-tei-gnoir	<i>extinguisher</i>
cons-tam-ment	<i>constantly</i>	é-tour-di	<i>thoughtless</i>
con-ti-gu	<i>contiguous</i>	é-vê-ché	<i>bishoprick</i>
cor-don-nier	<i>shoemaker</i>	é-veil-lé	<i>awake</i>
co-ri-a-ce	<i>tough</i>	ex-cès-sif	<i>immoderate</i>
cor-ni-chon	<i>girkin</i>	ex-em-ple	<i>example</i>
cou-chet-te	<i>couch</i>	fa-bu-leux	<i>fabulous</i>
cou-ron-ne	<i>crown</i>	fa-ça-de	<i>front</i>
cou-te-las	<i>hanger</i>	fa-ien-ce	<i>delft-ware</i>
cou-te-lier	<i>cutler</i>	fa-ri-neux	<i>mealy</i>
cou-tu-re	<i>seam</i>	fa-rou-che	<i>fierce</i>
cra-moi-si	<i>crimson</i>	fi-las-se	<i>flax</i>
cré-du-le	<i>credulous</i>	fieu-ris-te	<i>florist</i>
cri-ti-que	<i>critic</i>	fai-bles-se	<i>weakness</i>
cru-au-té	<i>cruelty</i>	fo-lâ-tre	<i>playful</i>
cui-si-ne	<i>kitchen</i>	fou-droy-ant	<i>thundering</i>
cul-bu-te	<i>tumble</i>	four-bis-seur	<i>sword-cutler</i>
cu-re-dent	<i>tooth-pick</i>	four-ru-re	<i>fur</i>
dé-com-bres	<i>rubbish</i>	fram-boi-se	<i>raspberry</i>
dé-goû-tant	<i>disgusting</i>	fri-su-re	<i>curling</i>
dé-jeû-ner	<i>breakfast</i>	frois-su-re	<i>bruising</i>
dé-meu-re	<i>abode</i>	gi-ro-fle	<i>cloves</i>
dés-hon-neur	<i>dishonour</i>	go-be-let	<i>tumbler, goblet</i>
des-po-te	<i>despot</i>	gou-lû-ment	<i>greedily</i>
dis-ci-ple	<i>pupil</i>	gué-ri-son	<i>cure</i>
dis-grâ-ce	<i>disgrace</i>	gui-mau-ve	<i>marsh-mallow</i>
dro-guis-te	<i>druggist</i>	hâ-lei-ne	<i>breath</i>
droi-tu-re	<i>uprightness</i>	'har-di-ment	<i>boldly</i>
é-cha-faud	<i>scaffold</i>	'ha-ri-cot	<i>French bean</i>
é-chel-le	<i>ladder</i>	hor-lo-ge	<i>clock</i>
é-che-veau	<i>skein</i>	hor-ri-ble	<i>horrid</i>
é-cu-me	<i>froth</i>	hôte-se	<i>landlady</i>
em-pe-reur	<i>emperor</i>	i-gno-rant	<i>ignorant</i>
em-plâ-tre	<i>plaster</i>	im-men-se	<i>immense</i>
em-plet-te	<i>purchase</i>	im-pu-ni	<i>unpunished</i>
en-clu-me	<i>anvil</i>	in-cen-die	<i>conflagration</i>
en-ga-geant	<i>engaging</i>	in-con-nu	<i>unknown</i>
en-ne-mi	<i>enemy</i>	in-gé-nu	<i>ingenuous</i>
en-sei-gne	<i>sign</i>	in-hu-main	<i>inhuman</i>
é-pa-gneul	<i>spaniel</i>	in-sec-te	<i>insect</i>
é-pi-ce	<i>spice</i>	ins-truc-tif	<i>instructive</i>
é-pi-cier	<i>grocer</i>	i-voi-re	<i>ivory</i>
é-pou-se	<i>wife</i>	i-vro-gne	<i>drunkard</i>
es-ca-lier	<i>stair-case</i>	ja-quet-te	<i>jackel</i>
es-pa-ce	<i>space</i>	jour-na-lier	<i>journeyman</i>

lai-tiè-re	<i>milk-woman</i>	puis-san-ce	<i>power</i>
lan-gou-reux	<i>languishing</i>	que-rel-le	<i>quarrel</i>
len-til-le	<i>lentil</i>	ra-piè-re	<i>rapier</i>
li-ma-çon	<i>snail</i>	ra-tiè-re	<i>rat-trap</i>
ma-ga-sin	<i>warehouse</i>	ré-col-te	<i>crop</i>
mal-a-droit	<i>awkward</i>	ré-ser-vé	<i>reserved</i>
ma-nœu-vre	<i>manœuvre</i>	res-sour-ce	<i>resource</i>
mar-mi-ton	<i>scullion</i>	re-trai-te	<i>retirement</i>
mas-cu-lin	<i>masculine</i>	rê-ve-rie	<i>meditation</i>
mé-con-tent	<i>discontented</i>	rou-geâ-tre	<i>reddish</i>
mé-moi-re	<i>memory</i>	rus-ti-que	<i>rural</i>
mé-na-ger	<i>thrifty</i>	scan-da-leux	<i>scandalous</i>
men-son-ge	<i>falsehood</i>	scru-pu-leux	<i>scrupulous</i>
mé-pri-se	<i>mistake</i>	sé-an-ce	<i>sitting</i>
mé-tho-de	<i>method</i>	ser-ru-re	<i>lock</i>
mo-des-tie	<i>modesty</i>	sif-fle-ment	<i>whistling</i>
mon-ta-gnard	<i>highlander</i>	sim-ple-ment	<i>plainly</i>
mou-tar-de	<i>mustard</i>	so-bri-quet	<i>nick name</i>
mur-mu-re	<i>murmur</i>	so-len-nel	<i>solemn</i>
na-tu-rel	<i>natural</i>	son-net-te	<i>little bell</i>
nau-fra-ge	<i>shipwreck</i>	so-no-re	<i>sonorous</i>
né-an-moins	<i>nevertheless</i>	sou-cou-pe	<i>saucer</i>
no-bles-se	<i>nobility</i>	soup-çon-neux	<i>suspicious</i>
noi-râ-tre	<i>blackish</i>	spec-ta-cle	<i>sight</i>
o-bli-geant	<i>obliging</i>	splen-di-de	<i>splendid</i>
om-bra-ge	<i>shade</i>	suc-ces-seur	<i>successor</i>
op-pro-bre	<i>disgrace</i>	su-prê-me	<i>supreme</i>
o-ra-guex	<i>stormy</i>	symp-tô-me	<i>symptom</i>
or-fè-vre	<i>goldsmith</i>	tein-tu-re	<i>dying</i>
or-phe-lin	<i>orphan</i>	ten-dres-se	<i>tenderness</i>
pa-moi-son	<i>fainting fit</i>	té-né-breux	<i>dark</i>
pan-tou-fle	<i>slipper</i>	thé-â-tre	<i>theatre</i>
pa-pe-tier	<i>stationer</i>	thé-iè-re	<i>tea-pot</i>
pa-ra-sol	<i>umbrella</i>	toi-let-te	<i>toilet</i>
pa-ren-te	<i>kinswoman</i>	tour-ne-vis	<i>screwdriver</i>
pa-rois-se	<i>parish</i>	tou-te-fois	<i>nevertheless</i>
pas-sa-ble	<i>tolerable</i>	tri-che-rie	<i>cheat</i>
pois-sar-de	<i>fishwoman</i>	tri-om-phe	<i>triumph</i>
poi-tri-ne	<i>breast</i>	trom-pet-te	<i>trumpet</i>
por-tiè-re	<i>coach door</i>	tu-mul-te	<i>tumult</i>
pos-tu-re	<i>posture</i>	va-can-ces	<i>holidays</i>
po-la-ge	<i>porridge</i>	ver-get-te	<i>brush</i>
pous-siè-re	<i>dust</i>	ver-mis-seau	<i>small worm</i>
pré-tex-te	<i>pretence</i>	vic-toi-re	<i>victory</i>
prin-ces-se	<i>princess</i>	vi-gou-reux	<i>vigorous</i>
pro-mes-se	<i>promise</i>	vil-la-geois	<i>countryman</i>
pro-tec-teur	<i>protector</i>	voi-tu-re	<i>carriage</i>
pu-é-ril	<i>childish</i>	zé-phi-re	<i>zephyrus</i>



## OF CONSONANTS.

*B, b*, this letter has the same sound as in English.

Bal	<i>ball</i>	bo-bi-ne	<i>bobbin</i>
Ba-bel	<i>Babel</i>	bar-ba-ris-me	<i>barbarism</i>
ba-bil	<i>prating</i>	bi-bli-o-thè-que	<i>library</i>
ba-bouin	<i>baboon</i>	bur-les-que	<i>burlesque</i>

*B* is always pronounced in the middle of words, as *ab-di-quer*, *sub-ve-nir*, *ob-vi-er*; and at the end of proper names, as *Job*, *Caleb*, *Moab*; also in the words *radoub*, the refitting of a ship, *rumb*, point of the compass; but it is never sounded in *plomb*, lead.

When double, as in *abbé*, abbot; *rabbin*, rabbin; *sabbat*, sabbath; and their derivatives, only one of these letters is sounded; however, in *Abbeville* and *abbatial* the sound of the double *b* is distinctly heard.

*C, c*, has the sound of  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} k, \text{ or English } c \text{ in } cart, \text{ before} \\ a, o, u, l, n, r, \text{ but} \\ \text{of} \\ s, \text{ or } c \text{ in } cedar, cider, cymbal, \\ \text{before } e, i, \text{ and } y. \end{array} \right.$

*C* sounded as *k*.

Cal-cul	<i>calculation</i>
ca-co-pho-nie	<i>cacophony</i>
clé-ri-cal	<i>clerical</i>
Cra-co-vie	<i>Cracow</i>
co-que-li-cot	<i>wild-poppy</i>
cro-co-di-le	<i>crocodile</i>
cris-tal	<i>crystal</i>
cu-cur-bi-te	<i>cucurbite</i>

*C* sounded as *s*.

ce-ci	<i>this</i>
cé-ci-té	<i>blindness</i>
cé-ta-cée	<i>cetaceous</i>
cer-ceau	<i>hoop</i>
Cir-cé	<i>Circe</i>
ci-li-ce	<i>hair-cloth</i>
cy-ni-que	<i>cynic</i>
cy-près	<i>cypress</i>

*C* is not sounded in the middle of words before *q, ca, co, cu, cl, cr*, as *socque*, *acquérier*, *accabler*, *acclimater*, *acclamation*, *accomplir*, *acoutrer*, *accréditer*, *ecclésiastique*, which are pronounced *so-que*, *a-quérir*, *a-cabler*, &c. except, however, in the words *pec-cable*, *pec-cant*,

*pec-cadille, pec-cavi, sac-cholatique*, in which the sound of the double *c* is distinctly heard.—It has the sound of *k* before *ce* and *ci*, as in *suc-cès, ac-cident, vac-cine, &c.* and takes the sound of *s* before *a, o, u*, when there is a cedilla under it, as in *façade, façon, reçu*.

*C* is sounded as *g* hard in *second*, and its derivatives, and by many in *Claude*, and *Reine-Claude*, and even by some, but improperly, in *secret*.

*C*, at the end of words, is usually pronounced *k*, as in *cognac, lac*, (a lake,) *avec, bec, pic, syndic, roc, froc, estoc, duc, aquéduc, agaric, arc, zinc, &c.* and in the singular of *échec*; but it is not sounded in *croc, ac-croc, arc-boutant, banc, broc, clerc, marc d'argent, cric, estomac, flanc, jonc, lacs*, (toils,) *tabac, tronc, échecs*, nor in *donc* before a consonant; but

It is always sounded in *croc-en-jambe, franc étourdi, du blanc au noir*, and in both syllables of *mic-mac, tric-trac, cric-orac, ric-à-ric*, and *porc-épic*.

In words ending in *ct*, both consonants are generally sounded, as in *tact, contact, intact, exact, inexact, abject, correct, direct, infect, strict, succinct*; but neither of them in *aspect, suspect, circumspect, amict, instinct, distinct*; and only *c* in *respect*, though both letters are always heard in *suspecte, circumspecte, respecte, distincte*, as well as in the middle of other similar words, as *recteur, vecteur, séducteur, rédacteur, humecter, injecter, dactyle, ductile, tactique &c.*

*Ch* has two sounds, { one, which is most general, like *sh* in *she, shake*;  
the other, which very rarely occurs, is that of *k* in *chimera*.

#### Examples of *sh*.

Chat	cat	ar-chi-tra-ve	architrave
che-val	horse	chou-et-te	screech-owl
cher-cher	to seek	chû-te	fall
chi-che	stingy	chu-cho-ter	to whisper
ar-chi-tec-te	architect	chy-le, &c. &c.	chyle

and in many proper names, as *Achille, Joachim, Chérubin, Zachée, &c.*

### Examples of *ch* as *k*.

A-chab	Cham	Za-cha-rie	Cal-chas
A-ché-lo-üs	Cha-na-an	Ma-chi-a-vel	Bac-chus
An-ti-o-chus	Chi-o	Mi-chel-an-ge	Cha-ron
A-chaie	Cho-rè-be	Pul-ché-rie	Ci-vi-ta-Vec-
A-na-char-sis	Chos-ro-ès	Ti-cho-Bra-hé	chia
a-na-cho-rè-te	Chal-da-i-que	Dyr-ra-chi-um	Zu-rich
ar-chan-ge	Chal-dée	chi-ro-man-cie	é-cho
Ar-chan-gel	cha-os	chœur	scho-lie
ar-ché-ty-pe	ché-li-doi-ne	cho-ris-te	cha-li-bé
ar-chon-tes	Cher-so-né-se	or-ches-tre	chon-dril-le
ar-chi-é-pis-co-	chi-li-ar-que	i-cho-reux	chi-ra-gre
pal	chal-co-gra-	cho-rè-ge	ar-cha-is-me
chal-cá-doi-ne	phie	Na-bu-cho-do-	
eu-cha-ris-tie	ca-té-chu-mè-ne	no-sor	

### Examples of *cht* as *k*.

Yacht	} are pronounced	{ Yak	} without sounding the <i>t</i> .
U-trecht		{ Utrek	
Mæs-tricht		{ Matrik	

*Ch* takes the sound of a hard *g* in *drachme*, and is dropped in *almanach*; and on account of their Italian origin in *vermicelle* and *violoncelle*, *c*, without *h*, takes the sound of the English *sh*

*Ch* has uniformly the sound of *k*, in all words where it is followed by a consonant, as *Christ, chrétien, Chloris, chronique, isochrone, chronomètre, Arachné, ichneumon, technique, &c.*

*D, d*, has the same sound as in English.

Dé-da-le	<i>labyrinth</i>	Dry-a-de	<i>Dryad</i>
do-du	<i>plump</i>	dro-ma-dai-re	<i>dromedary</i>
din-don	<i>turkey</i>	dé-di-ca-toi-re	<i>dedicatory</i>

*D* is always sounded in the middle of words, as *adjectif, adverbe, admirable*.

It is likewise heard at the end of proper names, as in *David, Obed, Gad, Alfred, &c.* and in some other

words, as *Cid*, *Sud*, *Sund*, *Talmud*, *éphod*, *lamed*. At the end of many words before a vowel, or *h* mute, *d* takes the sound of *t*, as, *quand il viendra*; *un grand homme*; *vend-il*? &c. however, it is never sounded in *bond*, *gond*, *fond*, *nid*, *næud*, *muid*, and *pied*; except in *de fond-en-comble*, *de pied-en-cap*, *tenir pied-à-boule*, *avoir un pied-a-terre*, where it is sounded as *t*.

*D* is sounded double in some few words derived from the Latin, as in *ad-dition*, *ad-ducteur*, *red-dition*.

*F, f*, is sounded like the same letter in English.

#### Example.-

Far-fa-det	<i>hobgoblin</i>	fé-bri-fu-ge	<i>febrifuge</i>
fau-fi-ler	<i>to baste (in sewing)</i>	fruc-ti-fi-er	<i>to fructify</i>
fet-fa	<i>edict of the Mufti</i>	fi-fre	<i>fifer</i>
fan-fa-ron	<i>boaster</i>	for-fait	<i>crime</i>

Final *f* is sounded in all words ending in *f*, which amount to nearly 260, mostly adjectives, and in *raf*, *bref*, *brief*, *chef*, *fief*, *nef*, *nerf*, *grief*, *serf*, *relief*, *méchef*, *Azof*, *lof*, *tof*, *tuf*, *ouf*, *pouf*, *æuf*, *veuf*, *bæuf*, and *neuf*, (new;) but not in *clef*, *cerf*, *êteuf*, *chef-d'œuvre*, *æuf*, *frais*, nor in the plural of *nerf*, *æuf*, *bæuf*, and *neuf*, (new.) In *neuf*, (nine,) when alone, or when it terminates the sentence, *f* is distinctly sounded, but it takes the sound of *v* before a vowel, and is silent before a consonant.

When it is doubled, only one of these letters is sounded: however, in some few words, as *effusion*, *affâdir*, *effraction*, it seems more proper to sound both.

*G, g*, has { before *a, o, u*, the hard sound of *g* in the English word *go*,  
and before *e, i, y*, the soft sound of *s* in *pleasure*.



Examples of *g* hard.

Gan-grê-ne	<i>gangrene</i>	gut-tu-ral	<i>guttural</i>
Gro-nin-gue	<i>Groningen</i>	gom-me	<i>gum</i>
gai	<i>cheerful</i>	gla-ce	<i>looking-glass</i>
go-gue-nard	<i>joker</i>	Gor-go-ne	<i>Gorgon</i>

Examples of *g* soft.

Geai	<i>jay</i>	gé-né-ral	<i>general</i>
gé-or-gi-ques	<i>georgics</i>	gens	<i>people</i>
gen-re	<i>gender</i>	gin-gem-bre	<i>ginger</i>
gé-mir	<i>to groan</i>	gym-ni-que	<i>gymnastic</i>

*G* final has the hard sound in *joug*, and in proper names, as *Agag*, *Doeg*, but it takes the sound of *k* in *rang*, *sang*, and *long* masculine before a vowel; and also in *bourg*. It is silent in *faubourg*, *Luxembourg*, &c. and in *Bourg-l'abbé*, *Bourg-la-Reine*, &c.; and likewise in *sang-sue*, *de sang-froid*, *sang-de-dragon*, in *rang*, *sang*, *long*, before a consonant, and always in *doigt*, *legs*, *poing*, *vieux-oing*, *hareng*, *étang*, *seing*, and *vingt*.

*Bourg-mestre* is pronounced *bourgue-mestre*, and by some persons it is now, and not improperly, written in the latter manner.

*Gu* forms a distinct syllable in the inflections of the verb *ar-gu-er*; is strongly sounded in *aiguë*, *suraiguë*, *ciguë*, *ambiguë*, *contiguë*, *exiguë*, and *bésaiguë*; has a mixed sound with the following *i* in *aiguille*, *aiguillade*, *aiguillonner*, *aiguiser*, and derivatives, and in the proper names, *d'Aiguillon*, *de Guise*, *le Guide*. But the *u* in the inflections of more than forty verbs ending in *guer*, and in many other words, where it stands before *e* and *i*, being intended only to give *g* the hard sound, is entirely silent, as in *bague*, *bègue*, *figue*, *dogue*, *fougue*, *fugue*, *onguent*, *langue*, *longue*, *nargue*, *vergue*, *morgue*, *distingue*, *gué*, *gui*, *guérir*, *guinder*, *guise*, *languir*, *guinquette*, &c.

*Gua* takes the mixt sound of the diphthong *goua* in some few words, as *lingual*, *paraguante*, *Guadeloupe*, *Guadalquivir*, *Guatimala*, *Guastalla*.

When *g* is doubled, only one is sounded, except before *e* and *i*, then the first *g* retains the *hard*, and the second adopts the *soft* sound, as in *sug-gérer*, *suggestion*.

*G* before *h*, and before several consonants in the middle of words, retains its hard sound, as in *Berghen*, *Engghien*, *église*, *énigme*, *segment*, *amygdales*. Before *l* there are two exceptions, in the words, *imbroglio* and *de Broglio*, where it is sounded liquid, as in *seraglio*, and these words are generally pronounced as if written *imbroille*, *de Broille*.

*Gn* has two sounds { one hard, as in the English word *ignorant*,  
and the other liquid, as in the last syllable of *onion*

#### Examples of the hard sound.

Gni-de	gna-pha-li-um	ag-na-ti-que	rég-ni-cole
Gno-me	gnos-ti-que	cog-na-ti-que	mag-né-sie
gno-mi-de	ag-nat	ag-nus	stag-nant
gno-mi-que	ag-na-ti-on	ig-née	stag-na-ti-on
gno-mon	cog-nat	ig-ni-cole	di-ag-nos-tique
gno-mo-ni-que	cog-na-ti-on	ig-ni-ti-on	mag-nat

*G* is silent in *signet*, and *Regnard*, a French writer of comedies, pronounced *sinet*, *Renard*.

*H*, *h*, when aspirated, is sounded with a strong guttural impulse, and when mute, it has no power but that of showing etymology.

#### *H* aspirated in

'Hâbler	<i>to romance</i>
'ha-che	<i>axe</i>
'ha-ïr	<i>to hate</i>
'har-pe	<i>harp</i>
'haut	<i>high</i>
'hé-ros*	<i>hero</i>
'hé-ris-son	<i>hedge-hog</i>
'hi-deux	<i>hideous</i>
'hon-te	<i>shame</i>
'hur-ler	<i>to howl</i>

#### *H* is mute in

ha-bit	<i>coat</i>
her-be	<i>grass</i>
heu-re	<i>hour</i>
heu-reux	<i>happy</i>
hé-ro-ï-ne*	<i>heroine</i>
hé-ro-ï-que	<i>heroic</i>
hé-ro-ïs-me*	<i>heroism</i>
his-toi-re	<i>history</i>
hi-ver	<i>winter</i>
hor-reur	<i>horror</i>

and about 160 more words.

and about 135 other cases.

All generally noted in my dictionary and others.

\* Observe, that *h* is aspirated in '*héros*, but not in its derivatives.

*H* is never aspirated in the middle of a word, except when that word is the compound of another beginning with an *h* aspirated, as in *s'aheurter*, *déhâler*, *déhanché*, *déharnacher*, *enharnacher*, *s'enhardir*, *dehors*.

*N. B.* Though there is no aspirated *h* before *onze*, *onzième*, and *oui*, we pronounce and write more generally *le onze*, *le onzième*, than *l'onze*, *l'onzième*, and say always *le oui et le non* without elision, and final *s* in *mes*, *tes*, *ses*, *nos*, *vos*, *leurs*, *ces*, and *les*, is never sounded when placed before any of these words, as *tous vos oui et vos non*; *sur les onze heures*, and even before *une* in *sur les une heure*.

For what concerns *h* placed after *c* or *g*, see the remarks on those two letters, p. 18 and 22.

*H*, after *r* or *t*, is always silent, as *rhéteur*, *Rhône*, *rhubarbe*, *thé*, *Thomas*, *thym*.

*J, j*, has constantly the sound of *z* in *azure*, or *s* in *pleasure*.

#### EXAMPLE.

Jus	<i>gravy</i>	jou-jou	<i>toy</i>
ja-mais	<i>never</i>	ju-ju-be	<i>jujube</i>
jo-vi-al	<i>jovial</i>	jeu-nes-se	<i>youth</i>

*K, k*, has always a hard sound, as in the English word *king*.

This letter can be hardly considered as belonging to the French alphabet, as it is found only in some few words borrowed from foreign languages, as

Kan-gu-rou	<i>kangaroo</i>	ki-os-que	<i>Turkish pavilion</i>
ker-mès	<i>cochineal</i>	ky-ri-el-le	<i>tedious enumeration</i>

*L, l*, has two sounds, the { first, is precisely the same as  
*l* in the English words  
*lily, law, &c.*  
 second, resembles that of *ill*  
 in *brilliant*.

### Example of the First.

La-té-rail	<i>lateral</i>	li-las	<i>lilach</i>
lé-gis-la-teur	<i>legislator</i>	lo-cal	<i>local</i>
li-bel-le	<i>libel</i>	lu-ni-so-lai-re	<i>lunisolar</i>

### Example of the Second.

Bail	<i>lease</i>	cail-lou-ta-ge	<i>pebble-work</i>
som-meil	<i>sleep</i>	mer-veil-leux	<i>wonderful</i>
œil	<i>eye</i>	œil-la-de	<i>glance</i>
é-cu-reuil	<i>squirrel</i>	Guil-lau-me	<i>William</i>
or-gueil*	<i>pride</i>	or-gueil-leux*	<i>proud</i>
fe-nouil	<i>fennel</i>	gri-bouil-let-te	<i>scramble</i>
tail-le	<i>shape</i>	ga-zouil-le-ment	<i>warbling</i>
tail-la	<i>he did cut</i>	bar-bouil-lage	<i>scrawl</i>
tail-lé	<i>cut</i>	cha-mail-lis	<i>squabble</i>
tail-lis	<i>copse</i>	o-reil-le	<i>ear</i>
tail-lons	<i>let us cut</i>	pé-ril	<i>danger</i>
tail-leur	<i>tailor</i>	pé-ril-leux	<i>dangerous</i>
tail-lu-re	<i>kind of embroidery</i>	oil-le	<i>olio</i>
Neuil-ly	<i>Neul-ly</i>	im-bro-glio	<i>intricacy</i>

As the pronunciation of this letter is attended with some difficulty, observe that the final syllables, *ail*, *eil*, *œil*, *euil*, *ueil*, and *ouil*, are always *liquid*; so are in any situation *aill*, *eill*, *œill*, *euill*, *ueill*, and *ouill*, followed by a vowel, as is seen in the list of examples just given.

\* There is a perceptible difference between the vowel sound of the second syllable of *orgueil* and *orgueilleux*; the former is pronounced like *œil*, and the latter like the second syllable of *sommeil*.

*L* final, preceded simply by *i*, is liquid in some few words, of which the following is nearly a list; *avril*, *babil*, *Brésil*, *cil*, *gril*, *grésil*, *péril*, and *gentil*, when before a vowel, though in some even of these the *l* is occasionally dropped in familiar conversation; in other



words of this termination, the *l* is usually suppressed, as in *fusil*, *outil*, *chenil*, &c. pronounced *fusi*, *outi*, *cheni*.

In *fil*s, a son, or sons, the *l* is mute; but in *fil*, *fil*s, thread, threads, it is always heard, but is not liquid.

The same remark applies to *poil*, pronounced *poèl*, the hair of an animal, and to *il*, the personal pronoun; in the plural of this latter, *ils*, the *l* is sometimes rejected and sometimes pronounced, though the first mode is preferable.

Observe that *Milhaut*, *Pardalhac*, and *Sully*, proper names, are pronounced *liquid*, contrary to the established rule, and that the two latter are nearly the only known instances of an *l* or *ll* sounded *liquid*, without being immediately preceded by the vowel *i*.

*Ill*, in the middle of a word, is generally liquid, there being no exceptions of this rule but those words which begin immediately by *ill*, as *illégal*, *illuminer*, &c. and the following, *distiller*, *instiller*, *osciller*, *scintiller*, *titiller*, *vaciller*, *fritillaire*, *imbécille*, *mille*, *tranquille*, with their derivatives and inflections when verbs, and *ville* with its compounds, as also *Achille*, *campanille*, *codicille*, *fibrille*, *Gille*, *maxillaire*, *pupille*, *la Sibylle*, and *sille*.

In most of these exceptions *ll* are both sounded, as well as in several other words, in which these letters are preceded by other vowels, as *allégorie*, *allusion*, *appellatif*, *appellation*, *belligérant*, *belliqueux*, *collation de bénéfices*, *follicule*, *malléole*, *velléité*, *collusion*, *constellation*, *constellé*, *ébullition*, *Gallican*, *Gallicisme*, *intellect*, &c. *malléable*, *médullaire*, *palliatif*, *pellicule*, *équipoller*, *hélénisme*, and in proper names, as *Apollon*, *Bellone*, *Dolabella*, *Pallas*, *Sylla*, &c.

---

*M*, *m*, corresponds in sound with the same letter in English.

#### EXAMPLES.

Mar-me-la-de	<i>marmalade</i>	mo-mie	<i>mummy</i>
mar-mot-te	<i>marmot</i>	mo-ment	<i>moment</i>
mé-mo-ra-ble	<i>memorable</i>	Mus-sul-man	<i>Mussulman</i>
mir-mi-don	<i>myrmidon</i>	mur-mu-re	<i>murmur</i>
mi-mi-que	<i>mimic</i>	mys-tè-re	<i>mystery</i>



*M*, though usually sounded in the middle of words before *n*, as in *amnistie*, *calomnie*, *hymne*, *insomnie*, *somnambule*, *automnal*, is yet mute in *damner*, and its derivatives, and in the substantive *automne*.

When double, only one of these letters is usually sounded, except, 1st, in proper names, as *Em-manuel*; 2dly, in words beginning with *imm*, as *im-mortel*.

In words in which *em* is followed by *m*, as *emmencher*, it is pronounced like *an*, with the nasal sound.

When this letter is final, see tables first and second, (p. 4 and 5,) and the accompanying observations, (p. 8. and 9,) where we necessarily, in part, discussed the nature of this letter.

*N*, *n*, has the same sound as in English.

#### EXAMPLES.

A-na-nas	<i>pine-apple</i>	non-ne	<i>nun</i>
Né-nu-far	<i>Nenuphar</i>	non-obs-tant	<i>notwithstanding</i>
na-ti-o-nal	<i>national</i>	Ni-ni-ve	<i>Nineveh</i>
no-mi-nal	<i>nominal</i>	noc-tur-ne	<i>nocturnal</i>
no-na-gé-nai-re	<i>a man of ninety</i>	nym-phe	<i>nymph</i>

When *n* follows the letter *g*, see *gn* (p. 22.)

*N* is often nasal, see TABLE I. (p. 4,) and TABLE II. (p. 5,) and our observations (p. 8 and 9.)

*N* takes the sound of *s* in *monsieur*, pronounced *mos-sieu*.

*N* after *e* before *t* final in the third person plural of any French verb is constantly silent, and the *e* is mute, as *ils consentent au marché*, *ils aimaient à rire*, *ils lurent un chapitre*; here the final *t* is only sounded before a vowel.

When *n* is doubled, one only is generally pronounced, except in *an-nexe*, *an-nal*, *an-nuel*, *an-notation*, *an-nuler*, *in-né*, *in-nové*, *in-novation*; and a few other cases.

*P*, *p*, is sounded as in English.

#### EXAMPLES.

Pa-pil-lon	<i>butterfly</i>	pou-pée	<i>doll</i>
pe-pin	<i>pippin</i>	po-pu-lai-re	<i>popular</i>
pied-plat	<i>mean fellow</i>	pour-pre	<i>purple</i>
prin-ci-pe	<i>principle</i>	pur-pu-rin	<i>purplish</i>
pro-pos	<i>discourse</i>	py-ra-mi-de	<i>pyramid</i>

*P* followed by *h* has the sound of *f*, as *philosophe*, *phosphore*, *physique*.

*P* preserves its sound in the middle of a word, as in *adapter*, *adopter*, *capter*, *captieux*, *baptismal*, *aptitude*, *exception*, *exemption*, *inepte*, *contempteur*, *gypse*, *Septembre*, *Septuagésime*, *corruption*, *rupture*, *apsides*, *rapso-dies*, *symptôme*.

But it is not heard in *baptême*, *baptiser*, *baptistaire*. *Baptiste*, *cheptel*, *exempt*, *exempter*, *sculpter*, *sculpteur*, *sculpture*, *je romps*, *il corromp*, *sept*, *septième*, *temps*, and *printemps*, nor in *prompt*, *prompte*, and its derivatives.

Final *p* is always sounded in *Alep*, *cap*, *Gap*, *jalap*, and *julep*, it is also heard in *trop*, *beaucoup*, when before a vowel, but never in *champ*, *camp*, *drap*, *loup*, *sirop*, and *galop*.

In *laps*, *relaps*, and *rapt*, both the final consonants are pronounced, but neither in *ceps de vigne*.

When *p* is doubled, only one is generally sounded; however, in such words as *lippitude*, *hippocentaure*, *hippopotame*, *Hippomène*, *Agrippa*, *Agrippine*, *Philip-piques*, and *Hippias*, both are distinctly heard.

*Q, q*, has generally the hard sound of *k* in *king*.

As this letter is constantly followed by the vowel *u*, except in *cinq*, and *coq*, we shall simply remark, that

*Qu* has three sounds, that of

{	<i>k</i> , by far the most general before any vowel.
	<i>kou</i> before <i>a</i> in some particular words.
	<i>ku</i> before <i>e</i> , or <i>i</i> , in some others.

#### Examples of *k*.

Quai	<i>wharf</i>	ques-tion	<i>question</i>
qua-li-té	<i>quality</i>	sé-ques-tre	<i>sequestration</i>
quel-que	<i>some</i>	queue	<i>tail</i>
qui-con-que	<i>whosoever</i>	a-queux	<i>watery</i>
qui-pro-quo	<i>blunder</i>	a-qué-duc	<i>aqueduct</i>
quo-li-bet	<i>pun</i>	é-qui-vo-que	<i>ambiguity</i>
quin-qui-na	<i>Peruvian bark</i>	se re-quin-	{ <i>to trick one's</i> <i>self out</i>
que-nouil-le	<i>distaff</i>	quer	

&c. &c. &c.

Examples of *kou*.

A-qua-ti-que	<i>aquatic</i>	qua-ter-ne	<i>quaternion</i>
é-qua-teur	<i>equator</i>	qua-dra-gé-nai-re	} <i>a man of forty</i>
é-qua-ti-on	<i>equation</i>	qua-dra-gé-si-mal	
qua-kre	<i>quaker</i>		} <i>quadragesimal</i>
qua-dra-tu-re	<i>quadrature</i>		
qua-dri-ge	{ <i>ancient cha-</i>	a-qua-ti-le	<i>aquatile</i>
	{ <i>riot with</i>	a-qua-rel-le	<i>aquatinta</i>
	{ <i>four horses</i>	li-qua-ti-on	<i>liquation</i>
qua-dru-pé-de	<i>quadruped</i>	in-quar-to	<i>quarto size</i>
qua-dru-ple	<i>quadruple</i>	lo-qua-ci-té	<i>loquacity</i>

Examples of *ku*.

E-ques-tre	<i>equestrian</i>	é-qui-mul-ti-ple	<i>equimultiple</i>
li-que-fac-ti-on	<i>liquefaction</i>	é-qui-ta-ti-on	<i>horsemanship</i>
ques-teur	<i>questor</i>	quin-tu-ple	<i>quintuple</i>
ques-tu-re	<i>questure</i>	quin-ti-le	<i>quintile</i>
quin-quen-nium	{ <i>quinquennium</i>	quin-quen-nal	<i>quinquennial</i>
é-qui-la-tè-re		quin-dé-cem-virs	{ <i>quindecimviri</i>
	{ <i>of equal dimen-</i>	quin-qué-rè-me	
	{ <i>sions</i>		<i>ancient galley</i>
é-qui-la-té-ral	<i>equilateral</i>	quin-quer-ce	{ <i>a term of the</i>
é-qui-an-gle	<i>equiangular</i>		
é-qui-dis-tant	<i>equidistant</i>		<i>ancient gymnasium</i>

In *quinquagénnaire*, a man of fifty, and *quinquagésime*, *quinquagesima*, the first syllable corresponds with the sound of *qu* in *équestre*, and the second corresponds with the sound of *qu* in *aquatique*. This letter is never doubled.

*R*, *r*, is sounded as in English, but much stronger.

## EXAMPLES.

Ra-re-té	<i>scarcity</i>	rhyth-me	<i>rhythm</i>
ras-su-rer	<i>to hearten</i>	sour-dre	<i>to spring</i>
ra-bou-gri	<i>stunted</i>	cour-roux	<i>wrath</i>
re-brous-ser	<i>to turn back</i>	il-cour-ra	<i>he will run</i>
ri-gou-reux	<i>rigorous</i>	cor-ro-de-ra	<i>it will corrode</i>
rom-pre	<i>to break</i>	cor-ro-bo-re-ra	{ <i>it will corro-</i>
rou-vrir	<i>to open again</i>		
ru-gir	<i>to roar</i>	ir-ra-di-a-ti-on	<i>irradiation</i>
ru-ral	<i>rural</i>	ir-ro-ra-ti-on	<i>irrigation</i>
rus-tre	<i>a boor</i>	tor-ré-fac-ti-on	<i>torrefaction</i>

*R* is always sounded at the end of words after the

Jewels, *a, i, o, u*, except in *Monsieur*, pronounced, as we have said, *Mos-sieu*.

*Er*, in the following adjectives and substantives, constantly rhymes with *air*, which is pronounced alike in both languages.

## EXAMPLES.

Cher	dear	ou-tre-mer	ultramarine
cuil-ler	spoon	bel-vé-der	belvidere
fer	iron	Lu-ci-fer	Lucifer
ver	worm	Pa-ter	the Lord's prayer
mer	sea	fra-ter	{ ignorant medical practitioner
fier	haughty	ma-gister	
gas-ter	stomach	Stat-hou-der	{ village school mas- ter
hi-er	yesterday	Ju-pi-ter	
hi-ver	winter	Al-ger	Jupiter
a-mer	bitter	Gess-ner	Algiers
can-cer	cancer	Ni-ger	Gessner
en-fer	hell	Sad-der	Niger, a river
é-ther	ether		Sadder, a holy book of the Persians
a-vant-hier	{ the day before yesterday		

In all other substantives, ending in *er*, the *r* is silent, and the *e* pronounced *close* and *short* as in *clarté*.

When the following adjectives and a few others precede immediately a substantive which they qualify, if this begins with a vowel, the *r* is pronounced, but in no other case.

<i>R</i> sounded	{	Le premiere acte	the first act
		son dernier ouvrage	his last work
		un singulier évènement	a singular event
		un entier abandon	an entire cession
		un léger obstacle	a slight obstacle
<i>R</i> not sounded	{	Il est le premier à vous promettre et le dernier à vous tenir parole.—He is the first to promise, and the last to keep his word.	
		C'est un homme léger et inconstant, entier en tout ce qu'il veut, et singulier en tout ce qu'il fait.—He is a light versatile character, positive in all he undertakes, and singular in all he does.	

Final *r* in the present of the infinitive of all the verbs of the first conjugation, is always pronounced when im-



mediately followed by a word beginning with a vowel, when the style is dignified, but in conversation this distinction is seldom observed.

*Rh.* See *h*, (p. 23.)

When this letter is double, only one is pronounced, except, 1st, in *aberration*, *abhorrer*, *horreur*, *errer*, *torréfier*, and their derivatives: 2dly, in words beginning with *irr*, as *irrévocable*, *irrégulier*, *irruption*, &c.; 3dly, in the future and conditional of the verbs *acquérir*, *courir*, *mourir*, and their derivatives—*j'acquer-rai*, *je mourrais*, *nous cour-ri-ons*, &c.

*S, s*, has two } *hard*, as in the English word *sister*.  
sounds, the } *soft*, as in *rose* and *please*.

In the following list of words the first *s* has the *hard*, and the second the *soft* sound.

#### EXAMPLES OF BOTH SOUNDS.

Sai-son	season	sour-noi-se	a sullen woman
saî-sie	seizure	sup-po-sez	suppose
sé-sa-me	sesamum	sé-dui-sant	alluring
si-se	situate	Su-se	Susa
Sou-bi-se	Soubise	su-sin	quarter-deck
sot-ti-se	silly action	Sy-ra-cu-se	Syracuse
sous-en-ten-te	{ mental reserva- tion	Syn-thè-se	Synthesis

*S* has uniformly the *hard* sound at the beginning of words, except in *Sbire*, *Svelte*, *Sganarelle*, and *Sdili* for *Dēlos*, where it has the *soft* sound; and in familiar conversation *aller à Sedan*; *il est le second de sa classe*, are pronounced as if these words were written *azdan*, *le zgon*. Before *ch*, *s* is mute, as in *Schall*, *Schaffhouse*, *Schelling*, *Schis-e*, *Schorl*.

*Sh* in *shérif*, a sheriff, is sounded as in English.

When *s* is followed by *ce*, *ci*, *cy*, the sound of only one of these consonants is heard, as in *scène*, *science*, *Scythie*, &c. except, however, in *aces-cence*, *convales-cence*, *efferves-cence*, *efflores-cence*, *turges-cence*, *incandes-cence*, *réminis-cence*, *résipis-cence*, *mis-cible*, *res-cinder*, *sus-cep-*



*tion, sus-citer, sus-citation, vis-cère, vis-céral, trans-cend-ance*, and a few others, where *s* cannot be rescinded without altering the pronunciation. In all other combinations, *sc* takes the sound of *sk*, as *scapulaire, scolie, sclérotique, scribe, esclave, scrupule, &c.*

*S* preserves the *hard* sound in the middle of a word, when preceded or followed by a consonant, as in *transe, transir, Transylvanie, convulsion, valse, espace, ustensile, statistique, &c. &c.* However, it takes the *soft* sound, or that of *z*, in *Alsace, Arsace, Asdrubal, asbeste, balsamine, balsamique, bisbille, Israël, Israélite, Esdras, Thisbé, presbîtere, transaction, transiger, transitoire, in-transitif, transalpin, Lesbos, Isboeth, Brigaw, Ryswick, Louisbourg, Augsbourg, Presbourg, Philipsbourg*, and some few others.

*S* takes the *soft* sound when between two vowels, as in *base, thèse, bise, rose, ruse, &c.* Except in compound words, where it preserves the *hard* sound of the *initial s* of its root; as in *désuetude, entresol, monosyllabe, polysyllabe, parasol, tournesol, préséance, présupposer, saisir, resaluer, vraisemblable*, and some derivatives.

*St* final, see final *t* (p. 33.)

Final *s* is always heard in *as, atlas, argus, bibus, blocus, bolus, agnus, fœtus, calus, sinus, Phébus, les us, virus, en sus, aloès, bis, jadis, iris, gratis, lapis, le lis, la Lys* (a river,) *maïs, métis, vis, tournevis, Amadis, Adonis, Paris*, (the shepherd,) *pathos, Athos, Lesbos, Minos, Délos, Paros, Brutus, Vénus, Régulus, Protésilas, Blas, Gil Blas, Las Casas*, and many more foreign proper names.

In almost all other cases final *s* is silent when the next word begins with a consonant, as *au moins vous ne pouvez pas dire, que je vous répète toujours les mêmes choses*; but it generally takes the *soft* sound of *z* before another word, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, as *aurez-vous au moins alors assez de patience, pour, &c.*

Though there is no *s* in *quatre*, yet, before *yeux*, it is, in conversation, pronounced as if ending in that letter.

Finally, *ss* have generally the sound of a single *s* pronounced *hard*, as in *je ressassasse, assassinasse, Mississipi, &c.*; except in some few words, where both are heard, *assation, assonance, dissonance, accessible, inaccessible, admissible, inadmissible, missive, scissile, scission, scissure, fissure, fissipède, assentiment, asservir*. Thus there is a difference in pronunciation between these phrases: *C'est un homme à SENTIMENS; il aime à SERVIR ses amis; and il faut son ASSENTIMENT; cet ambitieux voudrait ASSERVIR l'univers; and again between l'alun de plume est SCISSILE and LA SICILE est une île triangulaire, &c.* the double *ss* must be distinctly heard.

*T, t*, has two sounds,  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{first, hard, as in the English} \\ \text{word } \textit{tit}, \\ \text{second, soft, like } c \text{ in } \textit{cedar and} \\ \text{civil.} \end{array} \right.$   
the

## FIRST SOUND.

*Examples of t hard before vowels and diphthongs.*

Tac-ti-que	<i>tactics</i>	ti-are	<i>tiara</i>
tes-ta-teur	<i>testator</i>	bas-ti-on	<i>bastion</i>
thé-â-tre	<i>theatre</i>	ques-ti-on	<i>question</i>
to-ta-li-té	<i>totality</i>	mix-ti-on	<i>mixture</i>
tour-te-rel-le	<i>turtle-dove</i>	com-bus-ti-on	<i>combustion</i>
ti-tu-lai-re	<i>titulary</i>	bi-jou-tier	<i>jeweller</i>
ti-thy-ma-le	<i>tithymal</i>	Ma-thi-as	<i>Mathias</i>
chré-tien	<i>christian</i>	Pon-thieu	<i>Ponthieu</i>
dy-nas-tie	<i>dynasty</i>	tu sou-tiens	<i>thou supportest</i>
le tien	<i>thine</i>	&c. &c. &c.	

## SECOND SOUND.

*T* is *soft* before *i*, connected with some other following vowel or vowels, in some particular words, that are given as exceptions to the *first sound* of *t*.

## EXAMPLES.

Par-ti-al	<i>partial</i>	ac-ti-on	<i>action</i>
par-ti-a-li-té	<i>partiality</i>	bal-bu-ti-er	<i>to stammer</i>
par-ti-el	<i>partial</i>	in-i-ti-er	<i>to initiate</i>
pa-ti-en-ce	<i>patience</i>	bal-bu-ti-a	<i>he stuttered</i>
im-pa-ti-en-ce	<i>impatience</i>	bal-bu-tie-ment	<i>stammering</i>
quo-ti-ent	<i>quotient</i>	in-i-ti-é	<i>initiated</i>
cap-ti-eux	<i>captious</i>	in-i-ti-a-ti-on	<i>initiation</i>
ar-gu-tie	<i>cavil</i>	Ve-ni-ti-en	<i>Venetian</i>
cau-ti-on-ne-ment	<i>bail</i>	se pré-cau-ti-on-ner	<i>to be cautious</i>

*Sti, xti, thi*, preserve invariably the *first sound* of *t* before any letter.

To complete this second list, observe that *t* always takes the sound of *c*.—1st. In all adjectives ending in *-tial*, *-tiel*, *-tient*, *-tieux*, and their derivatives;—2dly. In all the inflexions of the two verbs quoted, *balbutier*, and *initier*;—3dly. In several hundred words ending in *tion*, when *tion* is not immediately preceded by an *s*, or an *x*; and finally, in the following additional list of words, ending in *-tie* and *-tien*, viz. the substantives *calvitie*, *facétie*, *impéritie*, *inertie*, *minutie*, *péripétie*, *primatie*, *prophétie*, *suprématie*, *aristocratie*, *démocratie*, *théocratie*; in the names of countries, as *Béotie*, *Croatie*, *Dalmatie*, *Galatie*; and of nations, or persons, as *Béotien*, *Egyptien*, *Capétien*, *Dioclétien*, *Domitien*, *Gratien*, *Le Titien*, and some few others.

*T* final is always sounded in *apt*, *rapt*, *fat*, *malt*, *mat*, *pat*, *opiat*, *exeat*, *transeat*, *vivat*, *spalt*, *spath*, *Goliath*, *net*, *fret*, *tacet*, *Thibet*, *aconit*, *déficit*, *granit*, *introît*, *prétérit*, *transit*, *subit*, *dot*, *Astaroth*, *azimut*, *brut*, *comput*, *chut*, *bismuth*, *indult*, *luth*, *lut*, *occiput*, *sinciput*, and both *s* and *t* are articulated in *Le Christ*, *l'est*, (east,) *l'ouest*, *Brest*, *lest*, *test*, *Pest*, *toast*, and *entre le zist et le zest*; but neither of these letters is heard in *Jésus Christ*, which is pronounced *Jésu Cri*.

*T* final is likewise generally heard, when the following word begins with a vowel or *h* mute, as *c'est un petit homme*, &c. &c.; however there are many words in which it always remains silent, as *mort*, *tort*, *goût*,

*court, bât, mâ, lit, respect, instinct, navet, assassinat, artichaut, défaut, debout, brûlot, statut, &c.* so that a person would almost be regarded with astonishment who should affectedly sound it in these sentences: *L'assaut a été terrible.—Le contrat est signé et le dépôt est chez moi.—Le gigot est cuit et le ragoût aussi.—Avant de pêcher mettez l'appât à la ligne.—J'ai fait un bon marché; voyez, l'achat est là;* such a pronounciation would be barbarous and often equivocal.

*T* is always silent in the conjunction *et*, pronounced *é*, therefore to avoid what is called *hiatus* in French verse, this word is never placed before a vowel.

For words ending in *ct*, see page 18.

When this letter is doubled, only one is heard, except in *atticisme, attique, Atticus, battologie, guttural, and pittoresque.*

*V, v*, has the same sound in French as in English.

#### EXAMPLES.

Val-ve	<i>valve</i>	vi-vre	<i>to live</i>
val-vu-le	<i>valvule</i>	vi-vo-ter	<i>to live poorly</i>
vau-de-vil-le	<i>ballad</i>	vi-re-vol-te	{ <i>quick irregular walk</i>
ver-ve	<i>poetic fire</i>	vi-re-veau	
vi-va-ce	<i>vivacious</i>	veu-ve	<i>widow</i>
vis-à-vis	<i>opposite</i>	veu-va-ge	<i>widowhood</i>

This letter, when doubled, is represented by the character *w*, which is met with in some foreign words, and is always pronounced as a simple *v*, as in *Wigh, Wolfram, Warwick, Windsor, Walcourt, Wallon, Warsovie, Westphalie, Wirtemberg, Wolga, Weser, Wendover, Ryswick, &c.* except in *wist* and *wiski*, where it has the English sound; but in *Newton*, the first syllable *new* is pronounced as *neu* in *neutralité*.



**X, x,** has the five different sounds { *ks*, in *axe*, *expense*  
*gz*, in *exhibit*, *exhale*  
*k*, in *excellent*, *exsiccative*  
*ss*, in *bliss*, *mossy*  
*z*, in *Xenophon*.

## EXAMPLES

Of the first sound, *ks*.

Ax-e	<i>axis</i>	A-lex-an-dre	<i>Alexander</i>
sex-e	<i>sex</i>	Xan-tip-pe	<i>Xantippe</i>
ri-xe	<i>altercation</i>	ox-y-gè-ne	<i>oxygen</i>
box-er	<i>to box</i>	pa-ra-do-xe	<i>paradox</i>
lu-xe	<i>luxury</i>	flu-xi-on	<i>defluxion</i>

## EXAMPLES

Of the second sound, *gz*.

Xa-vi-er	<i>Xaverius</i>	ex-a-men	<i>examination</i>
Xé-no-phon	<i>Xenophon</i>	ex-au-cer	{ <i>to hear fa- vourably</i>
ex-il	<i>exile</i>	ex-haus-ser	
ex-or-de	<i>exordium</i>	ex-hi-ber	<i>to raise</i>
ex-u-bé-ran-ce	<i>exuberance</i>	ex-hu-mer	<i>to produce</i>
			<i>to disinter</i>

## EXAMPLES

Of the third sound, *k*.

Ex-cé-der	<i>to exceed</i>	ex-sic-ca-tion	<i>exsiccation</i>
ex-cel-ler	<i>to excel</i>	ex-suc-ci-on	<i>exsuction</i>
ex-cès	<i>excess</i>	ex-su-da-ti-on	<i>exsudation</i>
ex-cep-ter	<i>to except</i>	ex-su-der	<i>exude</i>
ex-ci-se	<i>excise</i>	ex-ci-per	{ <i>to plead an ex- ception</i>

## EXAMPLES

Of the fourth sound, *ss*.

Aix	<i>Aix</i>	Soixante	<i>Sixty</i>
Aix-la-Chapelle	<i>Aix-la-Chapelle</i>	Bruxelles	<i>Brussels</i>
Auxerre	<i>Auxerre</i>	Luxeuil	<i>Luxeuil</i>
Auxonne	<i>Auxonne</i>	and some few more.	



## EXAMPLES

Of the fifth sound, *z*.

Deuxième	<i>second</i>	dix écus	<i>ten crowns</i>
sixième	<i>sixth</i>	dix hommes	<i>ten men</i>
dixième	<i>tenth</i>	deux aunes	<i>two ells</i>
dix-huit	<i>eighteen</i>	beaux yeux	<i>fine eyes</i>
dix-neuf	<i>nineteen</i>	&c. &c.	

The first sound of this letter *ks* is by far the most general.

The second sound *gz* takes place in all words beginning with *x* or *ex* followed by a vowel, or the letter *h*, as le *Xanthe*, *Xénocrates*, *Ximenès*, *exorable*, and several others, with those already mentioned in the second exemplification.

The third sound *k* is limited to words beginning with *exce*, *exci*, and *exs*.

The fourth sound *ss* is only found in the above quotations, and in *six* and *dix* when unaccompanied by substantives, as in *de seize ôtez six*, *reste dix*, where *six* and *dix* are pronounced with the hissing sound of *ss* in the English word *bliss*.

Final *x* is generally pronounced as *z*, when the next word begins with a vowel or *h* mute, otherwise it is silent, as *Il est heureux auprès de vous, et malheureux loin de vous : le flux et le reflux de la mer*, &c. except in the following words, where it has always the sound of *ks*. *Ajax*, *Astianax*, *borax*, *storax*, *Halifax*, *Hipponax*, *Dax*, *climax*, *thorax*, *Pertinax*, *Syphax*, *index*, *perplex*, *Béatrix*, *Erix*, *Felix*, *préfix*, *phénix*, *Fox*, *Palofox*, *Coysevox*, *lynx*, *sphinx*, *larynx*, *syrinx*, *onyx*, *Styx*, and *Polux*.

N. B. *X* takes the sound of *sh* only in *Don Quixote*, generally pronounced *Don Kishot*, or rather *ghishot*.

*Z*, *z*, is generally pronounced as *z* in *zone*, or *s* in *rose*.

## EXAMPLES.

Zi-za-nie	<i>tare</i>	zig-zag	<i>zigzag</i>
zé-nith	<i>zenith</i>	zin-zo-lin	<i>reddish purple</i>
zô-ne	<i>zone</i>	Zuy-der-zée	<i>Zuyder-zee</i>

Except some few words, as *assez, chez, nez, sonnez*, (two sixes,) and some proper names, as *Alvarez, Suarez, Metz, Senez, Rhodex*, &c. *z final* is the distinctive mark of almost all the second persons plural in the French verbs, where it is generally heard, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute, otherwise it is only sounded in the proper names already mentioned.

*Z* is doubled in a few words taken from the Italian language, as *lazzi*, (dumb show,) *mezzanine, mezzo terminé, mezzo-tinto*, and in some names of towns, or provinces, as *Arezzo, l'Abruzze*, &c.

---

## OF GENDER.

Gender in all languages marks the distinction of sex, and as there are only two of these, the French agreeably to this view have but two genders, the masculine and feminine: the neuter they do not admit.

The masculine gender expresses the male kind, as *un homme*, a man; *un lion*, a lion.

The feminine gender denotes the female kind, as *une femme*, a woman; *une lionne*, a lioness.

The gender of nouns, in inanimate objects, is generally expressed by their termination; thus, final *e* mute is the distinctive mark of the *feminine gender*, every other final letter is the sign of the *masculine*. This would be an excellent rule, were it universal; but this is far from being the case from the number of exceptions, and it is with the intention of affording the learner a tolerable clue on this head, that we have here laid down the following concise rules, which will clear up some of the chief difficulties.

## A TABLE OF SUBSTANTIVES

*That are masculine in one signification, and Feminine in another.*

<i>Masculine.</i>		<i>Feminine.</i>
Assistant, helper	<i>Aide</i>	Aid, help, support
eagle; a great genius	<i>aigle</i>	a Roman standard
an angel	<i>ange</i>	a kind of thornback
an alder tree	<i>aune</i>	an ell, a sort of measure
barb, a Barbary horse	<i>barbe</i>	beard
bard, a poet	<i>barde</i>	{ a slice of bacon horse armour
red-breast	<i>berce</i>	cow-parsnip
a sort of privateer	<i>câpre</i>	caper, an acid pickle
a scroll, or ornament in } painting }	<i>cartouche</i>	cartouch, cartridge
a caravan, a hoy	<i>coche</i>	a notch; a sow
cornet, a standard-bearer	<i>cornette</i>	{ a woman's head-dress when in dishabille
a couple, a man and wife	<i>couple</i>	a brace, a pair, two of a sort
Croat, a Croatian soldier	<i>cravate</i>	a cravat, a neckcloth
a crape	<i>crepe</i>	a pancake
an echo, the return of } sound }	<i>echo</i>	Echo, a nymph
ensign, a standard bear- } er }	<i>enseigne</i>	a sign post
example, model, instance	<i>exemple</i>	a copy for writing
a gimlet, a piercer	<i>foret</i>	a wood, a forest
a large tun	<i>foudre</i>	lightning, thunderbolt
keeper, warden	<i>garde</i>	watch; hilt; nurse
hoar-frost	<i>givre</i>	{ a snake, or serpent (in heraldry)
the rolls, a register	<i>greffe</i>	a graft
gules in heraldry	<i>gueule</i>	the mouth of beasts
guide, director	<i>guide</i>	rein, for governing a horse
heliotrope, sunflower	<i>héliotrope</i>	heliotrope; jasper
iris, the rainbow; iris of } the eye }	<i>iris</i>	{ sprig-crystal; a proper name
lacker, a kind of varnish	<i>laque</i>	lacca, gum-lac
a book	<i>livre</i>	a pound
a hat of otter's hair	<i>loutre</i>	an otter
handle of a tool	<i>manche</i>	a sleeve; English channel
a labourer	<i>manœuvre</i>	the working of a ship
memoir; a bill	<i>mémoire</i>	memory
thanks	<i>merci</i>	pity, mercy

N. B. Of this table it is to be remarked, that the French word stands in the middle column, and its signification on the right hand and on the left. When it has the meaning which stands on the left, it is masculine; when that which stands to the right, it is feminine.

<i>Masculine.</i>		<i>Feminine.</i>
mood ; mode	<i>mode</i>	fashion
a pier, or mound	<i>môle</i>	mole, moon-calf
mould, cast, form	<i>moule</i>	muscle, a shell-fish
a ship-boy	<i>mousse</i>	moss, a plant
the philosopher's stone	<i>œuvre</i>	action ; an author's works
office, business ; prayers	<i>office</i>	pantry, larder, buttery
ombre, a game at cards	<i>ombre</i>	shade, shadow
page of a prince, &c.	<i>page</i>	page in a book
a merry andrew	<i>paillasse</i>	a straw-bed
a hand's breadth	<i>palme</i>	{ the branch of a palm- tree ; victory
pantomime	<i>pantomime</i>	a dumb show
easter, easter-day	<i>pâque</i>	the passover
a comparison	<i>parallèle</i>	a parallel line
pendulum	<i>pendule</i>	a clock
le Perche, in France	<i>perche</i>	pole ; perch, a fish
summit, highest pitch	<i>période</i>	period, epocha
any body, nobody ( <i>a pro-</i> <i>noun</i> )	<i>personne</i>	a person ( <i>a noun</i> )
spade, at cards	<i>pique</i>	a pike
gnatsnapper, a bird	<i>pivoine</i>	peony, a flower
a plane-tree	<i>plane</i>	plane, an instrument
a stove ; a canopy	<i>poêle</i>	a frying-pan
post ; a military station	<i>poste</i>	the post for letters
punto at cards	<i>ponte</i>	the laying of eggs
purple colour ; purples ( <i>a</i> ) disease)	<i>pourpre</i>	purple fish ; purple dye
a pretence	<i>prétexte</i>	pretext [nament
quadril at cards	<i>quadrille</i>	party of horse in a tour-
the calling back a hawk	<i>réclame</i>	a catch-word (in printing)
rest, relaxation	<i>relâche</i>	harbour
a glass coach	<i>remise</i>	a coach-house ; a remit-
a sort of pear-tree	<i>sans-peau</i>	a sort of pear [tance
Satyr, a sylvan god	<i>satyre</i>	a satire, a lampoon
serpentarius	<i>serpenteaire</i>	snake-root, dragon's wort
nap, slumber	<i>somme</i>	sum ; load ; name of a ri-
a smile	<i>souris</i>	a mouse [ver
a porter	<i>suisse</i>	Switzerland
holder, a book-keeper	<i>teneur</i>	tenor, purport, content
a tour ; turn ; trick	<i>tour</i>	tower ; rock at chess
triumph	<i>triomphe</i>	a trumpet
trumpeter	<i>trompette</i>	trumpet
space	<i>vague</i>	a wave, surge
a vase, vessel	<i>vase</i>	{ the slime in ponds, lakes, &c.
a hat of vigonia wool	<i>vigogne</i>	a vignon, a llama
a veil	<i>voile</i>	a sail



## SUBSTANTIVES DENOTING SPECIES,

WHICH HAVE A FIXED GENDER INDEPENDENTLY OF TERMINATION.

1 { God, his angels, cherubim and seraphim, are of masculine gender.

2 { All terms seeming to constitute an appellation, and all *proper names* of men and women are of the gender of the sex to which they respectively belong, as are likewise all names of animals, when the male is distinguished from the female by a different denomination; but when the same name is used for both male and female, as *un éléphant, un zèbre, une panthère, un vautour, un cygne, une caille, une perdrix, un barbeau, une truite, un congre*, its gender must then, like that of any inanimate object, be determined by its termination. Here the only difficulty respects substantives ending in *e* mute, all the rest being of the masculine gender, with such exceptions as will be seen in page 45.

3 { All *diminutives of animals*, when there is but one common denomination for both sexes, are of the masculine gender, whatever may be the gender of the original from which they are derived, as *un lionceau, un souriceau, un perdreau, un cornillas, un carpillon, un couleuvreau, un vipéreau, un bécasseau*, &c. except *une bécassine*; but these two latter, although derived from the word *bécasse*, and belonging to the *genus*, are not of the same *species*. In other cases, the diminutives follow the gender their sex indicates, as *un poulain, une pouliche, un cochet, une poulette*.

4 { Diminutives of inanimate objects more generally follow the gender of their roots, as *batelet, maisonnette, globule*, from *bateau, maison, globe*, &c. however, *corbillon, soliveau, cruchon, savonnette, trousseau*, from *corbeille, solive, cruche, savon*, and *trousse*, and many others, do not.



- 5 { All the names of the days, months, and seasons of the year, are of the *masculine gender*, except *automne*, which is of both genders; when however the diminutive *mi* (half) is prefixed to the name of a month, the compound word then takes the feminine gender, as *la mi-mai*, *la mi-août*, &c. except also *la mi-carême*, and saint days, as *la saint-Jean*, *la Tous-saint*, &c.

- 6 All names { of *trees*, except *yeuse*, a sort of oak.  
of *shrubs*, with some exceptions,  
of *metals*, without excepting *platine*, formerly feminine,  
of *minerals*, a few excepted,  
of *colours*, without excepting *l'Isabelle*, *le Feuille-morte*, &c. though they have a feminine termination, } are masculine.

- 7 All names { of *mountains*, except those chains which have no singular,  
of *winds*, except *la bise*, *la tramontane*, *la brise*, and *les moussons*,  
of *towns*, except those which necessarily take the article *la* before them, as *la Rochelle*, *la Ferté-sur-Aube*, &c. and some others, } are masculine.

- 8 { Ordinal, distributive, and proportional numbers, adjectives and infinitives of verbs, prepositions and adverbs, all these, when used substantively, are masculine, as *le tiers, le quart, un cinquième, le quadruple, le beau, le sublime, le boire, le manger, le mieux, le pour, le contre, un parallèle* (a comparison), &c. except *la moitié*, and the elliptical forms of speech, *une courbe, une tangente, une perpendiculaire, une parallèle, une antique*, used for *une ligne courbe, une ligne tangente, &c.* *Antique* is feminine, for the same reason; the word *médaille*, or *statue*, appearing to be understood.
- 9 { All names of *virtues* are of the feminine gender, except *courage, mérite*.

---

GENDERS OF NOUNS MOSTLY DEPENDING ON THEIR  
TERMINATION.

- 10 { It will be recollected that final *e* mute constitutes the feminine gender, and every other final letter the masculine.
- 11 { *All names of states, empires, kingdoms, and provinces*, are of the gender which their terminations indicate; except *le Bengale, le Mexique, le Péloponèse, le Maine, le Perche, le Rouergue, le Bigorre, le Vallage, la Franche-comté*, and perhaps a few more.
- 12 { The names of fruits, grain, plants, and flowers, follow pretty generally the gender of their terminations, but there are too many exceptions to be introduced here.

## TABLE

SHOWING THE GENDER OF ALL WORDS THAT DO NOT END IN *e* MUTE.

Masculine.			Feminine.	
0		-tié	{ amitié, inimitié, } { moitié, pitié }	4
11	{ Aparté, arrêté, benédicité, comté, côté, été, pâté, traité, té, thé, Léthé }	-té	{ absurdité, beauté, charité, cité, dignité, fidélité, générosité, &c. &c. }	500
40	{ alibi, biribi, lundi, gui, grand merci, &c. }	-i	{ Fourmi, merci, ga-gui, après-midi }	4
15	convoi, effroi, &c.	-oi	foi, loi, paroi	3
30	{ ergo, vertigo, indigo, &c. }	-o	albugo, virago	2
10	{ fichu, cru, écu, tisu, &c. }	-u	{ bru, glu, tribu, vertu }	4
200	{ aloyau, anneau, &c. &c. }	-au	{ eau, peau, surpeau, sans-peau }	4
6	{ bref, chalef, chef, fief, grief, relief }	-ef	clef, nef, soif	3
3	{ daim, essaim, abat-faim }	-aim	faim, male-faim	2
100	{ an, ban, cran, écran, pan, &c. }	-an	maman	1
200	{ bain, baise-main, avant-main, garde-main, tourne-main, essuie-main, gain, frein, basin, &c. }	-in	fin, main, nonnain	5
4	{ scion, bastion, bastion, Ixion }	{ -cion -sion -tion -gion -nion -xion }	{ succion, cession, friction, gestion, région, opinion, réflexion, fluxion, &c. &c. &c. }	1100
30	{ gabion, taudion, million, lion, ardélion, fourmilion, trémion, capion, turion, camion, lampion, septentrion, brimborion, gavion, &c. }	{ -bion -dion -lion -mion -pion -rion -vion }	{ rébellion, dent-deli-on, alluvion }	3

<i>Masculine.</i>			<i>Feminine.</i>	
8	{ alcyon, clayon, crayon, rayon, sayon, trayon, lamproyon, Amphictyons }	-yon		8
1	brise-raison	-aison	cargaison, &c. &c.	30
11	{ peson, bison, grison, groison, horizon, tison, oison, poison, contre-poison, buson }	{ -eson -ison -uson }	{ garnison, guérison, prison, trahison, cloison, foison, moisson, pamoison, toison, camuson }	11
15	{ basson, caisson, cavesson, taisson, poisson, cosson, buisson, frisson, hérisson, maudisson, nourrisson, palisson, polisson, unisson, saucisson }	-sson	{ paisson, boisson, moisson, cuisson, salisson, mousson }	6
4	{ arcanson, échançon, tenson, pinson }	-nson	chanson	1
20	{ charançon, caveçon, pinçon, suçon, &c. }	-çon	{ façon, contrefaçon, malfaçon, leçon, rançon }	5
30	bridon, guéridon, &c.	-don	dondon	1
150	{ tendron, jeune tendron, baron, &c. }	{ -lon -ron }	{ laidéron, souillon, tatillon }	3
70	{ abattis, apprentis, iris, tourne-vis, &c. }	-is	{ brebis, souris, chauve-souris, vis, iris }	5
15	{ bois, mois, carquois, harnois, &c. }	-ois	fois	1
12	{ adent, chiendent, liondent, claquedent, cure-dent, occident, trident, &c. }	{ -dent -gent }	{ dent, surdent, gent }	3
700	{ acharnement, assortiment, &c. }	-ment	jument	1
250	{ ballet, billet, bosquet, minuit, conduit, réduit, &c. bil- lot, brûlot, complot, &c. bout, goût, ragoût, &c. }	{ -et -uit -ot -out }	forêt nuit, dot, glout	4



	<i>Masculine.</i>		<i>Feminine.</i>	
15	{ faix, choix, cruci- fix, prix, &c. taux, houx, courroux, é- poux, &c.	{ -ix -aux -oux	{ paix, croix, noix, poix, voix, perdrix, chaux, faux, toux }	9
20	{ art, départ, cham- part, rempart, ef- fort, port, fort, tort, &c.	{ -art -ort	{ hart, part, mort, }	4
40	{ fer, ver, hiver, &c. air, éclair, &c. tour, contour, four, &c.	{ -er -air -our	{ cuiller, mer, chair, }	5
900	{ bonheur, malheur, labeur, honneur, deshonneur, cœur, anticœur, crève- cœur, chœur, chou- fleur, pleurs, équa- teur, secteur, &c. &c. &c.	{ -eur	{ aigreur, ampleur, ar- deur, blancheur, can- deur, chaleur, chan- deleur, clameur, cou- leur, douceur, dou- leur, épaisseur, er- reur, fadeur, défa- veur, ferveur, fleur.	76

*pas-se-fleur, sans-fleur, fraîcheur, frayeur, froideur, fureur, gran-  
deur, grosseur, hauteur, horreur, humeur, laideur, langueur, lar-  
geur, lenteur, liqueur, longueur, lourdeur, lueur, maigreur, moi-  
teur, noirceur, odeur, pâleur, pésanteur, peur, primeur, profon-  
deur, puanteur, pudeur, impudeur, rigueur, roideur, rondeur,  
rougeur, rousseur, rumeur, saveur, senteur, sœur, souleur, splen-  
deur, sueur, teneur, terreur, tièdeur, torpeur, touffeur, tumeur,  
valeur, non-valeur, vapeur, verdeur, vigueur, and mœurs; be-  
sides basseur, rancœur, trémeur, three words now obsolete, making  
in the whole the number of seventy-six.*

There are a great many proper names of females, which, though they may not have the feminine termination, are of that gender, as the learner, from their nature, will easily comprehend: such are, among the heathens, *Pallas, Cérès, Thétis, Vé-nus, Junon, Didon, &c.* among christian names, *Sarah, Deborah, Elizabeth, Agnès, &c.* and many of these are contractions, as *Fanchon* for *Fanny, Lison, Lowison, Marion, Manon, Nanon, Jeannelon, Madelon, Tonton, Cataut, Margot, Goton, Babel, Ba-beau, Isabeau, &c.* [See Article 2. p. 40.]

As this list of exceptions will be found pretty accurate, all other nouns, that belong to this termination, must be strictly considered as being of the masculine gender, since they are not enumerated in this Table.



## A

## VOCABULARY,

## FRENCH AND ENGLISH.

\*\*\* In the following Vocabulary, the Gender has been affixed only to those Nouns that are not comprised in the preceding Rules.

## OF THE UNIVERSE IN GENERAL.

Dieu	<i>God</i>	soleil	<i>sun</i>
créateur	<i>creator</i>	rayon du soleil	<i>sun-beam</i>
Jésus-Christ	<i>Jesus Christ</i>	lune	<i>moon</i>
trinité	<i>trinity</i>	éclipse	<i>eclips</i>
Saint-Esprit	<i>Holy Ghost</i>	orage, <i>m.</i>	<i>storm</i>
ange	<i>angel</i>	tonnerre, <i>m.</i>	<i>thunder</i>
archange	<i>archangel</i>	éclair	<i>lightning</i>
prophète	<i>prophet</i>	brouillard	<i>fog</i>
messie	<i>messiah</i>	pluie	<i>rain</i>
sauveur	<i>saviour</i>	arc-en-ciel	<i>rain-bow</i>
rédeempteur	<i>redeemer</i>	ondée	<i>shower</i>
Vierge-Marie	<i>Virgin Mary</i>	neige	<i>snow</i>
apôtre	<i>apostle</i>	grêle	<i>hail</i>
évangéliste	<i>evangelist</i>	glace	<i>ice</i>
martyr	<i>martyr</i>	gelée	<i>frost</i>
saint	<i>saint</i>	dégel	<i>thaw</i>
paradis	<i>paradise</i>	rosée	<i>dew</i>
ciel	<i>heaven</i>	créature	<i>creature</i>
enfer	<i>hell</i>	globe, <i>m.</i>	<i>globe</i>
diable	<i>devil</i>	sphère	<i>sphere</i>
nature	<i>nature</i>	hémisphère, <i>m.</i>	<i>hemisphere</i>
univers	<i>universe</i>	horizon	<i>horizon</i>
monde, <i>m.</i>	<i>world</i>	degré	<i>degree</i>
élément	<i>element</i>	longitude	<i>longitude</i>
terre	<i>earth</i>	latitude	<i>latitude</i>
eau	<i>water</i>	points cardinaux, <i>pl.</i>	} <i>cardinal points</i>
feu	<i>fire</i>	orient, <i>or</i> est	
air	<i>air</i>	occident, <i>or</i>	} <i>west</i>
firmament	<i>sky</i>	ouest	
étoile	<i>star</i>	septentrion,	} <i>north</i>
planète	<i>planet</i>	<i>or</i> nord	
comète	<i>comet</i>	midi, <i>or</i> sud	<i>south</i>
constellation	<i>constellation</i>		

climat	<i>climate</i>	récif*	<i>reef of rocks</i>
région	<i>region</i>	brisans*	} <i>breakers,</i> <i>surf</i>
continent	<i>continent</i>	cime	
Europe	<i>Europe</i>	pierre	<i>top</i> <i>stone</i>
Asie	<i>Asia</i>	pont	<i>bridge</i>
Afrique	<i>Africa</i>	chaussée	<i>causeway</i>
Amérique	<i>America</i>	gué	<i>ford</i>
empire, <i>m.</i>	<i>empire</i>	quai	<i>wharf, or quay</i>
royaume, <i>m.</i>	<i>kingdom</i>	route	<i>road</i>
république	<i>republic</i>	sentier	<i>path</i>
pays	<i>country</i>	fossé	<i>ditch</i>
colonie	<i>colony</i>	gravier	<i>gravel</i>
principauté	<i>principality</i>	sable, <i>m.</i>	<i>sand</i>
électorat	<i>electorate</i>	sablon	<i>small sand</i>
province	<i>province</i>	poussière	<i>dust</i>
comté	<i>shire or county</i>	océan	<i>ocean</i>
île	<i>island</i>	mer	<i>sea</i>
presqu'île	} <i>peninsula</i>	golfe, <i>m.</i>	<i>gulf</i>
péninsule		baie	<i>bay</i>
chersonèse	<i>cape</i>	rade	<i>road (for ships)</i>
cap	<i>promontory</i>	anse	<i>creek</i>
promontoire, <i>m.</i>	<i>isthmus</i>	canal	<i>channel</i>
isthme	<i>mountain</i>	détroit	<i>strait</i>
montagne	<i>mount</i>	courant	<i>current</i>
mont	<i>hill</i>	marée	<i>tide</i>
colline	<i>summit</i>	flux	<i>flowing</i>
sommet	} <i>declivity</i>	reflux	<i>ebbing</i>
pente, <i>or</i>		vaguel	<i>wave</i>
penchant	<i>eminence</i>	flots, <i>pl. or</i>	<i>billows</i>
hauteur	<i>valley</i>	ondes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>waves</i>
vallée	<i>vale</i>	hâvre, <i>m.</i>	<i>haven</i>
vallon	<i>abyss</i>	port	<i>harbour</i>
abîme, <i>m.</i>	<i>desert</i>	lac	<i>lake</i>
désert	<i>plain</i>	rivière	<i>river</i>
plaine	<i>marsh, or fen</i>	fleuve, <i>m.</i>	<i>great river</i>
marais	} <i>bank (of a</i> <i>river)</i>	embouchure	} <i>mouth of a</i> <i>river</i>
rive		ruisseau	
rivage, <i>m.</i>	<i>shore</i>	débordement	<i>brook</i> <i>overflow</i>
côte	<i>coast</i>	déluge, <i>m.</i>	<i>deluge</i>
rocher*	<i>rock</i>	inondation	<i>inundation</i>
roche*	<i>rock</i>	écluse	} <i>flood-gate</i> <i>sluice</i>
roc*	<i>rock</i>	digue	
écueil*	<i>shoal</i>		<i>dike</i>
banc*	<i>ledge of rocks</i>		

\* These seven words do not convey in French the same idea; the four latter relate to the sea.

étang	<i>pond</i>	nuage, m.	<i>cloud</i>
vivier	<i>fish-pond</i>	nielle	<i>blight</i>
réservoir	<i>bason</i>	humidité	<i>dampness</i>
abreuvoir	<i>horse-pond</i>	serein	<i>mildew</i>
bain	<i>bath</i>	tourbillon	<i>whirlwind</i>
citerne	<i>cistern</i>	orage, m.	<i>storm</i>
fontaine	<i>fountain</i>	tempête	<i>tempest</i>
source	<i>spring</i>	calme, m.	<i>calm</i>
puits	<i>well</i>	éternité	<i>eternity</i>
pompe	<i>pump</i>	temps	<i>time</i>
bateau	<i>boat</i>	siècle, m.	<i>age or century</i>
barque	<i>bark</i>	époque	<i>epoch</i>
bac	<i>ferry boat</i>	période, m.	<i>period</i>
coche d'eau, m.	<i>barge</i>	date	<i>date</i>
gabare	<i>lighter</i>	an, année	<i>year</i>
navire, m.	<i>ship</i>	mois	<i>month</i>
vaisseau	<i>vessel</i>	janvier	<i>january</i>
paquet-bot	<i>packet-boat</i>	février	<i>february</i>
flamme	<i>blaze</i>	mars	<i>march</i>
étincelle	<i>spark</i>	avril	<i>april</i>
chaleur	<i>heat</i>	mai	<i>may</i>
fumée	<i>smoke</i>	juin	<i>june</i>
incendie, m.	<i>conflagration</i>	juillet	<i>july</i>
chauffage, m.	<i>fuel</i>	août	<i>august</i>
charbon	<i>coals</i>	septembre	<i>september</i>
charbon-de-terre	<i>pit-coal</i>	octobre	<i>october</i>
charbon-de-bois		novembre	<i>november</i>
	<i>charcoal</i>	décembre	<i>december</i>
braise	<i>small coal</i>	semaine	<i>week</i>
tourbe	<i>turf</i>	jour	<i>day</i>
mottes, pl.	<i>peat</i>	journée	<i>day</i>
bois	<i>wood</i>	aujourd'hui	<i>to-day</i>
bûche	<i>log of wood</i>	demain	<i>to-morrow</i>
fagot	<i>faggot</i>	hier	<i>yesterday</i>
copeaux, pl.	<i>chips</i>	lundi	<i>monday</i>
cendre	<i>ashes</i>	mardi	<i>tuesday</i>
suie	<i>soot</i>	mercredi	<i>wednesday</i>
feu	<i>fire</i>	jeudi	<i>thursday</i>
atmosphère	<i>atmosphere</i>	vendredi	<i>friday</i>
vent	<i>wind</i>	samedi	<i>saturday</i>
zéphyr	<i>zephyr</i>	dimanche	<i>sunday</i>
vapeur	<i>vapour</i>	heure	<i>hour</i>
lumière	<i>ght</i>	demi-heure	<i>half an hour</i>
ténèbres, pl.	<i>darkness</i>	quart-d'heure	<i>{ quarter of an hour</i>
chaleur	<i>heat</i>		<i>hour</i>
froid	<i>cold</i>	aurore	<i>aurora</i>
nue, nuée	<i>cloud</i>	aube	<i>dawn</i>
		matin	<i>morning</i>

matinée	<i>forenoon</i>	carnaval	<i>carnival</i>
midi	<i>noon</i>	carême, <i>m.</i>	<i>lent</i>
l'après-midi	} <i>the afternoon</i>	mi-carême	<i>midlent</i>
l'après-dinée		pâque	<i>easter</i>
soir	} <i>evening</i>	pentecôte	<i>whit-sunday</i>
soirée		la Saint-Jean	<i>midsummer</i>
crépuscule, <i>m.</i>	<i>twilight</i>	l'avent	<i>advent</i>
nuit	<i>night</i>	noël	<i>christmas</i>
minuit	<i>midnight</i>	fête	<i>festival</i>
minute	<i>minute</i>	équinoxe, <i>m.</i>	<i>equinox</i>
seconde	<i>second</i>	solstice, <i>m.</i>	<i>the solstice</i>
moment	<i>moment</i>	canicule	<i>the dog-days</i>
instant	<i>instant</i>	fenaison	<i>hay-harvest</i>
saison	<i>season</i>	moisson	<i>harvest</i>
printemps	<i>spring</i>	vendage	<i>vintage</i>
été	<i>summer</i>	tonte	<i>shearing-time</i>
automne	<i>autumn</i>	semailles, <i>pl.</i>	<i>sowing-time</i>
hiver	<i>winter</i>	congé	<i>holiday</i>

## OF MAN.

genre-humain	<i>mankind</i>	orphelin	<i>orphan (boy)</i>
homme	<i>man</i>	orpheline	<i>orphan (girl)</i>
femme	<i>woman</i>	héritier	<i>heir</i>
sexe	<i>sex</i>	héritière	<i>heiress</i>
enfant	<i>child</i>	maître	<i>master</i>
garçon	<i>boy</i>	maîtresse	<i>mistress</i>
filles	<i>girl</i>	hôte	<i>landlord</i>
vierge	<i>virgin</i>	hôtesse	<i>landlady</i>
virginité	<i>virginity</i>	domestique	<i>man servant</i>
enfance	<i>infancy</i>	servante	<i>maid servant</i>
jeunesse	<i>youth</i>	voisin	<i>neighbour</i>
adolescence	<i>adolescence</i>	voisine	{ <i>neighbour</i> <i>(female)</i>
virilité	<i>manhood</i>	compagnon	
vieillesse	<i>old age</i>	compagne	{ <i>companion</i> <i>companion</i> <i>(female)</i>
décrépitude	<i>decrepitude</i>	corps	
jeune homme	<i>youth or lad</i>	membre, <i>m.</i>	<i>body</i>
jeune fille	<i>young girl</i>	tronc	<i>member</i>
vieillard	<i>old man</i>	tête	<i>trunk</i>
géant	<i>giant</i>	crâne, <i>m.</i>	<i>head</i>
nain	<i>dwarf</i>	front	<i>scull</i>
pigmée, <i>m.</i>	<i>pigmy</i>	visage, <i>m.</i>	<i>forehead</i>
mari	<i>husband</i>	traits, <i>pl.</i>	<i>face</i>
femme	<i>wife</i>		<i>features</i>
veuf	<i>widower</i>		
veuve	<i>widow</i>		



œil	eye	cerveau	} brain
yeux, <i>pl.</i>	eyes	cervelle	
sourcils, <i>pl.</i>	eye-brows	squelette, <i>m.</i>	skeleton
paupière	eye-lid	cœur	heart
nez	nose	poumon	lungs
narines, <i>pl.</i>	nostrils	foie, <i>m.</i>	liver
bouche	mouth	rate	spleen
lèvres, <i>pl.</i>	lips	estomac	stomach
dent	tooth	entrailles, <i>pl.</i>	entrails
gencives, <i>pl.</i>	gums	sang	blood
mâchoire	jaw-bone	humeurs, <i>pl.</i>	humours
langue	tongue	glande	gland
palais	palate	poil	hair
joues, <i>pl.</i>	cheeks	chair	flesh
fossette	dimple	peau	skin
menton	chin	pores, <i>m. pl.</i>	pores
barbe	beard	nerf	nerve
tempes, <i>pl.</i>	temples	artère	artery
oreille	ear	veine	vein
cheveux, <i>pl.</i>	hair	os	bone
cou	neck	moelle	marrow
gosier	throat	ride	wrinkle
sein	bosom	bouton	pimple
mamelle	breast	santé	health
ventre, <i>m.</i>	belly	tempérament	constitution
ceinture	waist	embonpoint	plumpness
côté	side	maigreur	leanness
hanche	haunch	teint	complexion
cuisses, <i>pl.</i>	thighs	rougeur	redness
genou	knee	pâleur	paleness
jarret	ham	port	countenance
rotule	knee-pan	démarche	gait
jambe	leg	geste, <i>m.</i>	gesture
mollet	calf of the leg	vivacité	liveliness
pied	foot	enjoûment	sprightliness
talon	heel	gaieté	gaicty
orteil	toe	beauté	beauty
bras	arm	charmes, <i>m. pl.</i>	charms
coude, <i>m.</i>	elbow	attraits, <i>pl.</i>	attractions
aisselle	the arm-pit	appas, <i>pl.</i>	beauties
épaule	shoulder	agrément	pleasantness
main	hand	laideur	deformity
poing	fist	taille	shape, size
poignet	wrist	voix	voice
doigt	finger	parole	speech
pouce, <i>m.</i>	thumb	silence, <i>m.</i>	silence
ongle, <i>m.</i>	nail	action	action
côte	rib	mouvement	motion



repos	<i>rest</i>	vertige, m.	<i>dizziness</i>
grimace	<i>grimace</i>	évanouissement	<i>swoning</i>
ris, rire, m.	<i>laughter</i>	défaillance	<i>fainting</i>
souris	} <i>smile</i>	faiblesse	<i>swoon</i>
sourire, m.		démangeaison	<i>itching</i>
humeur	<i>ill temper</i>	pesanteur	<i>heaviness</i>
soupir	<i>sigh</i>	engourdisse-	} <i>numbness</i>
gémissement	<i>groan</i>	ment	
assoupissement	<i>drowsiness</i>	insomnie	<i>want of sleep</i>
sommeil	<i>sleep</i>	coup	<i>blow</i>
songe, m.	<i>vision</i>	contre-coup	<i>counter-blow</i>
rêve, m.	<i>dream</i>	égratignure	<i>scratch</i>
souffle, m.	<i>blast</i>	écorchure	<i>excoriation</i>
haleine	<i>breath</i>	entorse	<i>sprain</i>
respiration	<i>respiration</i>	foulure	<i>strain</i>
éternuement	<i>sneezing</i>	enflure	<i>swelling</i>
vue	<i>sight</i>	tumeur	<i>tumour</i>
ouïe	<i>hearing</i>	meurtrissure	<i>bruise</i>
odorat	<i>smell</i>	contusion	<i>contusion</i>
goût	<i>taste</i>	blessure	<i>wound</i>
toucher	<i>touch</i>	cicatrice	<i>scar</i>
sentiment	<i>sense</i>	ulcère, m.	<i>ulcer</i>
obscurité	<i>darkness</i>	gangrène	<i>mortification</i>
ombre	<i>shade</i>	coupure	<i>cut</i>
son	<i>sound</i>	brûlure	<i>burn</i>
bruit	<i>noise</i>	cor	<i>corn</i>
odeur	<i>smell</i>	durillon	<i>callosity</i>
puanteur	<i>stench</i>	enrouement	<i>hoarseness</i>
saveur	<i>relish</i>	rhume, m.	<i>cold</i>
sensations, pl.	<i>sensations</i>	toux	<i>cough</i>
chatouillement	<i>tickling</i>	coqueluche	<i>hooping-cough</i>
plaisir	<i>pleasure</i>	surdité	<i>deafness</i>
joie	<i>joy</i>	frénésie	<i>frenzy</i>
douleur	<i>pain</i>	folie	<i>lunacy</i>
faim	<i>hunger</i>	rage	<i>madness</i>
soif	<i>thirst</i>	goutte	<i>gout</i>
dégoût	<i>surfeit</i>	convulsions, pl.	<i>convulsive-fits</i>
maladie	<i>disease</i>	vapeurs, pl.	<i>vapours</i>
mal	<i>complaint</i>	fièvre	<i>fever</i>
incommodité	<i>illness</i>	frisson	<i>shivering</i>
infirmité	<i>infirmity</i>	accès	<i>fit</i>
indisposition	<i>disorder</i>	délire, m.	<i>delirium</i>
mal-de-dents	<i>tooth-ache</i>	crise	<i>crisis</i>
mal-de-tête	<i>head-ache</i>	médecine	<i>physic</i>
mal-aux-yeux	} <i>complaint in</i> <i>the eyes</i>	médecin	<i>physician</i>
migraine		chirurgien	<i>surgeon</i>
	<i>megrim</i>	apothicaire	<i>apothecary</i>

accoucheur	<i>man-midwife</i>	régime, <i>m.</i>	<i>diet</i>
sage-femme	<i>midwife</i>	sirop	<i>syrup</i>
consultation	<i>consultation</i>	agonie	<i>dying hour</i>
ordonnance	<i>prescription</i>	mort	<i>death</i>
remède, <i>m.</i>	<i>remedy</i>	cadavre, <i>m.</i>	<i>corpse</i>
drogues, <i>pl.</i>	<i>drugs</i>	vie	<i>life</i>
poudres, <i>pl.</i>	<i>powders</i>	guérison	<i>recovery</i>
pillules, <i>pl.</i>	<i>pills</i>	rechute	<i>relapse</i>
saignée	<i>bleeding</i>	symptôme, <i>m.</i>	<i>symptom</i>
lancette	<i>lancet</i>	convalescence	{ <i>fair way of</i> <i>recovery</i>
gouttes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>drops</i>		
bain	<i>bath</i>		

## OF THE MIND AND ITS FACULTIES.

âme	<i>soul</i>	souvenir	<i>remembrance</i>
esprit	<i>mind</i>	oubli	<i>forgetfulness</i>
génie, <i>m.</i>	<i>genius</i>	stupidité	<i>stupidity</i>
raison	<i>reason</i>	passions, <i>pl.</i>	<i>passions</i>
entendement	<i>understanding</i>	affections, <i>pl.</i>	<i>affections</i>
jugement	<i>judgment</i>	amour	<i>love</i>
sens	<i>sense</i>	amours, <i>f. pl.</i>	<i>amours</i>
pensée	<i>thought</i>	haine	<i>hatred</i>
idée	<i>idea</i>	désir	<i>desire</i>
imagination	<i>imagination</i>	crainte, peur	<i>fear</i>
fantaisie	<i>fancy</i>	appréhension	<i>apprehension</i>
caprice, <i>m.</i>	<i>caprice</i>	espérance	<i>hope</i>
volonté	<i>will</i>	confiance	<i>confidence</i>
liberté	<i>liberty</i>	honte	<i>shame</i>
bel-esprit	<i>wit</i>	timidité	<i>bashfulness</i>
opinion	<i>opinion</i>	hardiesse	<i>boldness</i>
sentiment	<i>sentiment</i>	assurance	<i>confidence</i>
vérité	<i>truth</i>	colère	<i>anger</i>
erreur	<i>error</i>	courroux	<i>wrath</i>
vraisemblance	<i>likelihood</i>	fureur	<i>fury</i>
probabilité	<i>probability</i>	rage	<i>rage</i>
apparence	<i>appearance</i>	ressentiment	<i>resentment</i>
méprise	<i>mistake</i>	vengeance	<i>revenge</i>
bévue	<i>oversight</i>	dépit	<i>spite</i>
science	<i>science</i>	déplaisir	<i>displeasure</i>
connaissance	<i>knowledge</i>	tristesse	<i>sadness</i>
pénétration	<i>penetration</i>	chagrin	<i>grief</i>
sagacité	<i>sagacity</i>	peine	<i>sorrow</i>
disposition	<i>disposition</i>	désespoir	<i>despair</i>
inclination	<i>inclination</i>	doute, <i>m.</i>	<i>doubt</i>
capacité	<i>capacity</i>	soupçon	<i>suspicion</i>
mémoire	<i>memory</i>	envie	<i>envy</i>

jalousie	<i>jealousy</i>	adresse	<i>dexterity</i>
pitié	<i>pity</i>	chasteté	<i>chastity</i>
miséricorde	<i>mercy</i>	innocence	<i>innocence</i>
compassion	<i>compassion</i>	libéralité	<i>liberality</i>
terreur	<i>terror</i>	générosité	<i>generosity</i>
épouvante	<i>fright</i>	reconnoissance	<i>gratitude</i>
indignation	<i>indignation</i>	frugalité	<i>frugality</i>
vertu	<i>virtue</i>	prospérité	<i>prosperity</i>
charité	<i>charity</i>	adversité	<i>adversity</i>
justice	<i>justice</i>	mœurs, <i>pl.</i>	<i>manners</i>
tempérance	<i>temperance</i>	bonheur	<i>happiness</i>
sobriété	<i>sobriety</i>	récompense	<i>reward</i>
force	<i>fortitude</i>	prix	<i>prize</i>
modestie	<i>modesty</i>	présent	<i>present</i>
civilité	<i>civility</i>	don	<i>gift</i>
pudeur	<i>bashfulness</i>	prêt	<i>loan</i>
politesse	<i>politeness</i>	grâce	<i>grace</i>
honnêteté	<i>honesty</i>	réputation	<i>fame</i>
complaisance	<i>complaisance</i>	vice, <i>m.</i>	<i>vice</i>
douceur	<i>sweetness</i>	défaut	<i>defect</i>
bonté	<i>goodness</i>	imperfection	<i>imperfection</i>
amitié	<i>friendship</i>	avarice	<i>avarice</i>
union	<i>union</i>	avidité	<i>greediness</i>
concorde	<i>concord</i>	orgueil	<i>pride</i>
paix	<i>peace</i>	paresse	<i>idleness</i>
tranquillité	<i>tranquillity</i>	fainéantise	<i>slothfulness</i>
patience	<i>patience</i>	lâcheté	<i>sluggishness</i>
prudence	<i>prudence</i>	nonchalance	<i>carelessness</i>
économie	<i>economy</i>	luxe, <i>m.</i>	<i>luxury, pomp</i>
habileté	<i>skill</i>	mollesse	<i>effeminacy</i>
industrie	<i>industry</i>	impureté	<i>lewdness</i>
soin	<i>care</i>	débauche	<i>revel</i>
diligence	<i>diligence</i>	dissolution	<i>dissoluteness</i>
exactitude	<i>exactness</i>	libertinage, <i>m.</i>	<i>libertinism</i>
honneur	<i>honour</i>	désordre, <i>m.</i>	<i>disorderly life</i>
probité	<i>probity</i>	dérèglement	<i>licentiousness</i>
désintéresse- ment	} <i>disinterestedness</i>	mépris	<i>contempt</i>
sagesse		raillerie	<i>jest</i>
constance	<i>constancy</i>	moquerie	<i>mockery</i>
bienveillance	<i>benevolence</i>	médisance	<i>slander</i>
émulation	<i>emulation</i>	calomnie	<i>calumny</i>
faveur	<i>favour</i>	crime, <i>m.</i>	<i>crime</i>
valeur	<i>valour</i>	malice	<i>malice</i>
bravoure	<i>bravery</i>	méchanceté	<i>wickedness</i>
courage, <i>m.</i>	<i>courage</i>	tromperie	<i>deceit</i>
finesse, ruse	<i>cunning</i>	parjure, <i>m.</i>	<i>perjury</i>
		friponnerie	<i>knavery</i>

fourberie	<i>roguery</i>	exil	<i>exile</i>
enchantement	<i>witchcraft</i>	banissement	<i>banishment</i>
injustice	<i>injustice</i>	pusillanimité	<i>pusillanimity</i>
tort	<i>wrong</i>	trahison	<i>treachery</i>
usure	<i>usury</i>	perfidie	<i>perfidiousness</i>
achat	<i>purchase</i>	punition	<i>punishment</i>
vente	<i>sale</i>	châtiment	<i>chastisement</i>
troc	<i>barter</i>	légèreté	<i>levity</i>
gage, <i>m.</i>	<i>pledge</i>	coquetterie	<i>coquetry</i>
dépôt	<i>trust</i>	badinage, <i>m.</i>	<i>sport</i>
contrat	<i>contract</i>	larcin	<i>robbery</i>
marché	<i>bargain</i>	vol	<i>theft</i>
bassesse	<i>meanness</i>	friponnerie	<i>knavish trick</i>
impudence	<i>impudence</i>	tromperie	<i>deceit</i>
effronterie	<i>effrontery</i>	ivrognerie	<i>drunkenness</i>
audace	<i>audaciousness</i>	ivresse	<i>ebriety</i>
témérité	<i>temerity</i>	assassinat	<i>murder</i>
poltronnerie	<i>cowardice</i>	meurtre, <i>m.</i>	<i>manslaughter</i>
opiniâtreté	<i>stubbornness</i>	mensonge, <i>m.</i>	<i>lie</i>
obstination	<i>obstinacy</i>	fausseté	<i>falsehood</i>
cruauté	<i>cruelty</i>	conte, <i>m.</i>	<i>tale</i>
dispute	<i>dispute</i>	serment	<i>oath</i>
querelle	<i>quarrel</i>	malheur	<i>misfortune</i>
brouillerie	<i>broil</i>	folie	<i>folly</i>
babil	<i>babbling</i>	extravagance	<i>madness</i>
caquet	<i>prating</i>	coutume	<i>custom</i>
inconstance	<i>inconstancy</i>	usage, <i>m.</i>	<i>use</i>
ingratitude	<i>ungratefulness</i>	pratique	<i>practice</i>
ambition	<i>ambition</i>	habitude	<i>habit</i>
prodigalité	<i>prodigality</i>	licence	<i>licentiousness</i>
gourmandise	<i>gluttony</i>	excès	<i>excess</i>
impolitesse	<i>rudeness</i>	tour	<i>trick</i>
incivilité	<i>incivility</i>	bagatelles, <i>pl.</i>	<i>trifles</i>
dissention	<i>dissension</i>	faute	<i>fault</i>
impatience	<i>impatience</i>	faiblesse	<i>weakness</i>
imprudence	<i>imprudence</i>	faible, <i>m.</i>	<i>foible</i>
négligence	<i>negligence</i>	affront	<i>affront</i>
malhonnêteté	<i>rudeness</i>	outrage, <i>m.</i>	<i>outrage</i>
déshonneur	<i>disgrace</i>	insulte	<i>insult</i>

## OF MEATS AND DRINKS.

nourriture	<i>nourishment</i>	provisions	<i>provisions</i>
alimens, <i>pl.</i>	<i>food</i>	repas	<i>meal</i>
vivres, <i>m. pl.</i>	<i>victuals</i>	déjeuner	<i>breakfast</i>



diner	dinner	verjus	verjuice
goûter	{ afternoon's lun- cheon	anchois	anchovies
souper	supper	épices, <i>pl.</i>	spices
collation	collation	poivre, <i>m.</i>	pepper
festin	feast	gingembre, <i>m.</i>	ginger
régal	treat	muscade	nutmeg
pain	bread	mâcis	mace
crouûte	crust	girofle, <i>m.</i>	{ cloves
mie	crumb	(clous de)	
farine	flour	cannelle	cinnamon
son	bran	oublies, <i>pl.</i>	wafers
pâte	dough	sucré, <i>m.</i>	sugar
levain	leaven	cassonade	moist sugar
morceau	bit, morsel	dessert	dessert
tranche	slice	fruit	fruit
bouchée	mouthful	pâté	pie
viande	meat	gâteau	cake
bouilli	boiled meat	tourte, tarte	tart
rôt, rôti	roast meat	biscuit	biscuit
bœuf	beef	macaron	macaroon
mouton	mutton	crêpe	pancakes
agneau	lamb	confitures, <i>pl.</i>	sweetmeats
veau	veal	gelée	jelly
porc	pork	marmelade	marmalade
venaison	venison	conserved	conserved
volaille	fowls	tablettes, <i>pl.</i>	lozenges
gibier	game	dragées, <i>pl.</i>	sugar-plums
gigot	a leg of mutton	pralines, <i>pl.</i>	crisp-almonds
andouille	chitterlings	fromage, <i>m.</i>	cheese
saucisse	sausage	beurre, <i>m.</i>	butter
jambon	ham	lait	milk
lard	bacon	crème	cream
moutarde	mustard	œuf	egg
soupe	soup	coque	shell
potage, <i>m.</i>	pottage	blanc	white
bouillon	broth	jaune, <i>m.</i>	yolk
consommé	jelly broth	boisson	drink
ragoût	ragout	liqueur	liquor
fricassée	fricassée	thé	tea
jus	gravy	café	coffee
sauce	sauce	chocolat	chocolate
poisson	fish	limonade	lemonade
salade	sallad	ponche, <i>m.</i>	punch
sel	salt	vin	wine
huile	oil	bière	beer
vinaigre, <i>m.</i>	vinegar	eau-de-vie	brandy
		nectar	nectar



ambroisie	<i>ambrosia</i>	hydromel	<i>mead</i>
cidre, <i>m.</i>	<i>cider</i>	sirop	<i>syrup</i>
poiré	<i>perry</i>	lie	<i>dregs</i>

## OF DRESSING APPAREL, &amp;C.

habillement	<i>dress</i>	guêtres, <i>pl.</i>	<i>gaiters</i>
hardes	<i>clothes</i>	souliers	<i>shoes</i>
habit complet	<i>a suit of clothes</i>	escarpins, <i>pl.</i>	<i>pumps</i>
habit	<i>coat</i>	semelle	<i>sole</i>
veste	<i>waistcoat</i>	bottes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>boots</i>
gilet	<i>under-waistcoat</i>	boucles, <i>pl.</i>	<i>buckles</i>
manches, <i>pl.</i>	<i>sleeves</i>	cuir	<i>leather</i>
poches, <i>pl.</i>	<i>pockets</i>	chapeau	<i>hat</i>
bouton	<i>button</i>	perruque	<i>wig</i>
doublure	<i>lining</i>	jupe	<i>petticoat</i>
couture	<i>seam</i>	jupon	<i>under-petticoat</i>
culotte	<i>breeches</i>	satin	<i>satin</i>
pantalon	<i>pantaloon</i>	taffetas	<i>taffety</i>
gousset	<i>fol</i>	gaze	<i>gauze</i>
drap	<i>cloth</i>	coiffure	<i>head-dress</i>
soie	<i>silk</i>	coiffe	<i>hood</i>
velours	<i>velvet</i>	collier	<i>necklace</i>
serge	<i>serge</i>	boucles	} <i>ear-rings</i>
basin	<i>dimity</i>	d'oreilles, <i>pl.</i>	
flanelle	<i>flannel</i>	gants, <i>pl.</i>	<i>gloves</i>
étouffe	<i>stuff</i>	mitaines, <i>pl.</i>	<i>mittens</i>
manteau	<i>cloak</i>	tablier	<i>apron</i>
surtout	<i>surtout</i>	mules, <i>pl.</i>	} <i>slippers</i>
redingote	<i>riding-coat</i>	pantoufles, <i>pl.</i>	
linge, <i>m.</i>	<i>linen</i>	bague	<i>ring</i>
toile	<i>linen-cloth</i>	bijou	<i>jewel</i>
batiste	<i>cambric</i>	bracelet	<i>bracelet</i>
mousselin	<i>muslin</i>	dentelle	<i>lace</i>
linon	<i>lawn</i>	blonde	<i>blond-lace</i>
chemise	<i>shirt</i>	éventail	<i>fan</i>
jabot	<i>frill</i>	manchon	<i>muff</i>
cravate	<i>cravat</i>	agrafe	<i>clasp</i>
bas, <i>pl.</i>	<i>stockings</i>	épingle	<i>pin</i>
jarretières, <i>pl.</i>	<i>garters</i>	aiguille	<i>needle</i>
laine	<i>wool</i>	étui	<i>case</i>
fil	<i>thread</i>	dé	<i>thimble</i>
coton	<i>cotton</i>	masque, <i>m.</i>	<i>mask</i>
maille	<i>stitch</i>	voile, <i>m.</i>	<i>veil</i>
trou	<i>hole</i>	tabatière	<i>snuff-box</i>
chaussons, <i>pl.</i>	<i>socks</i>	tabac	<i>snuff</i>

tabac (à fumer)	<i>tobacco</i>	conserves, <i>pl.</i>	<i>preserves</i>
bourse	<i>purse</i>	bouquet	<i>nosegay</i>
argent	<i>money</i>	canne	<i>cane</i>
porte-feuille, <i>m.</i>	<i>pocket-book</i>	cordon	<i>string</i>
ciseaux, <i>pl.</i>	<i>scissors</i>	épée	<i>sword</i>
crayon	<i>pencil</i>	montre	<i>watch</i>
mouchoir	<i>handkerchief</i>	boîte	<i>case</i>
lunettes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>spectacles</i>	chaîne	<i>chain</i>
lorgnette	<i>opera-glass</i>	cachet	<i>seal</i>

## OF A HOUSE AND FURNITURE.

maison	<i>house</i>	salle	} <i>parlour</i>
hôtel	{ <i>nobleman's</i> <i>house</i>	salon	
hôtellerie	<i>inn</i>	escalier	<i>stair-case</i>
château	<i>castle</i>	office	<i>pantry</i>
palais	<i>palace</i>	cuisine	<i>kitchen</i>
couronne	<i>crown</i>	garde-man-	} <i>store-room</i>
trône, <i>m.</i>	<i>throne</i>	ger, <i>m.</i>	
sceptre, <i>m.</i>	<i>sceptre</i>	boulangerie	<i>bake-house</i>
aile	<i>wing</i>	brasserie	<i>brew-house</i>
pavillon	<i>pavilion</i>	lingerie	<i>laundry</i>
fondemens, <i>pl.</i>	<i>foundation</i>	écurie	<i>stable</i>
mur, muraille	<i>wall</i>	remise	<i>coach-house</i>
bâtiment	<i>building</i>	puits	<i>well</i>
matériaux, <i>pl.</i>	<i>materials</i>	étage, <i>m.</i>	<i>story</i>
pierre	<i>stone</i>	appartement	<i>apartment</i>
brique	<i>brick</i>	chambre	<i>room</i>
mortier	<i>mortar</i>	antichambre	<i>antichamber</i>
chaux	<i>lime</i>	salle-à-manger	<i>dining-room</i>
plâtre, <i>m.</i>	<i>plaster</i>	salon-de-	} <i>drawing-room</i>
ciment	<i>cement</i>	compagnie	
tuile	<i>tile</i>	cabinet-de-	} <i>dressing-room</i>
ardoise	<i>slate</i>	toilette	
charpente	<i>timber work</i>	chambre-à-	} <i>bed-room</i>
poutre	<i>beam</i>	coucher	
solive	<i>joist</i>	galerie	<i>gallery</i>
échelle	<i>ladder</i>	cabinet	<i>closet</i>
cave	<i>vault</i>	boudoir	<i>lady's closet</i>
cellier	<i>cellar</i>	garde-robe	<i>wardrobe</i>
tonneau	<i>cask</i>	porte	<i>door</i>
futaille	<i>vessel</i>	porte-cochère	<i>gate</i>
boutique	<i>shop</i>	seuil	<i>threshold</i>
atelier	<i>work-shop</i>	jalousie	<i>blinds</i>
magasin	<i>warehouse</i>	gond	<i>hinge</i>
vestibule <i>m.</i>	<i>hall</i>	marteau	<i>knocker</i>
		serrure	<i>lock</i>

clé, <i>or</i> clef	<i>key</i>	amidon	<i>starch</i>
verrou	<i>bolt</i>	balai	<i>broom</i>
fenêtre	<i>window</i>	banc	<i>bench</i>
vitre	<i>glass</i>	escabeau	<i>stool</i>
volet	<i>shutter</i>	plancher	<i>floor</i>
balcon	<i>balcony</i>	parquet	<i>inlaid floor</i>
store, <i>m.</i>	<i>blind</i>	plafond	<i>ceiling</i>
grenier	<i>garret</i>	lambris	<i>wainscot</i>
toit	<i>roof</i>	cloison	<i>partition</i>
gouttière	<i>gutter</i>	tapisserie	<i>hangings</i>
malle	<i>trunk</i>	tapis	<i>carpet</i>
boîte	<i>box</i>	lit	<i>bed</i>
caisse	<i>chest</i>	alcove	<i>alcove</i>
cassette	<i>casket</i>	châlit	<i>bedstead</i>
coffre, <i>m.</i>	<i>coffer</i>	chevet	<i>bolster</i>
logement	<i>lodging</i>	oreiller	<i>pillow</i>
ameublement	<i>furniture</i>	paillasse	<i>straw mattress</i>
cheminée	<i>chimney</i>	matelas	<i>mattress</i>
âtre, <i>m.</i> foyer	<i>hearth</i>	draps, <i>pl.</i>	<i>sheets</i>
soufflet	<i>bellows</i>	couvertures, <i>pl.</i>	<i>bed-clothes</i>
pelle	<i>shovel</i>	courte-pointe	<i>counterpane</i>
pincettes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>tongs</i>	rideau	<i>curtain</i>
fourgon	<i>poker</i>	tringle	<i>curtain-rod</i>
garde-cen-	} <i>fender</i>	anneau	<i>ring</i>
dre, <i>m.</i>		sofa	<i>sofa</i>
coquemar	} <i>boiler, copper</i>	fauteuil	<i>elbow-chair</i>
bouilloire		siège, <i>m.</i>	<i>seat</i>
couvercle, <i>m.</i>	<i>lid</i>	chaise	<i>chair</i>
poêle	<i>frying-pan</i>	coussin	<i>cushion</i>
poêlon	<i>skillet</i>	armoire	<i>press</i>
casserole	<i>saucepan</i>	commode	{ <i>chest of draw-</i>
fourneau	<i>stove</i>	trumeau	
allumette	<i>match</i>	toilette	<i>pier-glass</i>
pierre-à-fusil	<i>flint</i>	miroir	<i>toilet</i>
briquet	<i>steel</i>	peigne, <i>m.</i>	<i>looking-glass</i>
four	<i>oven</i>	pomade	<i>comb</i>
essuie-main	<i>towel</i>	poudre	<i>pomatum</i>
bassinoire	<i>warming-pan</i>	houppé	<i>powder</i>
panier, cor-	} <i>basket</i>	parfum	<i>puff</i>
beille		tableau	<i>perfume</i>
porcelaine	<i>china-ware</i>	dessin	<i>picture</i>
faïence	<i>delft-ware</i>	coloris	<i>drawing</i>
poterie	<i>earthen-ware</i>	portrait	<i>colouring</i>
pot	<i>pot</i>	paysage, <i>m.</i>	<i>portrait</i>
cruche	<i>pitcher</i>	miniature	<i>landscape</i>
lampe	<i>lamp</i>	chandelier	<i>miniature</i>
lanterne	<i>lantern</i>	bougeoir	<i>candlestick</i>
savon	<i>soap</i>		<i>flat candlestick</i>

bobèche	<i>socket</i>	cullier, or cu-	} <i>spoon</i>
chandelle	<i>candle</i>	illière	
bougie	<i>wax-light</i>	salière	<i>salt-cellar</i>
cire	<i>wax</i>	huillier	<i>oil-cruet</i>
mouchettes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>snuffers</i>	moutardier	<i>mustard-pot</i>
porte-mouchettes, <i>m.</i>	} <i>snuffer-pan</i>	aiguière	<i>ewer</i>
éteignoir		coupe, tasse	<i>cup</i>
vergettes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>extinguisher</i>	gobelet	<i>goblet</i>
buffet	<i>brush</i>	verre, <i>m.</i>	<i>glass</i>
cabaret	<i>cup-board</i>	bouteille	<i>bottle</i>
tasse	<i>tea-board</i>	bouchon	<i>cork</i>
soucoupe	<i>cup</i>	tire-bouchon, <i>m.</i>	<i>cork-screw</i>
théière	<i>saucer</i>	carafe	<i>decanter</i>
cafetière	<i>tea-pot</i>	bibliothèque	<i>library</i>
chocolatière	<i>coffee-pot</i>	bureau	<i>bureau</i>
sucrier	<i>chocolate-pot</i>	tiroir	<i>drawer</i>
jatte	<i>sugar-basin</i>	cachet	<i>scal</i>
table	<i>bowl</i>	lettre	<i>letter</i>
nappe	<i>table</i>	enveloppe	<i>cover</i>
serviette	<i>cloth</i>	adresse	<i>direction</i>
assiette	<i>napkin</i>	signature	<i>signature</i>
plat	<i>plate</i>	sonnette	<i>bell</i>
couteau	<i>dish</i>	estampe	<i>print</i>
	<i>knife</i>	médaille	<i>medal</i>

## OF THE CITY.

ville	<i>town, city</i>	frontispice, <i>m.</i>	<i>frontispiece</i>
village, <i>m.</i>	<i>village</i>	portail	<i>portal</i>
bourg	<i>borough</i>	colonne	<i>column</i>
rue	<i>street</i>	pilastre, <i>m.</i>	<i>pilaster</i>
carrefour	<i>cross-way</i>	base	<i>base</i>
passage, <i>m.</i>	<i>vassage</i>	piédestal	<i>pedestal</i>
place	<i>quare</i>	statue	<i>statue</i>
cul-de-sac	} <i>no thorough-fare</i>	arcade	<i>arcade</i>
pyramide		portique, <i>m.</i>	} <i>portico, or piazza</i>
obélisque, <i>m.</i>	<i>pyramid</i>	aqueduc	
pavé	<i>obelisk</i>	dôme, <i>m.</i>	<i>dome</i>
ruisseau	<i>pavement</i>	paroisse	<i>parish</i>
marché	<i>kennel</i>	comédie	<i>play-house</i>
denrées, <i>pl.</i>	<i>market</i>	théâtre, <i>m.</i>	<i>stage</i>
boucherie	<i>provisions</i>	coulisses, <i>pl.</i>	<i>scenery</i>
poissonnerie	<i>meat-market</i>	décorations	<i>decorations</i>
friperie	<i>fish-market</i>	toile	<i>curtain</i>
édifice, <i>m.</i>	<i>old clothes shop</i>	foyer	<i>green-room</i>
façade	<i>edifice</i>	orchestre, <i>m.</i>	<i>orchestra</i>
	<i>front</i>		



parterre, <i>m.</i>	<i>pit</i>	trésorerie	<i>treasury</i>
loge	<i>box</i>	amirauté	<i>admiralty</i>
amphithéâtre, <i>m.</i>	<i>first gallery</i>	arsenal	<i>arsenal</i>
paradis	<i>upper gallery</i>	faubourgs	<i>suburbs</i>
billet	<i>ticket</i>	boulevards, <i>pl.</i>	<i>bulwarks</i>
couvent	<i>convent</i>	remparts, <i>pl.</i>	<i>ramparts</i>
monastère, <i>m.</i>	<i>monastery</i>	barrière	<i>turnpike</i>
cellule	<i>cell</i>	guinguette	<i>tea-garden</i>
hermitage, <i>m.</i>	<i>hermitage</i>	forge	<i>forge</i>
solitude	<i>solitude</i>	verrerie	<i>glass-house</i>
retraite	<i>retirement</i>	fonderie	<i>foundery</i>
université	<i>university</i>	carrosse, <i>m.</i>	<i>coach</i>
collège, <i>m.</i>	<i>college</i>	impériale	<i>roof</i>
école	<i>school</i>	portière	<i>coach door</i>
pension	<i>boarding school</i>	glaces, <i>pl.</i>	<i>windows</i>
parlement	<i>parliament</i>	timon	<i>coach-pole</i>
chambre-haute	<i>house of lords</i>	roue	<i>wheel</i>
ou des pairs		essieu	<i>axle-tree</i>
chambre basse,	<i>house of</i>	équipage, <i>m.</i>	<i>equipage</i>
ou des com-		harnais, <i>pl.</i>	<i>harness</i>
munes	<i>commons</i>	rênes, <i>pl.</i>	<i>reins</i>
prison	<i>prison</i>	bride	<i>bridle</i>
cachot	<i>dungeon</i>	licou	<i>halter</i>
hôpital	<i>hospital</i>	selle	<i>saddle</i>
infirmerie	<i>infirmary</i>	bât	<i>pack-saddle</i>
taverne	<i>tavern</i>	arçon	<i>saddle-bow</i>
cabaret	<i>public-house</i>	sangle	<i>girth</i>
auberge	<i>inn</i>	étriers, <i>pl.</i>	<i>stirrups</i>
café	<i>coffee-house</i>	éperons, <i>pl.</i>	<i>spurs</i>
enseigne	<i>sign</i>	berline	<i>berlin</i>
affiche	<i>bill</i>	cabriolet	<i>gig</i>
pont	<i>bridge</i>	chaise	<i>chaise</i>
arche	<i>arch</i>	fiacre, <i>m.</i>	<i>hackney-coach</i>
pilier	<i>pillar</i>	charrette	<i>cart</i>
bateau	<i>boat</i>	fourgon	<i>wagon</i>
quai	<i>quay, on a river</i>	remise	<i>coach-house</i>
bourse	<i>exchange</i>	rasoir	<i>razor</i>
banque	<i>bank</i>	cuir	<i>strap</i>
agiotage, <i>m.</i>	<i>stock-jobbing</i>	moule	<i>mould</i>
douane	<i>custom-house</i>	machine	<i>machine</i>
poste	<i>general post</i>	moulin	<i>mill</i>
petit-poste	<i>twopenny post</i>		

## OF TRADES, ARTS, PROFESSIONS, &amp;c.

boulangier	<i>baker</i>	relieur	<i>book-binder</i>
perruquier	<i>hair-dresser</i>	libraire, <i>m.</i>	<i>bookseller</i>
forgeron	<i>blacksmith</i>	chaudronnier	<i>brazier</i>



brasseur	<i>brewer</i>	serrurier	<i>locksmith</i>
boucher	<i>butcher</i>	maçon	<i>bricklayer</i>
ébéniste	<i>cabinet-maker</i>	maître d'hôtel	<i>steward</i>
charpentier	<i>carpenter</i>	mercier	<i>mercier</i>
charron	<i>wheel-wright</i>	meunier	<i>miller</i>
sculpteur	<i>carver</i>	peintre	<i>painter</i>
chimiste	<i>chymist</i>	pâtissier	<i>pastry-cook</i>
horloger	<i>clock-maker</i>	paveur	<i>paver</i>
confiseur	<i>confectioner</i>	colporteur	<i>pedlar</i>
carrossier	<i>coach-maker</i>	parfumeur	<i>perfumer</i>
tonnelier	<i>cooper</i>	médecin	<i>physician</i>
corroyeur	<i>currier</i>	pâtrier	<i>plasterer</i>
coutelier	<i>cutler</i>	plombier	<i>plumber</i>
fourbisseur	<i>sword-cutler</i>	potier	<i>potter</i>
teinturier	<i>dyer</i>	imprimeur	<i>printer</i>
distillateur	<i>distiller</i>	sellier	<i>saddler</i>
droguiste	<i>druggist</i>	lingère	<i>sempstress</i>
graveur	<i>engraver</i>	couturière	<i>mantua-maker</i>
maréchal	<i>farrier</i>	tailleur	<i>tailor</i>
poissonnier	<i>fishmonger</i>	cordonnier	<i>shoe-maker</i>
fondeur	<i>founder</i>	pelletier	<i>skinner</i>
fruitier	<i>fruiterer</i>	forgeron	<i>smith</i>
fourreur	<i>furrier</i>	chirurgien	<i>surgeon</i>
jardinier	<i>gardener</i>	apothicaire	<i>apothecary</i>
doreur	<i>gilder</i>	arpenteur	<i>surveyor</i>
verrier	<i>glass-maker</i>	tanneur	<i>tanner</i>
vitrier	<i>glazier</i>	tourneur	<i>turner</i>
gantier	<i>glover</i>	entrepreneur	<i>undertaker</i>
orfèvre	<i>goldsmith</i>	tapissier	<i>upholsterer</i>
joaillier	{ <i>jeweller</i>	horloger	<i>watch-maker</i>
bijoutier		tisserand	<i>weaver</i>
épiciier	<i>grocer</i>	perruquier	<i>wig-maker</i>
armurier	<i>armourer</i>	ouvrage	<i>work</i>
chapelier	<i>hatter</i>	ouvrier	<i>work-man</i>
aubergiste	<i>innkeeper</i>	ouvrière	<i>work-woman</i>
menuisier	<i>joiner</i>	manœuvre	<i>labourer</i>

## OF THE COUNTRY, HUSBANDRY, FLOWERS, TREES, &amp;c.

campagne	<i>country</i>	hameau	<i>hamlet</i>
chemin	<i>way</i>	enclos	<i>close</i>
sentier	<i>foot-way</i>	château	<i>castle</i>
boue	<i>mud</i>	terre	<i>estate</i>
fange	<i>mire</i>	cour	<i>yard</i>
poussière	<i>dust</i>	basse-cour	<i>poultry-yard</i>
bourbier	<i>slough</i>	colombier	<i>pigeon-house</i>
ornière	<i>cart-rut</i>	laiterie	<i>dairy</i>

écurie	<i>stable</i>	jardin	<i>garden</i>
fruiterie	<i>fruit-loft</i>	jardinage, m.	<i>gardening</i>

## OF HERBS AND PLANTS.

aloès	<i>aloe</i>	moutarde	<i>mustard</i>
angélique	<i>angelica</i>	capucine	<i>nasturtium</i>
artichaut	<i>artichoke</i>	ortie	<i>nettle</i>
asperge	<i>asparagus</i>	oignon	<i>onion</i>
mélisse	<i>balm</i>	persil	<i>parsley</i>
basilic	<i>basil</i>	panais	<i>parsnip</i>
fève	<i>bean</i>	pois	<i>peas</i>
haricot	<i>french-bean</i>	pariétaire	<i>pellitory</i>
poirée	<i>beet</i>	plante	<i>plant</i>
betterave	<i>beet-root</i>	plantain	<i>plantain</i>
bourrache	<i>borage</i>	pavot	<i>poppy</i>
bardane	<i>burdock</i>	pomme-de-terre	<i>potatoe</i>
primprenelle	<i>burnet</i>	courge	<i>pumpkin</i>
chou	<i>cabbage</i>	pourpier	<i>purslain</i>
carotte	<i>carrot</i>	rave	<i>radish</i>
celeri	<i>celery</i>	radis	<i>Spanish radish</i>
cerfeuil	<i>chervil</i>	roseau	<i>reed</i>
choux-fleurs, pl.	<i>cauliflowers</i>	rue	<i>rue</i>
mâches, pl.	<i>corn-sallad</i>	jonc	<i>rush</i>
cresson	<i>cresses</i>	rhubarbe	<i>rhubarb</i>
concombre, m.	<i>cucumber</i>	safran	<i>saffron</i>
dent-de-lion	<i>dandelion</i>	sauge	<i>sage</i>
patience	<i>dock</i>	sarette	<i>savery</i>
chicorée	<i>endive</i>	ciboule	<i>scallion</i>
fenouil	<i>fennel</i>	échalote	<i>shallot</i>
fougère	<i>fern</i>	oseille	<i>sorrel</i>
ail	<i>garlic</i>	véronique	<i>speedwell</i>
calebasse	<i>gourd</i>	épinards, pl.	<i>spinage</i>
ciguë	<i>hemlock</i>	tanaisie	<i>tansy</i>
herbe	<i>herb</i>	ivraie	<i>tare</i>
raifort	<i>horse-radish</i>	estragon	<i>stragon</i>
joubarbe	<i>house-leek</i>	chardon	<i>thistle</i>
lierre, m.	<i>ivy</i>	thym	<i>thyme</i>
poireau	<i>leek</i>	serpolet	<i>wild thyme</i>
laitue	<i>lettuce</i>	trèfle, m.	<i>trefoil</i>
réglisse	<i>licorice</i>	navet	<i>turnip</i>
mauve	<i>mallows</i>	valériane	<i>valerian</i>
guimauve	<i>marsh-mallows</i>	végétaux, pl.	<i>vegetables</i>
marjolaine	<i>marjoram</i>	légumes, m. pl.	{ <i>vegetables,</i> <i>greens</i>
réséda	<i>mignonette</i>		
menthe	<i>mint</i>	véroveine	<i>vervain</i>
gui	<i>misletoe</i>	absynthe	<i>wormwood</i>
mousse	<i>moss</i>	mille-feuille	<i>yarrow</i>

## FLOWERS.

fleuriste	<i>florist</i>	chèvre-feuille	} <i>honey-suckle</i>
parterre	<i>flower garden</i>	m.	
fleur	<i>flower</i>	seringat	<i>seringa</i>
iris	<i>crocus</i>	lilas	<i>lilac</i>
primevère	<i>cowslip</i>	souci	<i>marigold</i>
narcisse, m.	<i>narcissus</i>	amaranthe	<i>amaranth</i>
jacinthe	<i>hyacinth</i>	pavot	<i>poppy</i>
tulipe	<i>tulip</i>	coquelicot	} <i>wild-poppy</i>
violette	<i>violet</i>	ponceau	
pensée	<i>pansy</i>	bluet, barbeau	<i>blue-bell</i>
marguérite	<i>daisy</i>	tournesol	<i>sun-flower</i>
impériale	<i>turk's cap</i>	camomille	<i>camomile</i>
martagon	<i>mountain-lily</i>	belle-de-nuit	} <i>great night-shade</i>
lis	<i>lily</i>	éternelle	
muguet	<i>may-lily</i>	immortelle	} <i>cassidony</i>
oreille-d'ours	<i>auricula</i>	balsamine	
anémone	<i>anemone</i>	ancolie	<i>columbine</i>
renoncule	<i>ranunculus</i>	passe-rose	<i>hollyhock</i>
jonquille	<i>jonquil</i>	hépatique	<i>hepatica</i>
giroflée	<i>stock-gilliflower</i>	pied-d'alouette	<i>lark-spur</i>
œillet	<i>pink</i>	pivoine	<i>piony</i>
campanule	} <i>bell-flower</i>	scabieuse	<i>scabious</i>
gâtelée		julienne	<i>rocket</i>
rose	<i>rose</i>	planche	<i>bed</i>
jasmin	<i>jasmine</i>	plate-bande	<i>flower-border</i>
tubéreuse	<i>tuberoze</i>		

## OF TREES AND SHRUBS.

arbre, m.	<i>tree</i>	pommier	<i>apple-tree</i>
arbrisseau	<i>shrub</i>	poirier	<i>pear-tree</i>
écorce	<i>bark</i>	prunier	<i>plumb-tree</i>
branche	<i>branch</i>	arbousier	<i>arbutus</i>
feuille	<i>leaf</i>	frêne	<i>ash-tree</i>
graine	<i>seed</i>	tremble	<i>aspen</i>
rejeton	<i>sucker</i>	hêtre	<i>beech-tree</i>
abricotier	<i>apricot-tree</i>	bouleau	<i>birch-tree</i>
cerisier	<i>cherry-tree</i>	buis	<i>box</i>
châtaignier	<i>chestnut-tree</i>	genêt	<i>broom</i>
citronnier	<i>lemon-tree</i>	sureau	<i>elder-tree</i>
coignassier	<i>quince-tree</i>	orme	<i>elm</i>
figuier	<i>fig-tree</i>	sapin	<i>fir-tree</i>
noyer	<i>walnut-tree</i>	coudrier	<i>hazel-tree</i>
oranger	<i>orange-tree</i>	houx	<i>holly</i>
pêcher	<i>peach-tree</i>	lilas	<i>lilac</i>

tilleul	<i>lime-tree</i>	épine	<i>thorn</i>
myrte	<i>myrtle-tree</i>	buisson	<i>thorn-bush</i>
chêne	<i>oak</i>	aubépine	<i>white-thorn</i>
osier	<i>osier</i>	vigne	<i>vine</i>
romarin	<i>rosemary</i>	saule	<i>willow-tree</i>
églantier	<i>sweet briar</i>	if	<i>yew-tree</i>

## FRUITS.

amande	<i>almond</i>	melon	<i>melon</i>
pomme	<i>apple</i>	mûre	<i>mulberry</i>
abricot	<i>apricot</i>	brugnon	<i>nectarine</i>
cerise	<i>cherry</i>	noisette	<i>nut</i>
guigne	<i>black-heart</i>	orange	<i>orange</i>
	<i>cherry</i>	pêche	<i>peach</i>
châtaigne	<i>chestnut</i>	poire	<i>pear</i>
marron	<i>horse chestnut</i>	citrouille	<i>pumpion</i>
groseilles, <i>pl.</i>	<i>currants</i>	coin	<i>quince</i>
groseille	<i>gooseberry</i>	framboise	<i>raspberry</i>
figue	<i>fig</i>	fraise	<i>strawberry</i>
aveline	<i>filbert</i>	noix	<i>walnut</i>
raisin	<i>grapes</i>	épine-vinerte	<i>barberries</i>
prune	<i>plum</i>	grenade	<i>pomegranate</i>
reine-claude	<i>green-gage</i>	olive	<i>olive</i>
citron	<i>lemon</i>	cerneaux	<i>kernels of</i>
ananas	<i>pine-apple</i>		<i>walnuts</i>
nêfle	<i>medlar</i>	raisins-secs	<i>raisins</i>

## PROMISCUOUS WORDS.

grange	<i>barn</i>	commune	<i>common</i>
hutte	<i>hut</i>	plaine	<i>plain</i>
chaumière	<i>thatched-house</i>	garenne	<i>warren</i>
seigneurie	<i>manor</i>	fondrière	<i>bog</i>
dime	<i>tithe</i>	marais	<i>marsh</i>
métairie	<i>farm</i>	plate-bande	<i>border</i>
sillon	<i>ridge</i>	serre	<i>green-house</i>
prés, prairie	<i>meadow</i>	serre-chaude	<i>hot-house</i>
arpent	<i>acre</i>	boulingrin	<i>bowling-green</i>
fossé	<i>ditch</i>	berceau	<i>bower</i>
champ	<i>field</i>	bosquet	<i>grove</i>
pâturage, <i>m.</i>	<i>pasture-ground</i>	grotte	<i>grotto</i>
terroir	<i>soil</i>	vignoble, <i>m.</i>	<i>vineyard</i>
parc	<i>park</i>	pépinière	<i>nursery</i>
haie	<i>hedge</i>	taillis	<i>coppice</i>
bruyère	<i>heath</i>	hallier	<i>thicket</i>
dunes	<i>downs</i>	paysage, <i>m.</i>	<i>landscape</i>
lande	<i>waste-land</i>	perspective	<i>prospect</i>



vue	<i>view</i>	millet	<i>millet</i>
cascade	<i>cascade</i>	lin	<i>flax</i>
canal	<i>canal</i>	chanvre, m.	<i>hemp</i>
agriculture	<i>agriculture</i>	chènevis	<i>hemp-seed</i>
labourage, m.	<i>tillage</i>	épi	<i>ear (of corn)</i>
bétail	<i>cattle</i>	gerbe	<i>sheaf (of corn)</i>
fumier	<i>dung</i>	tige	<i>stalk</i>
terreau	<i>mould</i>	tuyau	<i>blade</i>
récolte	<i>crop</i>	paille	<i>straw</i>
moisson	<i>harvest</i>	chaume, m.	<i>stubble</i>
vendange	<i>vintage</i>	foin	<i>hay</i>
houblon	<i>hops</i>	fourrage, m.	<i>fodder</i>
grain	<i>corn</i>	fermier	<i>farmer</i>
blé	<i>wheat</i>	paysan	<i>peasant</i>
orge	<i>barley</i>	laboureur	<i>ploughman</i>
avoine	<i>oats</i>	moissonneur	<i>reaper</i>
riz	<i>rice</i>	faucheur	<i>mower</i>
seigle, m.	<i>rye</i>	berger	<i>shepherd</i>

## OF QUADRUPEDES.

bête	<i>beast</i>	bouvillon	<i>bullock</i>
animal	<i>animal</i>	renne, m.	<i>rein-deer</i>
animal domes- tique	{ <i>tame beast</i>	brebis	<i>ewe</i>
bête-de-somme		mouton	<i>wether</i>
monture	{ <i>beast of burden</i> <i>beast for the</i> <i>saddle</i>	bélier	<i>ram</i>
cheval	<i>horse</i>	agneau	<i>lamb</i>
cavale	<i>mare</i>	chèvre	<i>she-goat</i>
jument	<i>mare</i>	bouc	<i>he-goat</i>
étalon	<i>stallion</i>	chevreau	<i>kid</i>
poulain	<i>colt</i>	cochon	<i>hog</i>
pouliche	<i>filly</i>	porc	<i>pig</i>
bidet	<i>poney</i>	pourceau	<i>pig</i>
âne	<i>ass</i>	truie	<i>sow</i>
ânesse	<i>milk-ass</i>	cochon-de-lait	<i>sucking pig</i>
ânon	<i>young ass</i>	cochon-d'Inde	<i>guinea pig</i>
mulet	<i>mule</i>	verrat	<i>boar</i>
mule	<i>she-mule</i>	sanglier	<i>wild boar</i>
bête-à-cornes	<i>horned beast</i>	laie	<i>wild sow</i>
bœuf	<i>ox</i>	marcassin	<i>young wild boar</i>
buffle, m.	<i>buffalo</i>	bête-fauve	<i>deer</i>
taureau	<i>bull</i>	cerf	<i>stag</i>
vache	<i>cow</i>	biche	<i>hind</i>
génisse	<i>heifer</i>	faon	<i>fawn</i>
veau	<i>calf</i>	daim	<i>fallow-deer</i>
		daim-mâle	<i>buck</i>
		daim-femelle	<i>doe</i>

chevreuil	<i>roe-buck</i>	lice	<i>kound-bitch</i>
chevrette	<i>roe</i>	lévrier	<i>greyhound</i>
chamois	<i>chamois</i>	levrette	<i>greyhound bitch</i>
lion	<i>lion</i>	dogue	<i>bull dog</i>
lionne	<i>lioness</i>	doguin	<i>whelp</i>
lionceau	<i>lion's whelp</i>	mâtin	<i>mastiff</i>
tigre	<i>tiger</i>	limier	<i>blood-hound</i>
tigresse	<i>tigress</i>	bichon	<i>lap-dog</i>
ours	<i>bear</i>	épagneul	<i>spaniel</i>
ourson	<i>bear's cub</i>	basset	<i>terrier</i>
zèbre, <i>m.</i>	<i>zebra</i>	barbet	<i>shagged-dog</i>
giraffe	<i>giraffa</i>	chien-d'arrêt	<i>pointer</i>
léopard	<i>leopard</i>	meute de	} <i>pack of hounds</i>
caméléopard	<i>camelopard</i>	chiens	
rhinocéros	<i>rhinoceros</i>	chat, matou	<i>cat, tom-cat</i>
hippopotame, <i>m.</i>	<i>river-horse</i>	chatte	<i>cat, puss</i>
éléphant	<i>elephant</i>	chaton	<i>kitten</i>
chameau	<i>camel</i>	minon	<i>puss</i>
dromadaire, <i>m.</i>	<i>dromedary</i>	minet, minette	<i>young kitten</i>
lama	<i>lama</i>	singe, <i>m.</i>	<i>monkey</i>
buffle, <i>m.</i>	<i>buffalo</i>	guenon	<i>ape</i>
hyène	<i>hyena</i>	magot, babouin	<i>baboon</i>
panthère	<i>panther</i>	gazelle	<i>antelope</i>
once	<i>ounce</i>	belette	<i>weasel</i>
licorne	<i>unicorn</i>	poutois	<i>pole-cat</i>
élan	<i>elk</i>	fouine	<i>pole-cat</i>
loup	<i>wolf</i>	genette	<i>wild-cat</i>
louve	<i>she-wolf</i>	musc	<i>musk-cat</i>
louveteau	<i>wolf's cub</i>	loir	<i>dormouse</i>
lynx	<i>lynx</i>	marmote	<i>marmot</i>
renard	<i>fox</i>	taupe	<i>mole</i>
taisson	<i>brock</i>	rat	<i>rat</i>
blaireau	<i>badger</i>	souris	<i>mouse</i>
castor	<i>beaver</i>	tortue	<i>tortoise</i>
hermine	<i>ermine</i>	bétail, bestiaux	<i>cattle</i>
marte, zibeline	<i>marten, sable</i>	troupeau	<i>flock, herd</i>
écureuil	<i>squirrel</i>	pâtre, berger	<i>shepherd</i>
'hérisson	<i>hedge-hog</i>	bergère	<i>shepherdess</i>
porc-épic	<i>porcupine</i>	vacher, bouvier	<i>cow-herd</i>
loutre	<i>otter</i>	porcher	<i>swine-herd</i>
raton	<i>raccoon</i>	chasse	<i>hunting</i>
furet	<i>ferret</i>	chasseur	<i>hunter</i>
lièvre	<i>hare</i>	braconnier	<i>poacher</i>
'hase	<i>doe-hare</i>	gibier, venaison	<i>game</i>
levraut	<i>leveret</i>	fusil	<i>gun</i>
lapin	<i>rabbit</i>	gibecière	<i>pouch</i>
lapine	<i>doe-rabbit</i>	tiré	<i>shooting</i>
chien	<i>dog</i>	tireur	<i>shooter</i>
chienne	<i>bitch</i>	garde-chasse	<i>gamekeeper</i>

## OF BIRDS.

oiseau	<i>bird</i>	mésange	<i>tit</i>
oiselet, oisillon	<i>little bird</i>	pluvier	<i>plover</i>
volaille	<i>fowl</i>	roitelet	<i>wren</i>
coq	<i>cock</i>	vanneau	<i>lapwing</i>
poule	<i>hen</i>	butor	<i>bittern</i>
poulet	<i>chicken</i>	bec-figue, m.	<i>beccafico</i>
poussin	<i>young chicken</i>	étourneau	<i>starling</i>
cochet	<i>cockerel</i>	sançonnet	<i>starling</i>
poularde	<i>pullet</i>	bruant	<i>yellow-hammer</i>
chapon	<i>capen</i>	coucou	<i>cuckoo</i>
coq-d'Inde,	{ <i>turkey-cock</i>	freux, grolle	<i>rook</i>
dindon		corbeau	<i>raven</i>
dinde	<i>turkey-hen</i>	corneille	<i>crow</i>
dindonneau	<i>young turkey</i>	hibou	<i>owl</i>
oie	<i>goose</i>	chouette	<i>screech-owl</i>
jar	<i>gander</i>	buse	<i>buzzard</i>
oison	<i>gosling</i>	choucas	<i>chough</i>
canard	<i>drake</i>	aigle	<i>eagle</i>
cane	<i>duck</i>	aiglon	<i>eaglet</i>
caneton, ca-	{ <i>duckling</i>	épervier	<i>sparrow-hawk</i>
nette		émouchet	<i>musket-hawk</i>
pigeon	<i>pigeon</i>	milan	<i>kite</i>
colombe	<i>dove</i>	faucon	<i>falcon</i>
serin, canari	<i>canary-bird</i>	cormoran	<i>cormorant</i>
perroquet	<i>parrot</i>	plongeon	<i>diver</i>
perruche	<i>paroquet</i>	heron	<i>heron</i>
moineau,	{ <i>sparrow</i>	cigogne	<i>stork</i>
passereau		outarde	<i>buskard</i>
hirondelle	<i>swallow</i>	pélican	<i>pelican</i>
martinet	<i>martin</i>	autour	<i>gos-hawk</i>
rossignol	<i>nightingale</i>	vautour	<i>vulture</i>
chardonneret	<i>goldfinch</i>	griffon	<i>griffin</i>
pinson	<i>chaffinch</i>	huppe	<i>lapwing</i>
verdier	<i>greenfinch</i>	mouette	<i>gull</i>
bouvreuil	<i>bullfinch</i>	perdrix	<i>partridge</i>
linot, linote	<i>linnet</i>	bartavelle	{ <i>large red part- ridge</i>
rouge-gorge, m.	<i>redbreast, robin</i>	perdreau	
merle, m.	<i>blackbird</i>	caille	<i>young partridge</i>
grive	<i>thrush</i>	cailliteau	<i>quail</i>
geai	<i>jay</i>	faisan	<i>young quail</i>
pie	<i>magpie</i>	faisandeau	<i>pheasant</i>
alouette	<i>lark</i>	bécasse	<i>young pheasant</i>
bergeronnette	<i>wagtail</i>	bécassine	<i>woodcock</i>
alcyon, ou mar-	{ <i>king-fisher</i>	ortolan	<i>snipe</i>
tin-pêcheur		tourterelle	<i>ortolan</i>
pivert	<i>woodpecker</i>		<i>turtle-dove</i>

gélinotte	<i>wood-hen</i>	autruche	<i>ostrich</i>
francolin	<i>heath-cock</i>	pintade	<i>pintado</i>
ramier	<i>wood-pigeon</i>	fou-de-bassan	<i>gannet</i>
macreuse	<i>sea-duck</i>	pingoin	<i>razor-bill</i>
sarcelle	<i>teal</i>	chauvre-souris	<i>bat</i>
grue	<i>crane</i>	chasse-aux-oiseaux	} <i>fowling</i>
courlis	<i>curlew</i>		
foulque	{ <i>coot, moorcock,</i>	appeau	<i>bird-call</i>
	{ <i>or hen</i>	gluaux	<i>lime twigs</i>
poule-d'eau	<i>moor-hen</i>	trébuchet	<i>bird-trap</i>
paon	<i>peacock</i>	filets	<i>nets</i>
paonne	<i>pea-hen</i>	oiseleur	<i>bird-catcher</i>
paonneau	<i>young peacock</i>	oiselier	<i>bird-seller</i>
éigne, m.	<i>swan</i>	volière	<i>aviary</i>

## OF FISHES.

poisson	<i>fish</i>	homard, lan-	} <i>lobster</i>
esturgeon	<i>sturgeon</i>	gousse	
turbot	<i>turbot</i>	écrevisse-de-	
saumon	<i>salmon</i>	mer	
rouget	<i>roach</i>	écrevisse	<i>crawfish</i>
brochet	<i>pike</i>	crabe, m.	<i>crab</i>
carpe	<i>carp</i>	crevette	<i>prawn</i>
truite	<i>trout</i>	chevrette	<i>shrimp</i>
perche	<i>perch</i>	anguille	<i>eel</i>
cabillaud	<i>fresh cod</i>	anchois	<i>anchovy</i>
morue	<i>stock-fish</i>	goujon	<i>gudgeon</i>
raie	<i>skate</i>	véron	<i>minnow</i>
tanche	<i>tench</i>	lotte, barbotte	<i>eel-pout</i>
éperlan	<i>smelt</i>	loche	} <i>loach, ground-</i>
maquereau	<i>mackerel</i>		
surmulet	<i>mullet</i>	morue salée	<i>salt-fish</i>
carrelet	<i>flounder</i>	barbue	<i>dab</i>
barbeau	<i>barbel</i>	marsoin	} <i>sea-hog, por-</i>
alose	<i>shad</i>		
sole	<i>sole</i>	espadon	<i>saw-fish</i>
sardine	<i>sprat</i>	porcelaine	<i>sea-snail</i>
thon	<i>tunny</i>	tortue	<i>tortoise</i>
pile	<i>plaice</i>	huître	<i>oyster</i>
congre, m.	<i>conger</i>	pétoncle	<i>cockle</i>
merlan	<i>whiting</i>	moule	<i>muscle</i>
merluce	<i>haddock</i>	baleine	<i>whale</i>
hareng	<i>herring</i>	cachalot	<i>cachalot</i>
sèche	<i>cuttle fish</i>	requin	<i>shark</i>
limande	<i>burt, bret-fish</i>	dauphin	<i>dolphin</i>
lamproie	<i>lamprey</i>	chien-marin	<i>sea-dog</i>



loup-marin	<i>sea-wolf</i>	nageoires	<i>fins</i>
hérisson-de-mer	<i>sea-urchin</i>	écailles	<i>scales</i>
frai	<i>fry</i>	coquilles	<i>shells</i>
fretin	<i>young fish</i>	arrêtes	<i>bones</i>
laite	<i>soft roe</i>	pincés, braques	<i>claws</i>
œufs	<i>spawn, hard</i>	appât, amorce	<i>bait</i>
museau	<i>roe</i>	pêcheur	<i>fisherman</i>
ouies	<i>snout</i>	pêche	<i>fishery</i>
	<i>gills</i>	pêche à-la-ligne	<i>angling</i>

## OF REPTILES AND INSECTS.

grenouille	<i>frog</i>	pou	<i>louse</i>
serpent	<i>serpent</i>	lente	<i>nit</i>
couleuvre	<i>adder</i>	puce	<i>flea</i>
vipère	<i>viper</i>	punaise	<i>bug</i>
scorpion	<i>scorpion</i>	chenille	<i>caterpillar</i>
aspic	<i>aspick</i>	papillon	<i>butterfly</i>
basilic	<i>basilisk</i>	mouche	<i>fly</i>
dragon	<i>dragon</i>	abeille	<i>bee</i>
tarentule	<i>tarantula</i>	frelon	<i>hornet</i>
crapaud	<i>toad</i>	bourdon	<i>drone</i>
lézard	<i>lizard</i>	guêpe	<i>wasp</i>
sang-sue	<i>leech</i>	taon	<i>ox-fly</i>
limace	<i>slug</i>	cousin	<i>gnat</i>
ver	<i>worm</i>	cantharide	<i>Spanish-fly</i>
ver-luisant	<i>glow-worm</i>	hanneton	<i>cockchafer</i>
ver-coquin	<i>vine-grub</i>	sauterelle	<i>grasshopper</i>
ver-à-soie	<i>silk-worm</i>	cigale	<i>balm-cricket</i>
escargot	<i>snail</i>	araignée	<i>spider</i>
escarbot	<i>beetle</i>	toile-d'araignée	<i>cobweb</i>
grillon	<i>cricket</i>	essaim-d'abeilles	<i>swarm of bees</i>
perce-oreille, m.	<i>ear-wig</i>	miel	<i>honey</i>
teigne	<i>moth</i>	cire	<i>wax</i>
ciron	<i>hand-worm</i>	rayon-de-miel	<i>honeycomb</i>
fourmi	<i>ant</i>	ruche	<i>hive</i>
charançon	<i>weevil</i>	fourmilière	<i>ant-hill</i>
cloporte, m.	<i>wood-louse</i>		
tique	<i>tick</i>		

## OF METALS, &amp;c.

or	<i>gold</i>	platine	<i>platina</i>
argent	<i>silver</i>	vermeil	<i>silver-gilt</i>

cuivre	<i>copper</i>	soufre	<i>sulphur</i>
airain	<i>brass</i>	nitre	<i>nitre</i>
laiton	<i>latten-wire</i>	saltpêtre	<i>saltpetre</i>
bronze	<i>bronze</i>	bitume	<i>bitumen</i>
similor	<i>pinchbeck</i>	antimoine	<i>antimony</i>
fer	<i>iron</i>	arsenic	<i>arsenic</i>
fil-d'archal	<i>brass wire</i>	alum	<i>alum</i>
acier	<i>steel</i>	couperose, <i>f</i>	<i>copperas</i>
fer-blanc	<i>iron-tinned</i>	vitriol	<i>vitriol</i>
étain	<i>tin, pewter</i>	carmin	<i>carmine</i>
plomb	<i>lead</i>	pastel	<i>pastel</i>
mercure	<i>mercury</i>	ocre, <i>f</i> .	<i>ochre</i>
vif-argent	<i>quicksilver</i>	vermillon	<i>red-lead</i>

## OF COLOURS.

blanc	<i>white</i>	rouge	<i>red</i>
noir	<i>black</i>	jaune	<i>yellow</i>
bleu	<i>blue</i>	brun	<i>brown</i>
vert	<i>green</i>	pourpre	<i>purple</i>
gris	<i>grey</i>	écarlate	<i>scarlet</i>
orangé	<i>orange colour</i>	indigo	<i>indigo</i>

## OF PRECIOUS STONES.

diamant	<i>diamond</i>	améthyste	<i>amethyst</i>
topaze	<i>topaz</i>	cornaline	<i>cornelian</i>
émeraude	<i>emerald</i>	onyx	<i>onyx</i>
saphir	<i>sapphire</i>	agate	<i>agate</i>
escarboucle	<i>carbuncle</i>	corail	<i>coral</i>
rubis	<i>ruby</i>	perle	<i>pearl</i>

## OF THE PRINCIPAL COUNTRIES.

France	<i>France</i>	Hollande	<i>Holland</i>
Italie	<i>Italy</i>	les Pays-Bas	<i>the Netherlands</i>
Espagne	<i>Spain</i>	Angleterre	<i>England</i>
Portugal	<i>Portugal</i>	Ecosse	<i>Scotland</i>
Turquie	<i>Turkey</i>	Irlande	<i>Ireland</i>
Allemagne	<i>Germany</i>	Russie	<i>Russia</i>
Suisse	<i>Switzerland</i>	Danemarck	<i>Denmark</i>
Prusse	<i>Prussia</i>	Suède	<i>Sweden</i>
Pologne	<i>Poland</i>	Norvège	<i>Norway</i>
Bohême	<i>Bohemia</i>	Tartarie	<i>Tartary</i>
Hongrie	<i>Hungary</i>	Arabie	<i>Arabia</i>

Perse	<i>Persia</i>	Monoémugi	<i>Monoemugi</i>
Inde	<i>India</i>	Caffrerie	<i>Caffraria</i>
Chine	<i>China</i>	Abyssinie	<i>Abyssinia</i>
Mogol	<i>Mogul</i>	Canada	<i>Canada</i>
Bengale	<i>Bengal</i>	Pensylvanie	<i>Pennsylvania</i>
Malabar	<i>Malabar</i>	Maryland	<i>Maryland</i>
Japon	<i>Japan</i>	Virginie	<i>Virginia</i>
Barbarie	<i>Barbary</i>	Caroline	<i>Carolina</i>
Egypte	<i>Egypt</i>	Géorgie	<i>Georgia</i>
Biledulgerid	<i>Biledulgerid</i>	Pérou	<i>Peru</i>
Zaara	<i>Zaara</i>	Paraguay	<i>Paraguay</i>
Nigritie	<i>Nigritia</i>	Chili	<i>Chili</i>
Guinée	<i>Guinea</i>	Brésil	<i>Brazil</i>
Ethiopie	<i>Ethiopia</i>	Guiane	<i>Guiana</i>
Zanguebar	<i>Zanguebar</i>	St. Domingue	<i>St. Domingo</i>
Monomotapa	<i>Monomotapa</i>	Jamaïque	<i>Jamaica</i>

## INTRODUCTION TO THE EXERCISES.

THE learner is to render the English definite article

the by	<i>le</i> before a noun masculine	} in the singular.
	<i>la</i> before a noun feminine	
	<i>l'</i> before a noun masculine or feminine beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute	
	<i>les</i> before nouns of either gender in the plural and the indefinite.	
a or <i>an</i> by	<i>un</i> before a noun masculine singular.	
	<i>une</i> before a noun feminine singular.	

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Le livre</i>	<i>the book</i>	<i>les plantes</i>	<i>the plants</i>
<i>la rue</i>	<i>the street</i>	<i>un homme</i>	<i>a man</i>
<i>l'aine</i>	<i>the soul</i>	<i>une femme</i>	<i>a woman</i>
<i>l'histoire</i>	<i>the history</i>	<i>un héros</i>	<i>a hero.</i>

## EXERCISES.

*The wood; the forest; the houses; the men; the court;*  
*bois m. forêt f. maisons pl. hommes pl. cour f.*  
*the foot; the arms; the room; the garden; the windows;*  
*piéd m. bras pl. chambre f. jardin m. fenêtres pl.*  
*a history; a novel; a foreigner; a walk; a day;*  
*histoire f. roman m. étranger m. promenade f. jour m.*  
*a night; the sun; the moon; the stars; a body; a card;*  
*nuit f. soleil m. lune f. étoiles pl. corps m. carte f.*  
*a crown.*  
*écu m.*

He will render the English prepositions

*of and from by de* } and when followed by the article, thus:  
*to.....by à*

of the by	{	du before a noun masculine singular beginning with a consonant or <i>h</i> aspirated
		de la before a noun feminine singular
		de l' before any noun beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute
		des before any noun in the plural.
to the by	{	au before a noun masculine singular beginning with a consonant or <i>h</i> aspirated
		à la before a noun feminine singular
		à l' before any noun beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute
		aux before any noun in the plural.

And when these prepositions are followed by *a* or *an*, thus :

of a by	{	d'un before a noun masculine
		d'une before a noun feminine
to a by	{	à un before a noun masculine
		à une before a noun feminine.

### EXAMPLES.

Du parc	of the park	à l'esprit	to the mind
de la rivière	of the river	aux carrosses	to the coaches
de l'esprit	of the mind	d'un jour	of a day
des carrosses	of the coaches	d'une nuit	of a night
au parc	to the park	à un jour	to a day
à la rivière	to the river	à une nuit	to a night

### EXERCISES.

The palace of the king ;	of the queen ;	of the man ;	of the
palais m.	roi m.	reine f	homme h m.
men ;	to the king ;	to the queen ;	to the man ;
hommes pl.			to the men ;
from a balcony ;	from a window ;	of a prince ;	to a princess ;
balcon m.	fenêtre f.	—m.	princesse f.
of the gardens ;	of the evening ;	to the courtiers ;	of a table ;
jardins pl.	soir m.	courtisans pl.	f.
the master ;	to a lady ;	of the soul ;	of the horse ;
maître m.	dame f.	âme f.	cheval m.
of the houses ;	of a carpet		chat m.
maisons pl.	tapis m.		

These same prepositions, when followed by the possessive pronouns, *my*, *thy*, *his*, *her*, *its*, *our*, *your*, and *their*, will be both rendered thus :

		Singular.		Plural.
		m.	f.	m. and f.
of	{	mon	ma	mes
		ton	ta	tes
		son	sa	sés
		notre	notre	nos
		votre	votre	vos
		leur	leur	leurs
to	{	mon	ma	mes
		ton	ta	tes
		son	sa	sés
		notre	notre	nos
		votre	votre	vos
		leur	leur	leurs



and likewise, when followed by the demonstrative *this* or *that*, *these* or *those*:

of <i>this</i> or <i>that</i> , by <i>de</i> to <i>this</i> or <i>that</i> , by <i>à</i>	<i>ce</i>	before a noun masculine beginning with a consonant or <i>h</i> aspirated
	<i>cet</i>	before a noun masculine beginning with a vowel or <i>h</i> mute
	<i>cette</i>	before a noun feminine.
of <i>these</i> or <i>those</i> , by <i>de ces</i> to <i>these</i> or <i>those</i> , by <i>à ces</i>	} before nouns plural of either gender.	

## EXAMPLES.

de mon père	of my father	à leur travail	to their work
à ta mère	to thy mother	de cette terrasse	from this terrace
de son frère	of his brother	de ce lieu	of that place
de notre ville	of our town	de cet homme	of this man
à votre maison	to your house	de ces arbres	of these trees

## EXERCISES.

Of my clothes; of thy handkerchief; of his pocket: of your habits pl.	mouchoir m.	poche f.
letters; of our treasure; to their house; of this steeple; of that lettres pl.	trésor m.	maison f. clocher m.
hero; of this tower; of these models; of my sister; to héros m <i>h</i> asp.	tour f.	modèles pl. sœur f.
your relations; the top of this mountain; to my friend; parens pl.	sommet m.	montagne f. ami m.
of these pleasures; of our duties; to their connexions; of plaisirs pl.	devoirs pl.	liaisons pl.
his acquaintances; to my neighbours.	connaissances pl.	voisins pl.

The *Apostrophe* (') marks, we have said, page 3, the suppression of a vowel before another vowel, or *h* mute, as in *l'église* for *la église*, &c.

This suppression is called **ELISION**; *a*, *e*, *i*, are the only vowels liable to be thus cut off, and even of the suppression of the last of these, only two instances occur, viz. in the conjunction *si* before the pronoun, singular and plural, *il*, *ils*.

The *a* is suppressed only in *la* feminine, both when an article and a pronoun.

But the **ELISION** of *e* occurs, not only in the masculine article and pronoun *le*, but also in many other monosyllables, such as *je*, *me*, *te*, *se*, *de*, *ce*, *ne*, *que*

and in the compound of *que*, such as, *parceque*, *quoique*, *puisque*, *jusque*, *vû que*, &c.

## EXAMPLES.

of	<i>la</i>	<i>in</i>	<i>l'amitié</i>	for	<i>la amitié</i>	<i>the friendship</i>
	<i>la</i>	—	<i>l'herbe</i>		<i>la herbe</i>	<i>the grass</i>
	<i>le</i>	—	<i>l'oiseau</i>		<i>le oiseau</i>	<i>the bird</i>
	<i>le</i>	—	<i>l'honneur</i>		<i>le honneur</i>	<i>the honour</i>
	<i>je</i>	—	<i>j'ai</i>		<i>je ai</i>	<i>I have</i>
	<i>me</i>	—	<i>il m'oublie</i>		<i>il me oublie</i>	<i>he forgets me</i>
	<i>te</i>	—	<i>je t'aime</i>		<i>je te aime</i>	<i>I love thee</i>
	<i>se</i>	—	<i>il s'habille</i>		<i>il se habille</i>	<i>he dresses</i>
	<i>le</i>	—	<i>vous l'aidez</i>		<i>vous le aidez</i>	<i>you help him</i>
	<i>la</i>	—	<i>vous l'obligez</i>		<i>vous la obligez</i>	<i>you oblige her</i>
	<i>ce</i>	—	<i>c'est vrai</i>		<i>ce est vrai</i>	<i>it is true</i>
	<i>de</i>	—	<i>un coup-d'œil</i>		<i>un coup de œil</i>	<i>a glance</i>
	<i>ne</i>	—	<i>n'oubliez pas</i>		<i>ne oubliez pas</i>	<i>do not forget</i>
	<i>que</i>	—	<i>qu'attendez</i>		<i>que attendez</i>	<i>what do you</i>
			<i>vous ?</i>		<i>vous ?</i>	<i>expect ?</i>
	<i>si</i>	—	<i>s'il arrivait</i>		<i>si il arrivait</i>	<i>if it happened</i>
	<i>si</i>	—	<i>s'ils pouvaient</i>		<i>siils pouvaient</i>	<i>if they could</i>
	<i>parceque</i>	—	<i>parcequ'il faut</i>		<i>parceque il faut</i>	<i>because it is requisite</i>
	<i>quoique</i>	—	<i>quoiqu'il fasse</i>		<i>quoique il fasse</i>	<i>whatever he may do</i>
	<i>puisque</i>	—	<i>puisqu'on vous dit</i>		<i>puisque on vous dit</i>	<i>since they tell you</i>
	<i>jusque</i>	—	<i>jusqu' à demain</i>		<i>jusque à demain</i>	<i>till to-morrow</i>
	<i>vû que</i>	—	<i>vû qu'il obtiendra</i>		<i>vû que il obtiendra</i>	<i>since he will obtain</i>
	<i>dèsque</i>	—	<i>dèsqu'on saura</i>		<i>dèsque on saura</i>	<i>as soon as it will be known</i>
	<i>quelque</i>	—	<i>quelqu'un vient</i>		<i>quelque un vient</i>	<i>somebody comes</i>

It is allowable either to retrench, or to retain the final *e* of the preposition *entre*, between, among, when it is placed before the pronouns *eux*, *elles*, and *autres*; but it is always rescinded in the following compound words:

<i>Entr'acte</i>	<i>an interlude</i>	for	<i>entre-acte</i>
<i>s'entr'aider</i>	<i>to help one another</i>		<i>se entre-aider</i>
<i>entr'ouïr</i>	<i>to hear imperfectly</i>		<i>entre-ouïr</i>
<i>entr'ouvrir</i>	<i>to half open</i>		<i>entre-ouvrir</i>

and in a few others; but it is indifferent to say:

entre eux	} or {	entr'eux	between them
entre elles		entr'elles	between them
entre autres choses		entr'autres choses	among other things

## EXERCISE.

*The soul; the heroine; the mind; he loves him; she*  
*âme f. héroïne f. esprit m. il aime 2 le 1: elle*  
*loves her; I love this man; you do not understand*  
*2 la 1; je aime homme m. vous \* ne entendez 2 pas 3*  
*me; he esteems thee; he goes away; it was the golden age;*  
*me 1: il estime 2 te 1; se en-va ce était de or 2 âge 1;*  
*do not go there; if he comes: if they please: what has he*  
*\* ne allez pas là; si vient; ils veulent; que a-t-il*  
*said? till night; though he says; since he knows*  
*dit? jusque au soir m. quoique dise; puisque sait;*  
*when he saw: between them; somebody is come.*  
*lorsque vit; entre eux; quelque un est venu.*

N. B. In the following French negative modes of speech, which answer to the accompanying English translation, the *caret* points out the place which the French verb must occupy, whenever it is not in the infinitive mood.

Not	{ ne^pas ne^point	} as {	je ne suis pas, &c. I am not, &c.
			nous n'avons point } we have not
never	ne^jamais		il ne joue jamais he never plays
nothing	ne^rien		vous ne dites rien } you say nothing
nobody	ne^personne		je ne vois personne } I see nobody
not a jot	ne^goutte		je ne vois goutte { I do not see, or I see not in the least
no where	{ ne^nulle part		je ne vais nulle part } I go no where.

But in compound tenses, it is the auxiliary verb that parts the negative *ne* from the *pas*, or *point*, &c. that accompany it, as *nous n'avons point parlé*, *we have not spoken*; *on n'aurait jamais cru*, *one could never have believed*.

N. B. The addition of *pas*, or *point*, to the negative particle *ne*, must not be considered as a second negation: but only as a complementary part of it. For in such cases, *pas*, *point*, *goutte*, are mere restrictive terms, nearly resembling the English words, *jot*, *bit*, *tittle*, sometimes added to *not*, with this difference, that *pas* and *point* in French have nothing trivial in them.

## EXERCISE.

I do *not* say; I have *not* said; I have *never* seen; I *never*  
 \* *dis* *ai* *dit* *ai* *vu*  
 (tell a falsehood); I do *nothing*; I have done *nothing*; is he  
*mens* *fais* *fait* *est-il*  
 not arrived? does *not* he come? I see *nothing*; has he *never* seen?  
*arrivé* \* *2 vient* *1 vois* *a-t-* *vu*  
 he *never* loses his time; that (is worth) *nothing*; I met *nobody*.  
*perd* *temps m. cela* *vaut* *rencontrai.*

There are many words which are alike in both languages, and others which differ only in their termination.

The expressions, which are perfectly alike, are particularly those that have the following terminations:

-al	as	{ animal, cardinal, fatal, général, local, moral, natal, original, principal, &c.
-ble	—	{ capable, fable, &c. bible, éligible, &c, noble, double, soluble, insoluble, &c.
-ace	—	{ face, grimace, grâce, place, préface, race, surface, trace, &c.
-ance	—	{ chance, complaisance, extravagance, ignorance, lance, tempérance, &c.
-ence	—	{ abstinence, conférence, continence, diligence, éloquence, patience, &c.
-ice	—	{ artifice, auspices, édifice, justice, injustice, office, orifice, précipice, solstice, &c.
-acle	—	{ miracle, oracle, obstacle, réceptacle, tabernacle, spectacle, &c.
-ade	—	{ ambuscade, cavalcade, brigade, esplanade, sérénade, rétrograde, &c.
-age	—	{ âge, adage, bandage, cage, cordage, image, page, plumage, rage, &c.
-ege	—	{ collège, privilège, sacrilège, siège, sortilège, &c.
-ge	—	{ vestige, doge, barge, charge, orange, forge, rouge, refuge, déluge, &c.
-ule	—	{ globule, ridicule, animalcule, corpuscule, formule, module, mule, pustule, valvule, &c.
-ile	—	{ bile, débile, agile, docile, ductile, facile, fragile, nubile, reptile, versatile, &c.
-ine	—	{ carabine, fascine, doctrine, héroïne, machine, marine, famine, mine, rapine, &c.
-ion	—	{ action, fraction, légion, nation, opinion, passion, question, religion, &c.



-ant	as	{ arrogant, constant, élégant, éléphant, pétulant, piquant, poignant, vigilant, &c.
-ent	—	{ absent, accident, compliment, augment, content, élément, fréquent, serpent, &c.

Many other English words require only the change of termination, in the following manner :

-gy	into	-gie	as	<i>energy</i>	énergie
-ary	—	-aire	—	<i>military</i>	militaire
-ory	—	-oire	—	<i>glory</i>	gloire
-cy	—	-ce	—	<i>clemency</i>	clémence
-ty	—	-té	—	<i>beauty</i>	beauté
-ous	—	-eux	—	<i>dangerous</i>	dangereux
-our	—	-eur	—	<i>favour</i>	faveur
-or	—	-eur	—	<i>error</i>	erreur
-ine	—	-in	—	<i>clandestine</i>	clandestin
-ive	—	-if	—	<i>expressive</i>	expressif
-ry	—	-rie	—	<i>fury</i>	furie
-dy	—	-die	—	<i>perfidy</i>	perfidie

N. B. Adjectives in { -eux } make their feminine in { -euse  
 { -if } { -ive  
 { -in } { -ine

## EXERCISE.

The beauty of that fable ; the horror of vice ; the utility  
 of science ; the atrocity of this action ; the violence of his  
 passions ; the simplicity of that machine ; an audacious  
 conspirator ; the absurdity of that opinion ; the military  
 evolutions ; an industrious nation ; an important victory ; an  
 alimentary pension ; a dangerous animal ; a figurative  
 expression ; a famous general ; his constant generosity ; he is  
 incapable of attention ; his imprudence is visible ; his fidelity  
 is indubitable ; she is very attentive ; your clemency is  
 admirable ; the destruction of his fortune was the consequence

of his temerity; she is very scrupulous; his condition is horrible;  
 f. très- f. f.  
 his parents are very miserable; this history is incontestable;  
 pl. sont très- pl. f.  
 your facility is prodigious; his perfidy is odious; it was an hor-  
 f. f. f. *ce était*  
 rible famine; the sublimity of his sentiments is still preferable  
 f. f. m. *encore*  
 to the energy of his expressions; it was a decisive action; the  
 f. f. 2 f. 1  
 carnage was terrible; that obstacle is invincible; this  
 m. *fut* *cet* m.  
 instrument is not harmonious; the prosperity of the wicked is  
 m. f. *méchans* pl.  
 not durable; your insidious presents are not acceptable; his  
 2 1 pl. *sont* pl.  
 memory is truly extraordinary; that is his principal occupation;  
 f. *vraiment* *ce est* f. f.  
 a central position; his extravagance is visible; these argu-  
 f. 2. f. 1 *son* f. *ces* m.  
 ments are insoluble.  
 pl.

## PART I.

OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR NA-  
TURE AND INFLECTIONS.

There are, in French, nine sorts of words, or parts of speech, namely,

- |                          |             |                  |
|--------------------------|-------------|------------------|
| 1. Substantive, or Noun, | 4. Pronoun, | 7. Preposition,  |
| 2. Article,              | 5. Verb,    | 8. Conjunction,  |
| 3. Adjective,            | 6. Adverb,  | 9. Interjection. |

## CHAP. I.

## OF THE SUBSTANTIVE, OR NOUN.

The substantive is a word, which serves to name a person, or thing, as *Pierre*, Peter; *livre*, book, &c.

There are two sorts of substantives, the *substantive*

*proper*, or *proper name*, and the *substantive common*, also called *appellative*.

The *proper name* is that which is applied to a particular person, or thing, as *César*, *Cesar*; *la Tamise*, the Thames.

The *substantive common* is that which belongs to a whole class of objects. The word *homme*, man, is a substantive common, as it is applicable to any individual, as *Peter*, *Paul*, *John*, &c.

Of these nouns, some are *collective*, and others *abstract*.

Collectives express either a whole mass, as *une armée*, an army: *une forêt*, a forest: or a partial assemblage, as *une quantité de*, &c. a certain quantity of; *la plupart*, most part, &c.

*Abstract* nouns are the names of qualities abstracted from their subjects, as, *surface*, *rondeur*, *science*, *sagesse*; surface, roundness, knowledge, wisdom, &c.

In substantives, are to be considered *Gender* and *Number*.

#### OF GENDER.

There are *only* two genders, the *masculine* and *feminine*.

The masculine belongs to the male kind, as *un homme*, a man; *un lion*, a lion, &c.

The feminine belongs to the female kind, as *une femme*, a woman; *une lionne*, a lioness, &c.

This distinction has, through imitation, been extended to all substantives, as, *un livre*, a book, is masculine; *une table*, a table, is feminine, &c. see p. 37, 40, &c.

#### OF NUMBER.

There are two numbers; the *singular* and the *plural*.

The *singular* expresses *one single* object, as *un homme*, *un livre*.

The *plural* announces more objects than one, as *des hommes, des livres*.

Proper names have no plural, as *Londres, Paris, Milton, &c.*

## OF THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF FRENCH SUBSTANTIVES.

### GENERAL RULE.

The singular is generally changed into a plural, by adding an s,	as	Singular.	Plural.
		<i>le roi</i> the king	<i>les rois</i> the kings
		<i>la reine</i> the queen	<i>les reines</i> the queens

### EXCEPTIONS.

#### FIRST EXCEPTION.

Sing. -s -x -z	Plural. -s -x -z	Singular.	Plural.
} remain un- alterable.	} as	<i>le fils,</i> the son ;	<i>les fils,</i> the sons.
		<i>la voix,</i> the voice ;	<i>les voix,</i> the voices.
		<i>le nez,</i> the nose ;	<i>les nez,</i> the noses.

#### SECOND EXCEPTION.

Sing. -au -eu -œu -ou*	Plural. -aux -eux -œux -oux	Singular.	Plural.
} take an x and make	} as	<i>bateau,</i> boat ;	<i>bateaux,</i> boats.
		<i>feu,</i> fire ;	<i>feux,</i> fires.
		<i>vœu,</i> vow ;	<i>vœux,</i> vows.
		<i>bijou,</i> jewel ;	<i>bijoux,</i> jewels.

#### THIRD EXCEPTION.

Sing. -ail -ailt	Plural. -aux -aux	Singular.	Plural.
} are changed into	} as	<i>cheval,</i> horse ;	<i>chevaux,</i> horses.
		<i>travail,</i> work ;	<i>travaux,</i> works.

\* Those in *-ou*, that take *x* in their plural, are *chou, caillou, bijou, genou, hibou, joujou, pou* ; the others now follow the general rule, and take *s*, as *clou, clous ; verrou, verrous, &c.*

† Several nouns in *-al*, as *bal, cal, pal, régal, carnavaul, local, &c.* follow however the general rule, simply taking *s*.

‡ Those in *-ail*, making their plural in *aux*, are particularly *bail, sous-bail, corail, émail, soupirail, travail, vantail, ventail* ; the rest, as *attirail, détail, éventail, gouvernail, portail, sérail, &c.* follow the general rule.



## FOURTH EXCEPTION.

Sing.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
<i>-ant</i> * { now drop their	<i>-ans</i> { as	enfant, <i>child</i> ;	enfants, <i>children</i> .
<i>-ent</i> * { <i>t</i> in polysyllables	<i>-ens</i> {	moment, <i>moment</i> ;	momens, <i>moments</i> .

	Singular.		Plural.
These six are irregular	ail <i>garlick</i>	aulx	<i>heads of garlick</i>
	bétail <i>cattle</i>	bestiaux	<i>cattle</i>
	aïeul <i>grandfather</i>	aïeux	<i>ancestors</i>
	ciel <i>heaven</i>	cieux	<i>heavens</i>
	œil <i>eye</i>	yeux	<i>eyes</i>
	bercail <i>sheepfold</i>	<i>has no plural</i>	

## EXERCISE.

The flowers of the gardens;	the niceties of the languages;
<i>fleur</i> <i>jardin</i>	<i>délicatesse</i> <i>langue</i>
the palaces of the kings;	the woods of those countries;
<i>palais</i> <i>roi</i>	<i>bois</i> <i>pays</i>
the walnuts of their orchards:	the pictures of those painters;
<i>noix</i> <i>verger</i>	<i>tableau</i> <i>peintre</i>
the feathers of these birds;	the melody of their voices; the
<i>plume</i> <i>oiseau</i>	=f. s. <i>voix</i>
gods of the pagans;	the jewels of my sisters; the cabbages
<i>dieu</i> <i>païen</i>	<i>bijou</i> <i>sœur</i> <i>chou</i>
of our gardens;	these charming places; the horses of my
<i>jardin</i> <i>charmans</i> 2 <i>lieu</i> 1	<i>cheval</i>
stables;	the fans of these ladies; the (front gates) of those
<i>écurie</i> <i>éventail</i> <i>dame</i>	<i>portail</i>
churches;	the actions of my ancestors; the evils of this
<i>église</i> — <i>aïeul</i> <i>mal</i>	
life;	the victories of those generals; the works of those
<i>vie</i> = — <i>travail</i>	
architects;	the corals of those seas; the (learned men) of
— <i>tecte</i> <i>corail</i> <i>mer</i> <i>savant</i>	
those times;	the presents of my parents; the teeth of your
<i>temps-là</i> — — <i>dent</i>	
combs;	the playthings of our children: the heads of these
<i>peigne</i> <i>joujou</i> <i>enfant</i> <i>tête</i>	
nails.	
<i>clou.</i>	

\* Only polysyllables in *-nt* drop the *t*, but monosyllables retain it, as *chant*, *chants*; *gant*, *gants*; *dent*, *dents*; &c. except, however *gent*, *gens*.

## CHAP. II.

## OF THE ARTICLE.

The *Article* is a small word prefixed to substantives, to determine the extent of their signification.

The French article is  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{le} \text{ before a mascu.} \\ \text{substantive} \\ \textit{la} \text{ before a femin.} \\ \text{substantive} \end{array} \right\}$  the plural is *les* for both genders.

## EXAMPLE.

Sing.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{le} \text{ jour} \\ \textit{la} \text{ nuit} \end{array} \right\}$  *the day* *the night* } plur.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{les} \text{ jours} \\ \textit{les} \text{ nuits} \end{array} \right\}$  *the days.* *the nights.*

## EXERCISE.

The sun, *soleil* m. the moon, *lune* f. and the stars, *étoile*, f. pl. *sont* =f. are the glory of nature.  
 The king, *roi* m. the queen, *reine* f. and the princes are well art—f. *très-*  
 pleased. The rose, *rose* f. the violet, *violette* f. the tulip, *tulipe* f. the narcissus, *narcisse* m. *satisfaits.* —f.  
 the hyacinth, *jacinthe* f. the gilliflower, *giroflée* f. the jasmine, *jasmin* m. the lily, *lis* m.  
 honeysuckle, *chèvre-feuille* m. the ranunculus, *renoncule* f. are the delight of the sight, *délices* f. pl. *vue* f.  
 Poetry, *poésie* f. painting, *peinture* f. and music, *musique* f. are (sister arts). The art. *sœur* f. pl.  
 day and the night are equally necessary. *jour* m. *nuit* f. *également nécessaires.*

The article is subject to elision and contraction. See p. 73 and 74.)

Elision of the article is the omitting of the *e* in *le*, or the *a* in *la*, when these articles precede a noun beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute.

## EXAMPLE.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{l}'\text{argent} \\ \textit{l}'\text{histoire} \end{array} \right\}$  instead of  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{le} \text{ argent} \\ \textit{la} \text{ histoire} \end{array} \right\}$  *the money* *the history*

But in this case the place of the letter thus omitted is supplied by an apostrophe.

## EXERCISE.

The soul of man without cultivation is like a  
*âme f. art. homme h m. sans culture f. est comme*  
 diamond (in the rough). The history of Spain is sometimes  
*diamant m. brut = h m. Espagne est quelquefois*  
 very interesting. (Look at) the amaranth and the anemone;  
*très-intéressante. Considérez amaranthe f. —f.*  
 what beauty! Self-love and pride are always the  
*quelle = f. art. amour-propre art. orgueil sont toujours*  
 offspring of a weak mind. Honesty, inno-  
*partage m. faible 2 esprit m. 1. art. Honnêteté, h. m. art.*  
 cence, honour, and the love of virtue are  
*— art. honneur h. m. amour art. vertu f.*  
 (very much) esteemed. Summer, autumn, and winter,  
*très-estimés art. été art. automne art. hiver h m.*  
 and very changeable. France is separated from Italy by the  
*variables art. — séparée de art. Italie par*  
 Alps, and from Spain by the Pyrenees.  
*Alpes, pl. art. —pl.*

Contraction in grammar is the reducing of two syllables into one, and takes place, when the preposition *a*, or *de*, precedes the article; in which case, instead of putting *de le* before a masculine singular, beginning with a consonant, or *h* aspirated, *du* must be employed; instead of *à le*, *au* must be used; and before the plural substantives of both genders, *de les* is changed into *des*, and *à les* into *aux*.

Thus	{	Du roi	is instead of	<i>de le roi</i>	<i>of the king</i>
		du héros	—	<i>de le héros</i>	<i>of the hero</i>
		au roi	—	<i>à le roi</i>	<i>to the king</i>
		au héros	—	<i>à le héros</i>	<i>to the hero</i>
		des rois	—	<i>de les rois</i>	<i>of the kings</i>
		des reines	—	<i>des les reines</i>	<i>of the queens</i>
		aux rois	—	<i>à les rois</i>	<i>to the kings</i>
		aux reines	—	<i>à les reines</i>	<i>to the queens</i>

## EXERCISE.

The top of the mountains, and the bottom of the vallies  
*sommet m. montagne fond m. vallée*  
 are equally agreeable. Silk is soft to the touch. The  
*également agréables art. Soie f. douce toucher m.*  
 happiness of a feeling man is to relieve the wants of the  
*bonheur m. sensible 2 1 de subvenir à besoin*

poor. A man given to pleasure was never a great man.  
*pauvre* m. s. *livré* art. *plaisir* m. fut *grand*  
 He obeyed the orders of the king. The warbling of birds  
*Il obéit à* *ordres* *gazouillement* m. art. *oiseau*  
 the murmuring of streams, the enamel of meadows, the  
 —re m. art. *ruisseau* *émail* m. art. *prairie*  
 coolness of woods, the fragrance flowers, and the sweet  
*fraîcheur* f. art. *bois* *parfum* m. art. *fleur* *douce*  
 smell of plants, contribute greatly to the pleasures of the  
*odeur* f. art. *plante* *contribuent* *beaucoup*  
 mind and to the health of the body.  
*esprit* *santé* f. *corps* m.

*De* and *à* are never contracted with *la*, before a feminine substantive singular beginning with a consonant.

## EXAMPLES.

*De la reine* of the queen *à la reine* to the queen

Nor are *de* and *à* contracted with *le* or *la*, before any substantive singular, beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute, but then the article suffers elision.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>De l'esprit</i>	of the mind	<i>de l'homme</i>	of man
<i>A l'esprit</i>	to the mind	<i>à l'homme</i>	to man
<i>De l'âme</i>	of the soul	<i>à l'âme</i>	to the soul
<i>De l'histoire</i>	of the history	<i>à l'histoire</i>	to the history

Contraction likewise does not take place, when the adjective *tout*, all, every, intervenes between *de*, or *à*, and the article.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>De tout le monde</i>	of every body.
<i>De tous les hommes,</i>	of all men.
<i>A tout le monde,</i>	to every body.
<i>A tous les hommes,</i>	to all men.
<i>De toutes les vertus,</i>	of all virtues.
<i>A toutes les maisons,</i>	to all houses.

## EXERCISE.

The hope of success strengthened the cause of  
*espérance* f. art. *réussite* f. *fortifia* —f.  
 virtue, and weakened the audaciousness of rebellion.  
 art. *vertu* f. *affaiblit* *audace* f. art. —f.  
 Fire of imagination, strength of mind, and  
 art. *Feu* m. art. —f. art. *force* f. art. *esprit* art.  
 firmness of soul, are gifts of nature. We saw  
*fermeté* f. art. *âme* *des dons* m. pl. art. —f. *Nous vîmes*



with horror that man given up to avarice and voracity  
*avec = livré \* art. — à art. voracitè f.*  
 voluptuousness. Good cultivation is that which contributes  
*luptè f. art. Bonne culture f. ce qui contribue*  
 most to the fertility of the soil. More or less pain  
*le plus = terre f. Plus ou moins de peine*  
 is the lot of every body. The history of man under  
*partage m. tout art. monde m. = art. dans*  
 all the circumstances of life, is the study of the  
*toutes art. circonstance f. art. vie f. étude*  
 wise. Playfulness does not become all ages  
*sage m. art. Enjouement m. \* ne sied ni à art.—m. pl.*  
 nor all characters.  
*ni à art. caractère, m. pl.*

I. GENERAL RULE. In French, the article always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

## EXAMPLES.

*Le livre que je cherche,* The book which I am looking for.  
*La femme que je vois,* The woman whom I see.  
*Les hommes qui étudient,* The men that study.

## EXERCISE.

The father, mother, brothers, sisters,  
*père m. art. mère f. art. frère m. pl. art. sœurs f. pl.*  
 uncles, aunts, and several other relations,  
*art. oncles m. pl. art. tante f. pl. plusieurs autres parens m. pl.*  
 were present. What we value is health, frugality,  
*étaient présens. Ce que nous estimons, c'est art. santé f. art. = f.*  
 liberty, vigour of mind and body; it is the love of  
*art. = f. art. vigueur f. art. art. corps m. ce amour m.*  
 virtue, reverence for the gods, fidelity to all  
*art. f. art. crainte f. de dieu m. pl. art. = f. envers*  
 mankind, moderation in prosperity, forbearance,  
*art. monde m. art. — f. dans art. = f. art. for-*  
 titude in adversity, courage, good morals, and the  
*ce f. art. = f. art. — m. art. bonnes-mœurs, f. pl.*  
 abhorrence of flattery.  
*horreur f. h. m. art. = f.*

II. GENERAL RULE. The article and the prepositions *à* and *de*, whether contracted or not, are invariably to be repeated before every substantive.

## EXAMPLES.

L'esprit, les grâces, et la beauté nous captivent.	Wit, grace, and beauty, captivate us.
Je vis hier le roi, la reine, et les princes.	I saw yesterday the king, queen, and princes.
L'ignorance est la mère de l'erreur, de l'admiration, et des préventions de toute espèce.	Ignorance is the mother of error, admiration, and prejudices of every kind.

## EXERCISE.

Innocence of art. —f.	manners, art. mœurs, pl.	sincerity, art. =f.	obedience, art. obéissance f.
and abhorrence of art. horreur h. m.	vice, art. —m.	inhabit this happy region. habitent	heureuse —f.
The plants of the gardens, the animals of the forests, the minerals of the earth,	plante jardin m.	— forêt f.	—
the meteors of the sky, terre f.	météore	ciel m.	doivent tous concourir
to store à enrichir	the mind with an par	inexhaustible variety. 2	Neither =f. 1 *
suffering, art. peine. f.	punishment, art. châtiment m.	* art. caresse f. pl. ne font nulle	impression on those minds. The lily is the emblem of
— sur	âme pl.	lis m.	symbole m.
virginity, art. =f.	candour, de art. =f.	innocence and de art. —f.	de art.
purity. pureté f.			

*Du, de la, de l', des*, answering to the English partitive *some* expressed, or understood, have by way of ellipsis passed into habitual use.

## EXAMPLES.

Je mange du pain.	I eat bread.
Il prend de la peine.	He takes some trouble.
Nous mangeons du hachis.	We eat some hash.
Elle conçoit de la haine.	She conceives a hatred.
Vous avez de l'amitié.	You have some friendship.
Vous prenez de l'humeur.	You go into an ill humour.
Nous cueillons des pommes.	We gather apples.
Ils vendent des oranges.	They sell oranges.

## EXERCISE.

Give me	some bread and	butter.	Offer him some
donnez moi	pain m. pr. art.	beurre m.	Offrez-lui

meat. Take some salt. (There is) mustard. We  
*viande f. Prenez sel m. Voilà pr. art. moutarde f. Nous*  
 have some girkins. Shall I offer you some chicken? Shall I  
*avons cornichons pl. Vous offrirai-je poulet m. Vous*  
 help you to some fruit? I will take (with pleasure) some  
*servirai je \* —m. Je prendrai volontiers*  
 broth. Bring me some bread. Pour me out some beer.  
*bouillon m. Apportez-moi Versez-moi \* bière f.*  
 Drink some wine. Take some tea. Put (in) some sugar  
*Buvez vin m. Prenez thé m. Mettez-y sucre m.*  
 and milk. I hear some noise. There falls some hail.  
*pr. art. lait m. J'entends bruit m. Il tombe grêle f. s.*  
 She has some pride. Have you any ink and  
*Elle a orgueil m. Avez-vous pr. art. encre f. pr. art.*  
 pens? Put some oil, and vinegar to the salad.  
*plumes pl. Mettez huile h. m. pr. vinaigre m. sur salade f.*  
 Eat some lobster. He has received some gold and  
*Mangez pr. art. homard m. h. asp. Il a reçu or m.*  
 silver.  
*pr. art. argent m.*

## CHAP. III.

## OF THE ADJECTIVE.

The adjective is a word, which is added to a substantive to express its quality, as,

bon père	good father	bonne mère	good mother
beau livre	fine book	belle image	fine image

These words *bon, bonne, beau, belle*, are adjectives, as they express the qualities of *père, mère, livre, image*.

A word is known to be an adjective, when it can be properly joined with the word *personne*, or the word *chose*. Thus, *habile*, skilful, and *agréable*, agreeable, are adjectives, because we can say *personne habile*, skilful person; *chose agréable*, agreeable thing.

In French the adjective takes the *gender* and *number* of the substantive to which it relates. This difference of *gender* and *number* is generally marked by the termination.

### OF THE FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF FRENCH ADJECTIVES.

**RULE I.** *All* adjectives ending in the singular in *e* mute, are of *both* genders.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>Un homme aimable,</i>	An amiable man.
<i>Une femme aimable,</i>	An amiable woman.

**RULE II.** *Whenever* the adjective does not end in *e* mute, the *e* mute is added to form its feminine.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>m.</i>	{	prudent sensé poli tortu instruit	<i>f.</i>	{	prudente sensée polie tortue instruite	<i>prudent</i> <i>sensible</i> <i>polite</i> <i>crooked</i> <i>informed</i>
-----------	---	---	-----------	---	--	---

**RULE III.** Adjectives in *-el*, *-eil*, *-ien*, *-on*, and *-et*, to form their feminine double their last consonant and take *e* mute.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>m.</i>	{	cruel pareil ancien bon net*	<i>f.</i>	{	cruelle pareille ancienne bonne nette	<i>cruel</i> <i>like</i> <i>ancient</i> <i>good</i> <i>clean</i>	<i>=50</i> <i>= 3</i> <i>=80</i> <i>=18</i> <i>=34</i>	} of each termination.
-----------	---	--	-----------	---	---	--	--	---------------------------

**RULE IV.** Adjectives ending in *f*, change this letter into *-v*, and take *e* mute.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>m.</i>	{	bref actif naïf neuf	<i>f.</i>	{	brève active naïve neuve	<i>short</i> <i>active</i> <i>ingenuous</i> <i>new</i>
-----------	---	-------------------------------	-----------	---	-----------------------------------	---

**RULE V.** Adjectives ending in *-x* change *-x* into *s*, and take *e* mute.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>m.</i>	{	honteux vertueux jaloux	<i>f.</i>	{	honteuse vertueuse jalouse	<i>ashamed</i> <i>virtuous</i> <i>jealous</i>
-----------	---	-------------------------------	-----------	---	----------------------------------	---



**RULE VI.** Adjectives, or rather *substantives*, ending in *-eur*, derived from verbs, *generally* change the *r* into *s*, and take *e* mute; but several, mostly of Latin origin, require *-eur* to be changed into *-rice*, in others *-eur* is transformed into *-eresse*, and about twelve, as, *antérieur*, *citérieur*, *extérieur*, *intérieur*, *inférieur*, *meilleur*, *mineur*, *majeur*, *postérieur*, *supérieur*, *ultérieur*, *prieur*, take only an *e* mute, and follow the *Second Rule*.

## EXAMPLE.

m.	{	trompeur	f.	{	trompeuse	deceitful
		menteur			menteuse	lying
		parleur			parleuse	talkative
m.	{	acteur	f.	{	actrice	actor, actress
		accusateur			accusatrice	accuser
		admirateur			admiratrice	admirer
m.	{	enchanteur	f.	{	enchanteresse	enchancing
		pécheur			pécheresse	sinful
		vengeur			vengeresse	avenging

## EXERCISE.

She is *decent*. This house is well *situated*. This pear  
*Elle* — *Cette maison*, f. *bien situé* *pcire* f.  
 is too *ripe*. She is *tall* and well *formed*. The story is  
*trop mûr*. *grand bien fait* *histoire* f.  
 very *entertaining*. This person is very *unsteady*. This moun-  
*très-amusant* *personne* f. *bien léger* *mon-*  
 tain is *steep*. This road is not very *safe*. The door is not  
*tagne* f. *escarpé* *route* f. *sûr* *porte* f.  
*open*. This room is *dark*. This street is too *narrow*. It is  
*ouvert*. *chambre* f. *obscur* *rue* f. *étroit* *Ce*  
 an *ancient* custom. She has *carnation* lips. His  
*coutume* f. *a* art. *vermeil* 2 *lèvre* f. pl. 1. *Sa*  
 memory will be *immortal*. His manners are *natural*. The  
 =f. *sera* — *tel*. *Ses manières* f. pl. *naïf*.  
 engagement was *warm*. (That is) an *original* thought. This  
*action* f. *fut vif* *voilà* *neuf* 2 *pensée* f. 1.  
 cloth is the *best* of all. They are *delusive* pro-  
*éttoffe* f. *meilleur* f. pl. *Ce* *des trompeur* 2 *pro-*  
 mises. He seduces by his *fawning* manners. The  
*messe* f. pl. 1. *séduit par* *flatteur* 2 *manières* f. pl. 1.  
*delightful* valley of Tempe is in Thessaly.  
*délicieux* *vallée* f. *Tempé dans* art. =f.

## EXCEPTIONS TO THE SECOND RULE.

The following adjectives double the last consonant in forming the feminine.

m.	f.		m.	f.	
bas	basse	low	épais	épaisse	thick
cas	casse	hoarse, broken	métis	métisse	mongrel
gras	grasse	fat	gros	grosse	big
las	lasse	tired	sot	sotte	silly
exprès	expresse	express	vieillot	vieillotte	oldish
profès	professe	professed	nul	nulle	none
			or gentil	gentille	genteel
			nun		

## OTHER EXCEPTIONS TO THE SECOND AND FIFTH RULES.

The following adjectives form their feminine by doubling the *l* in the masculine before a vowel.

m.	f.	f.	m.	f.	
beau			fou		
bel	belle	fine	fol	folle	mad
nouveau					
nouvel	nouvelle	new			
vieux			mou		
vieil	vieille	old	mol	molle	soft

The following are entirely irregular.

m.	f.		m.	f.	
blanc	blanche	white	faux	fausse	false
franc	franche	frank	roux	rousse	red
frais	fraîche	fresh	doux	douce	sweet
sec	sèche	dry	aigre-doux	aigre-douce	tart
Grec	Grecque	Greek	tiers	tierce	third, &c.
public	publique	public	tors	torse, or	twisted
caduc	caduque	decrepid		torte	
Turc	Turque	Turkish	coi	coite	still, snug
long	longue	long	favori	favorite	favorite
bénin	bénigne	benign	jumeau	jumelle	twin
malin	maligne	malignant	traître	traîtresse	traitor

m.		f.				
N. B.	concret	}	make	concrète	}	follow the second rule, except in the additional accent, and differing from the numerous terminations in -et*, of the THIRD RULE.
	discret			discrète		
	indiscret			indiscrète		
	inquiet			inquiète		
	complet			complète		
	incomplet			incomplète		
	replet			replète		
	suret			surète		
	prêt			prête		

*Préfix* m. makes *préfixe* f. and is the only adjective in -x, which preserves this letter and follows the SECOND RULE.

Some adjectives have no feminine, as *bisché*, *dispos*, *fat*, *paillet*, &c.; others have no masculine, as *blette*, &c.

## EXERCISE.

The grass is very *thick*. That soup is very *good*, but too *fat*.  
*herbe* f. *soupe* f. *mais trop*  
 It is a *foolish* undertaking. There is *no* truth in all that.  
*sot* *entreprise* f. *Il n'y a nul vérité* f. *dans tout cela*  
 This water is not *clean*. It is a very *silly* history. It is in the  
*eau* f. *net*. *Ce* 2 *fol* 3 = f. 1. *à*  
*newest* fashion. It is a *fine* statue. The law is *express* upon  
*nouveau mode* f. *beau* = f. *loi* f. *sur*  
 that point. He lives in a state of *luxurious* idleness. This wax  
 —m. *Il vit dans* \* \* *mou* *oisiveté* f. *cire* f.  
 is not very *white*. She is as *fresh* as a rose. The paint  
*comme* — f. *peinture* f.  
 on that wainscot is not *dry*. His answer is a *mere* evasion.  
*de lambris* m. *réponse* f. *franc dé faite* f.  
 The thing is *public*. That plant possesses a *pernicious*  
*chose* f. *herbe* f. *a* *malin* 2  
 property. She is of a *benevolent* character. The *avenging*  
*qualité* f. 1. *a* \* *bénin* 2 *humeur* f. *vengeur* 2  
 thunderbolt smote that impious wretch. He extended to  
*foudre* f. 1. *frappa* *impie* m. \* *tendit* 2 \*  
 us a *protecting* hand. This woman is jealous and *deceit-*  
*nous* 1 —*teur* 2. *main* f. 1. *femme* f. *jaloux* *faux*.  
*ful*. His temper is mild. This colour is too *red*. These old  
*Son humeur* f. *doux* *coulcur* f. *trop roux*.  
 clothes are good for nothing.  
*hardes* f. pl. *ne* *à rien*.

## OF THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF FRENCH ADJECTIVES.

GENERAL RULE. Every adjective forms its plural by the simple addition of *s*, as, *bon*, *bons*, *bonne*, *bonnes*, *poli*, *polis*, *polie*, *polies*. This rule is without exception as it regards the feminine termination; but the masculine has the four following exceptions.

## EXCEPTIONS.

1. Adjectives ending in *-s* or *-x*, do not change their termination in the plural masculine, as *gros*, *gras*, *hideux*.

2. Those ending in *-au*, take *x* in the plural, as *beau*, *beaux*, *nouveau*, *nouveaux*.

3. Some adjectives in *-al*, change this termination into *aux*, as, *égal*, equal, *égaux*; *général*, *généraux*; but most of these have no plural masculine, as *amical*, *austral*, *boréal*, *canonical*, *conjugal*, *diamétral*, *fatal*, *filial*, *final*, *frugal* *jovial*, *lustral*, *matinal*, *naval*, *pastoral*, *pectoral*, *special*, *vénal*, and some others.

4. Polysyllables ending in *-nt*, according to the most general practice, drop the *t* in the plural masculine, as *excellent*, *excellens*; but monosyllables retain it, as *lent*, *slow*, *lents*. The adjective *tout*, all, makes *tous*.

## EXERCISE.

They are *envious* and *jealous*. Those fowls are *big* and  
*Ils* = *poulet* m. pl.  
*fat*. Owls are *frightful* birds. (There  
art. *Hibou* m. pl. *des hideux* 2 *oiseau* m. pl. 1. *Voilà*  
are) some *beautiful* jewels. The two *new* operas  
*de beau bijou* m. pl. *deux nouveau* — m. pl.  
have succeeded. Men are only *equal* in the  
*ont réussi* art. 2 *ne 1 que* 4 3 *par*  
infirmities of nature. The *general* officers are  
= art. — f. — 2 *officiers* m. pl. 1.  
*assembled*. This fruit is *excellent*. His proficiency  
— *blé* — m. pl. *sont* — *Ses progrès* m. pl.  
is *slow*, but *solid*. All his friends have been very *glad* to  
*sont solide ami* m. pl. *ont été bien-aise de*  
see him. Those ladies are tired with walking. You  
*voir* 2 *le* 1. *dame* f. pl. *las de marcher*. *Vous*  
have powerful enemies, but their efforts will be vain  
*avez de ennemi* m. pl. *mais leurs* — m. pl. *seront* —  
and useless. The four cardinal points are the east,  
*inutile. quatre point* m. pl. 1. *orient* m.  
west, south, and north.  
art. *occident* m. art. *midi* m. art. *nord* m.



## OF THE DEGREES OF SIGNIFICATION OF THE ADJECTIVE.

Grammarians commonly reckon *three* degrees of comparison; the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

The *positive* is the adjective expressing the quality of an object, without any increase, or diminution, as *beau, belle*.

## EXERCISE.

A child gentle, amiable, and docile, is beloved by every  
*enfant* m. *doux* aimable — aimé de tout  
 body. An ingenuous candour, an amiable simplicity, and a  
*le monde.* — *nu* 2 = f. 1. = f.  
 lively artlessness, are the charm of youth. The  
*piquant* 2 naïveté f. 1 charme m. art. jeunesse f.  
 sight of an agreeable landscape is a varied and rapid source  
*vue* f. agréable paysage m. varié 2 rapide 3—f. 1  
 of delightful sensations.  
*delicieux* 2 —f. pl. 1.

The *comparative* is so called, because it draws a comparison between two or many objects. When two things are compared, the one is either superior, inferior, or equal to the other; hence three sorts of comparison, that of *superiority*, *inferiority*, and *equality*.

N. B. The adverbs *plus*, *moins*, and *aussi*, which mark these three kinds of comparison, are to be repeated before every adjective, when several are joined to the same substantive, and are followed by the conjunction *que*, rendered in English by *than* or *as*,

The *comparative of superiority* is formed by putting *plus*, more, before the adjective, and *que*, than, after it.

## EXAMPLE.

*La rose est plus belle que la violette.* The rose is more beautiful than the violet.

## EXERCISE.

The republic of Athens was more illustrious than that  
*république f. Athènes a été illustre celle*  
 of Lacedemon. Homer was perhaps a greater genius  
*Lacédémone. Homère était peut-être grand génie m.*  
 than Virgil; but Virgil had a more delicate and more refined  
*Virgile; mais avait fin 2 délicat*  
 taste than Homer. Milton appears (to me) more sublime  
*3 goût m. 1 h m. paraît 2 me 1*  
 than all the other epic poets.  
*autre 1 épique 3 poète m. pl. 2.*

The comparative of inferiority is formed by prefixing *moins*, less, to the adjective, and adding *que*, than, after it.

## EXAMPLE.

*La violette est moins belle que la rose.* The violet is less beautiful than the rose.

## EXERCISE.

Shipwreck and death are less fatal than the pleasures  
*art. Naufrage m. art. mort f. funestes pl. m.*  
 which attack virtue. The violet is less brilliant to the  
*qui attaquent art. f. f. brillant*  
 eye than the lily, a true emblem of modesty  
*m. pl. lis m. || véritable 2 emblème m. 1. art. =f.*  
 and of pride. Autumn is less varied than  
*de art. orgueil m. art. Automne f. varié art.*  
 spring, but it is richer.  
*printemps m. elle riche.*

The comparative of equality is formed by placing *aussi*, as, before the adjective, and *que*, as, after it.

## EXAMPLE.

*La tulipe est aussi belle que la rose.* The tulip is as beautiful as the rose.

## EXERCISE.

Pope's images are as perfect as his style is harmonious.  
*de Pope 2 art.—f. pl. 1 parfait son—m.*  
 Delicacy of taste is a gift of nature.  
*art. Délicatesse f. art. goût m. don m. art.*

! *Automne* is now of the masculine gender.

ture, as scarce as true genius. The love of our neighbour  
 —f. rare art. *vrai génie* m. amour du \* prochain  
 is as necessary in society for the happiness of life,  
 = dans art. =f. pour bonheur m. art. vie f.  
 as in christianity for eternal salvation. It is as easy  
 art. —nisme m. art. —nel 2 salut m. 1. aisé  
 to do good, as to do evil.  
 de faire art. bien m. de art. mal m.

The three following adjectives, *meilleur*, better, *pire*, worse, *moindre*, less, are comparatives in themselves.

N. B. As most beginners are apt to confound these comparative adjectives with the comparative adverbs, *MIEUX*, *PIS*, and *MOINS*, because they are generally rendered by the same English words, *better*, *worse*, and *less*, it may be advisable to subjoin here these comparative adverbs with their positives, that the difference of meaning may serve as a distinction.

Adjectives.	{	<i>Meilleur</i> , better, is the comparative of <i>bon</i> , good, and is used instead of <i>plus bon</i> , which is never said.
		<i>Pire</i> signifies <i>plus mauvais</i> , worse, or more wicked, and is used instead of this.
		<i>Moindre</i> means <i>plus petit</i> , less, or smaller, and is used instead of these terms.
Adverbs.	{	<i>Mieux</i> *, better, is the comparative of <i>bien</i> , well, and is used instead of <i>plus bien</i> , more well, which is said in neither language.
		<i>Pis</i> * is the comparative of <i>mal</i> , badly, and is used for <i>plus mal</i> , worse, which is likewise employed.
		<i>Moins</i> is the comparative of <i>peu</i> , little, and is used for <i>plus peu</i> , which is never heard.

## EXAMPLES.

Ce fruit-là est bon, mais celui-ci est meilleur.	<i>That fruit is good, but this is better.</i>
Sa condition est mauvaise, mais elle a été pire.	<i>His condition is bad, but it has been worse.</i>
Ma dépense est petite, mais la vôtre est moindre.	<i>My expense is small, but yours is smaller.</i>

\* There are some instances of *pis* and *mieux* used adjectively, but this is not the place to notice them.

Il se conduit bien, mais elle se condait encore mieux.	<i>He behaves well, but she behaves still better.</i>
Il se portait mal, mais il est pis que jamais.	<i>He was unwell, but he is worse than ever.</i>
Je parle peu, vous parlez encore moins.	<i>I speak little, you speak still less.</i>

## EXERCISE.

His reasoning	is not better than yours.	Your style is
<i>Son raisonnement m.</i>	<i>le vôtre.</i>	<i>Votre m.</i>
(a great deal) better than that of his brother.	The thickness of	
<i>de beaucoup</i>	<i>celui son</i>	<i>épaisseur f.</i>
this wall is less than that of the next wall.	This column	
<i>mur m.</i>	<i>celle</i>	<i>voisin 2 1</i>
is less than the other in height and thickness.	The remedy	
<i>autre en hauteur f.</i>	<i>en grosseur f.</i>	<i>remède m.</i>
is worse than the disease.	Your horse is worse than mine.	
<i>mal m.</i>	<i>cheval m.</i>	<i>le mien.</i>

The adjective is in the *superlative* degree, when it expresses the quality in a very high, or in its highest state: hence there are two sorts of superlatives, the *absolute* and the *relative*.

The *superlative absolute* is formed by putting *très*, *fort*, *bien*, very, before the adjective; it is called *absolute*, because it does not express any relation to other objects.

## EXAMPLE.

*Londres est une très-belle ville.* London is a very fine city.

REMARK. The adverbs *extrêmement*, extremely, *infinitement*, infinitely, are likewise marks of the superlative absolute.

## EXAMPLE.

<i>Cet homme est extrêmement savant.</i>	That man is extremely learned.
<i>Dieu est infiniment heureux.</i>	God is supremely happy.

## EXERCISE.

That landscape	is very diversified, very extensive, and infinitely agreeable on every side.	The Alps are very high and
<i>paysage m.</i>	<i>varié</i>	<i>étendu</i>
<i>agréable de tout</i>	<i>côte m.</i>	<i>f. pl.</i>
		<i>haut</i>



*very steep.* The style of Fenelon is *very rich*, and *very*  
*escarpé.* —m. —  
*harmonious*, but it is sometimes prolix; that of Bossuet is  
 = *il* *quelquefois prolix*; *celui*  
*extremely sublime*, but it is sometimes harsh and unpolished.  
*élevé* *dur* *rude.*

The *superlative relative* is formed by prefixing the article *le* to the comparatives *meilleur*, *moindre*, *pire*, and to the adverbs *plus* and *moins*; it is called *relative*, as it expresses a relation to other objects.

## EXAMPLES.

*Londres est la plus belle des villes.* London is the finest of cities.  
*Je préfère une maison de cam-* I prefer a country-house to the  
*pagne au plus beau palais.* finest palace.

*Plus* and *moins*, with the article, are repeated before every adjective.

## EXERCISE.

*The most beautiful* comparison, that there is perhaps in  
*comparaison f.* *que il y ait peut-être dans*  
 any language, is that which Pope has drawn from the Alps,  
*aucun langue f.* *celle que* *tiré f. de*  
 in his Essay on Criticism. *The most able* men are  
*dans son Essai sur art. Critique f.* *habile gens m. pl.*  
 not always *the most virtuous.* *The most ancient and most*  
*toujours* *vertueux f.*  
*general* of all kinds of idolatry, was the worship ren-  
*f.* *art. espèce f. pl.* = *était culte m. ren-*  
 dered to the sun. *The least excusable* of all errors is  
*du* *soleil m.* *art.=f.*  
 that which is wilful.  
*celle qui* *volontaire.*

### AGREEMENT OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE SUB- STANTIVE.

RULE I. The adjective always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Le bon père,</i>	The good father.
<i>La bonne mère,</i>	The good mother
<i>De beaux jardins,</i>	Fine gardens.
<i>De belles promenades,</i>	Fine walks.

*Bon* is masculine singular, because *père* is masculine, and in the singular; *bonne* is feminine singular, because *mère* is feminine, and in the singular; *beaux* is in the masculine plural, because *jardins* is masculine, and plural, &c.

## EXERCISE.

These hills are covered with trees loaded with  
*coteau m. pl. couvert de arbre m. pl. chargé de*  
 fruit, already ripe. A pure stream rolls its limpid  
 —m. pl. *déjà mur clair ruisseau m. roule son limpide 2*  
 water through the midst of meadows enamelled with  
*cristal m. 1 à milieu m. prairie f. pl. émaillé de*  
 flowers. (Every thing) interests the heart in this abode,  
*fleur f. pl. tout intéresse cœur m. séjour m.*  
 which is full of charms. Fly, inconsiderate youth,  
 \* \* *plein attrait m. pl. Fuyez, —déré 2 jeunesse f. 1*  
 fly from the enchanting allurements of a vain world:  
 \* —*teur 2 attrait 1 —2 monde m. 1.*  
 its perfidious sweets are a slow poison, which (would  
 ses —*de 2 douceur f. pl. 1 lent 2—m. 1 qui dé-*  
 destroy) in your soul the noble enthusiasm of goodness,  
*travait dans âme — enthousiasme m. art. bien m.*  
 and the precious seeds of sublime virtues.  
 = *germe m. art. —2 vertu 1.*

**RULE II.** When the adjective relates to two substantives singular of the same gender, it must be put in the plural, and agree with them in gender.

## EXAMPLE.

*Le roi et le berger sont égaux après la mort,* The king and the shepherd are equal after death.

## EXERCISE.

Uprightness and piety are much esteemed, even by  
 art. *Droiture f. art. piété f. très estimé même de*  
 the wicked. A man in the most elevated,  
*méchant pl. \*art. dans élevé 2 art. état 1*  
 and a man in the most obscure situation, are equally  
 \*art. *obscur 2 art. état m. 1. également*  
 precious in the eyes of God. Pilpay and Confucius are very  
 = *à m. pl. Dieu — —*  
 celebrated among the nations of Asia.  
*célèbre parmi peuple m. pl. art.*

**RULE III.** When the two substantives, to which the adjective relates, are of different genders, the adjective is to be put in the masculine plural.

## EXAMPLE.

*Mon père et ma mère sont contents.* My father and mother are contented.

## EXERCISE.

His probity and disinterestedness are known (every where)  
 = f. *son désintéressement m.* *connu partout.*  
 The love of life, and the fear of death, are  
*amour m.* *art. vie f.* *crainte art. mort f.*  
 natural to man. Ignorance and self-love are  
 —rel *art.* *art.* —f. *art. amour-propre m.*  
 equally presumptuous. My sister and brother were very  
*présomptueux f. mon m. ont été*  
 attentive to the instructions of their masters.  
*maître m. pl.*

## NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

Numbers are divided into five classes, viz. *cardinal*, *ordinal*, *collective*, *distributive*, and *proportional*.

CARDINAL NUMBER.	ORDINAL NUMBER.	NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.
1 un, une	<i>premier</i>	<i>first</i> unité <i>unit</i>
2 deux	{ <i>deuxième</i> , <i>second</i> }	2d couple, paire <i>couple</i>
3 trois	<i>troisième</i>	3d trio <i>trio</i>
4 quatre	<i>quatrième</i>	4th deux couples <i>two couple</i>
5 cinq	<i>cinquième</i>	5th
6 six	<i>sixième</i>	6th { <i>demi-</i> <i>douzaine</i> } <i>half a dozen</i>
7 sept	<i>septième</i>	7th
8 huit	<i>huitième</i>	8th huitaine <i>week</i>
9 neuf	<i>neuvième</i>	9th neuvaine { <i>nine days of</i> <i>prayer</i>
10 dix	<i>dixième</i>	10th dizaine <i>half a score</i>
11 onze	<i>onzième</i>	11th
12 douze	<i>douzième</i>	12th douzaine <i>dozen</i>

CARDINAL NUMBER.		ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.	
13	treize	treizième	13th		
14	quatorze	quatorzième	14th		
15	quinze	quinzième	15th	quinzaine	<i>fortnight, &amp;c.</i>
16	seize	seizième	16th		
17	dix-sept	dix-septième	17th		
18	dix-huit	dix-huitième	18th		
19	dix-neuf	dix-neuvième	19th		
20	vingt	vingtième	20th	vingtaine	<i>a score</i>
21	vingt-et-un	{ vingt-et- unième }	21st		
22	vingt-deux	{ vingt-deux- ième, &c. }	22d		
30	trente	trentième	30th	trentaine	{ <i>a score and a half</i> }
31	{ trente-et un, &c. }	{ trente-un- ième }	31st		
40	quarante	quarantième	40th	quarantaine	<i>two score</i>
41	{ quarante- et-un }	{ quarante- unième }	41st		
50	cinquante	cinquantième	50th	{ cinquan- taine }	{ <i>two score &amp; a half</i> }
51	{ cinquante -et-un }	{ cinquante- unième }	51st		
60	soixante	soixantième	60th	soixantaine	<i>three score</i>
61	{ soixante- et un }	{ soixante- unième }	61st		
70	{ soixante- dix }	{ soixante- dixième }	70th		
71	{ soixante- onze }	{ soixante- onzième }	71st		
72	{ soixante- douze, &c. }	{ soixante- douzième }	72d		
80	{ quatre- vingt }	{ quatre- vingtième }	80th		<i>four score</i>
81	{ quatre- vingt-un, &c. }	{ quatre- vingt- unième }	81st		
90	{ quatre- vingt-dix }	{ quatre- vingt- dixième }	90th		
91	{ quatre- vingt- onze }	{ quatre- vingt- onzième }	91st		



CARDINAL NUMBER.		ORDINAL NUMBER.		NUMERICAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS.	
100	cent	centième	100th	1 centaine	1 hundred
101	{ cent-un, &c.	{ cent-unième } &c.	101st		
200	{ deux cents	{ deux-centième }	200th	2 centaines	2 hundred
1000	mille	millième	1000th	1 millier	1 thousand
2000	{ deux mille, &c.	{ deux-millième } &c.	2000th	2 milliers	2 thousand
10,000	{ dix mille,	{ dix-millième }	10,000th	1 myriade	1 myriad
1,000,000	{ mille fois mille	{ millionième }	millionth	1 million	1 million

*Un milliard, or billion, a thousand millions, un trillion, &c.*

The formation of the ordinal number from the cardinal does not require any explanation, except that *-unième* is only found in compound numbers, where *premier* and *second* are inadmissible.

When mentioning the days of the month, the French make use of the cardinal instead of the ordinal number, and say, *le onze d'avril*, not *le onzième*, &c. *le vingt-cinq du mois prochain*, and not *le vingt-cinquième*, &c. except, however, that instead of *l'un du mois*, they say, *le premier*, the first day of, &c. and sometimes *le second*, though not so well, for *le deux*; but this mode proceeds no farther.

*Mille* never takes *s* in the plural, thus, *vingt mille* is twenty thousand, and not *vingt milles*, which would mean twenty miles; and when mentioning the christian

æra, it is customary to curtail this word into *mil*, and to write, for example, *l'an mil huit cent seize*, and never *l'an mille*, &c.

There are many other numerical expressions used in poetry, music, games, &c, as *distique*, *tercet*, *quatrain*, *sixain*, *huitain*, &c. *solo*, *duo*, *trio*, *quatuor*, *quinque*, *quinte*, *octave*, &c. *beset*, *sonnez*, &c.

*Un millier* is very often employed for one thousand weight, but *quintal* is never used except in the sense of one hundred weight.

The distributive numbers are those which express the different parts of a whole: as, *la moitié*, the half; *le quart*, the quarter; *un cinquième*, a fifth, &c.

The proportional denote the progressive increase of things; as, *le double*, the double; *le triple*, treble; *le centuple*, a hundred-fold, &c.

## CHAP. IV.

### OF THE PRONOUN.

A *pronoun* is a word substituted in the place of a noun.

There are several kinds of pronouns, as the *personal*, *possessive*, *relative*, *absolute*, *demonstrative*, and *indefinite*.

#### § I.

#### OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

*Personal Pronouns* are used for the names of persons, or things.

There are three *persons*: the first who speaks; the second who is spoken to; and the third is the person, or thing, spoken of.

## PRONOUNS OF THE FIRST PERSON.

## Singular.

Object.	Subject. je		<i>I</i>	je loue Dieu	<i>I praise God</i>
	me	for	à moi	to me il me donne	he gives me
	me	—	moi	me il me blesse	he hurts me
	moi	—	à moi	to me donnez-moi	give me
	moi	—	moi	me aidez-moi	help me

## Plural.

Subj.	nous		<i>we</i>	nous louons Dieu	<i>we praise God</i>
Obj.	nous	for	à nous	to us il nous donne	he gives us
	nous	—	nous	us il nous blesse	he hurts us

They are both masculine and feminine, that is, of the same gender as the person, or persons, they represent.

In general, *je* and *me* are put before the verb; *moi* after it; and *nous* before, but sometimes likewise after it.

## EXERCISE.

I cast my eyes upon the objects which surrounded me,  
*portai vue f. s. sur objet qui environnaient me,*  
 and saw with pleasure that all was calm and tranquil. Do  
*je vis avec que était calme tranquille \**  
 you not see in all the features of my father that he is  
 3 14 voyez 2 dans trait m. pl. que  
 satisfied with me? We have told the truth. What were  
*content de moi? avons dit vérité f. Que \**  
 they saying of us? If we desire to be happy, we must  
 on 2 disail 1 Si désirons devons 2  
 not deviate from the path of virtue.  
 1 3 nous écarter de sentier m. art.

## PRONOUNS OF THE SECOND PERSON.

## Singular.

Subj.	tu		<i>thou</i>	tu crains Dieu	{ <i>thou fearest</i>
					<i>God</i>
Obj.	te	for	à toi	to thee il te parle	{ <i>he speaks to</i>
	te	—	toi	thee il te voit	<i>thee</i>
	toi	—	à toi	to thee { donne-toi la	{ <i>he sees thee</i>
	toi	—	toi	thee { peine	{ <i>give thyself the</i>
				habille-toi	<i>trouble</i>
					<i>dress thyself</i>

## Plural.

Subj.	vous	{	ye, or you	{	vous louez Dieu	{	you praise God	
Obj.	{	vous	for à vous	to you	{	il vous parle	{	he speaks to you
	{	vous — vous	you		{	il vous respecte	{	he respects you

In general *tu* and *te* are put before the verb; *toi* after; and *vous* before, but sometimes after it.

REMARK. Politeness has led to the use of the plural *vous*, instead of the singular *tu*: as, *vous êtes bien bon*, you are very good, for *tu es bien bon*.

## EXERCISE.

*Thou* art greater than I; and from *thee* I have (at once)  
*es moi toi ai en même 2*  
 learnt humility and wisdom. I (was telling)  
*temps 3 appris 1 art. = f. art. sagesse f. disais*  
*thee* that dancing is to the body what taste is to the mind.  
*te que art. danse f. m. ce que art. m.*  
 You have shown us great talents; when (will you show)  
*avez 2 montré 3 1 de — m. quand montrerez-vous 2*  
 us great virtues? How amiable you are! How good you are  
*1 de f. pl. Que 3 1 êtes 2 3 1 2*  
 to have thought of us! (It was said) of you the other day,  
*de vous être occupé On disait autre jour m.*  
 that you intended to spend a winter in London (in order to)  
*vous vous proposiez de passer m. à — dres pour*  
 see every thing curious which that city presents.  
*voir tout ce = 6 que 1 cette 2 ville 3 offre 4 de 5.*

## PRONOUNS OF THE THIRD PERSON.

## Singular.

Subj.	{	il m.	he	{	il perd son	{	he loses his
	{	elle f.	she	{	temps	{	time
Obj.	{	lui m. for	à lui to him	{	elle travaille	{	she is always at
	{			{	toujours	{	work
	{			{	dites-lui que	{	tell him that I
	{			{	je lui par-	{	will speak to
					lerai		him
					dites lui que		tell her that
					vous lui		you will give
					donnerez		her



## Singular.

Object.	lui m. for	le	him	{ je ne connais	{ I know but
				que lui de	him capa-
				capable	ble
	le m. or	lui	him	je le méprise	I despise him
	la f. —	elle	her	je la respecte	I respect her
	elle f.	elle	her	{ Il ne connaît	{ he knows but
				qu'elle	her
	le m. for	celà	it	{ je ne le savais	{ I did not know
				pas	it

## Plural.

Subject.	ils m. — —	they	ils chantent	{ they sing (gentlemen)
	elles f. — —	they	elles rient	{ they laugh (ladies)
Object.	leur m. for à eux	to them	{ payez leur ce que vous leur devez	{ pay them what you owe to them (to men)
	leur f. for à elles	to them	{ dites-leur, que je désire leur parler	{ tell them that I wish to speak to them (to ladies)
	les m. or eux	them	{ vous les trou- verez	{ you will find them (men)
	les f. or elles	them	il les admire	{ he admires them (ladies)
	eux m. — —	them	{ je ne vois qu'- eux	{ I see but them (gentlemen)
	elles — —	them	{ il ne connaît qu'elles	{ he knows but them (ladies)

All the personal pronouns *je, tu, il, vous, ils, and elle, elles*, when subjects, are put after the verb in interrogations, as,

## Singular.

Subject.	je	I	dois-je payer?	must I pay?
	tu	thou	as-tu dit	hast thou said?
	il	he	{ chante-t-il	{ does he sing
			bien?	well?
	elle	she	{ travaille-t-elle?	{ does she work?

Plural.			
Subject.	nous	we	irons-nous? shall we go?
	vous	you	viendrez-vous? will you come?
	ils m.	they	chantent-ils? do they sing?
	elles f.	they	{ travaillent-elles? } do they work?

*Il, le, ils, eux*, are always masculine: *elle, la, elles*, feminine; and *les, leur*, of both genders, as well as *lui*, when meaning *to him*, or *to her*; in other cases, *lui* exclusively belongs to the masculine.

All personal pronouns, when subjects, are placed before their verbs, except in interrogative sentences, and most of them likewise, when objects precede them, except in the imperative affirmative. But the objective *eux, elles, lui* for *le*, and *moi, toi, soi*, with one exception of this last, in *soi disant*, styling himself, are invariably placed after the verbs by which they are governed.

## EXERCISE.

*He* loved *them*, because *they* were mild, attentive, and  
*aimait* m. *parce que* *doux* =  
 grateful. *He* (was saying) (to *them*,) do you not know  
*reconnaissant.* *disait* \* 3 1 4 *savez* 2  
 that the property of merit is to excite envy? *She*  
*que* *propre* m. art. *mérite* m. *de exciter* art. *envie* f.  
 often exhorted me to the study which is the most useful,  
*souvent* 2 *exhortait* 1 *étude* f. \* \* *utile*  
 that of the human heart. *They* make us love virtue, more  
*celle* 2 m. 1. *font* *aimer* art. f.  
 by their examples than by their words. What has been  
*par leurs exemple* pl. *parole* f. pl. *Que* 1 on 3 a-t-2\*  
 said of *them*? Did they speak of *them*? Do you not see  
*dit* *eux*? \* on 2 *parlait* 1 *elle*? \* 4 1.5 *voyez* 3  
*her*? With what pleasure *she* plays!  
 2 *quel* *joue*!

REFLECTED AND RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS OF THE  
THIRD PERSON.

		Singular.	EXAMPLES.	
Object.	soi	{ with a <i>preposition</i>	chacun tire à soi	{ every one draws to himself
	soi	{ governed by the <i>verb</i>	l'égoïsme fait qu'on ne voit que soi	{ egotism makes a person see none but himself
Object.	se for	{ à soi, à lui-même	il se donne des louanges	{ he give himself praises
	se for	{ à elle-même	elle se fait illusion	{ she imposes on herself
	se for	{ soi, or lui-même	il se perd	{ he ruins himself
	se for	{ soi, or elle-même	elle se flatte	{ she flatters herself.

		Plural.	EXAMPLES.	
Object.	se for	à eux-mêmes	ils s'attribuent la gloire de, &c.	{ they attribute to themselves the glory of, &c.
	se for	à elles-mêmes	elles se prescrivent pour règle de, &c.	{ they prescribe to themselves as a rule to, &c.
	se for	l'un à l'autre	ils s'entredonnent, ou se font des cadeaux	{ they exchange gifts
	se for	eux-mêmes	ils se sont dés-honorés	{ they have disgraced themselves
	se for	elles mêmes	elles se sont flattées	{ they have flattered themselves
	se for	l'un l'autre	ils s'entr'aident	{ they help one another
	se for	{ les uns les autres	{ les rats, dit-on, s'entre-dévo- rent	{ rats, it is said, eat each other.

REMARK. - *Se* is placed before a verb, and *soi*, after a preposition, and sometimes after a verb.

## EXERCISE.

In a thousand instances we do not watch sufficiently over  
*\* mille occasion f. on \* veille assez sur*  
*ourselves.* The glory of the world (passes away) in an instant.  
*soi =f. monde m. s'évanouit en — m.*  
 He gives *himself* (a great deal) of trouble. She tires *herself*.  
*donne se beaucoup peine f. lasse se*  
 People should (very seldom) speak of *themselves*. Virtue is  
*On doit rarement parler soi art. f.*  
 amiable in *itself*. We must take upon *ourselves* the care  
*de soi On doit prendre sur soi soin m.*  
 of our own affairs.  
*ses propre affaire f. pl.*

OF THE PRONOUN RELATIVE *en*.

EN for	de lui	of him	{	cet homme vous plaît, vous en parlez sou- vent	{	that man pleases you, you speak of him often
	d'elle	of her	{	je ne crois pas cette femme sincère, je m' en méfie	{	I do not believe that woman sin- cere, I distrust her
	d'eux	of them	{	ces fruits parais- sent bons, j'en mangerais vo- lontiers	{	these fruits look good, I should like to eat some of them.
	d'elles	of them	{	voilà de belles oranges, vou- lez-vous m'en donner?	{	these are beautiful oranges, will you give me some
	de celà	of that	{	on ne m'a pas trompé, j'en suis sûr	{	I have not been imposed upon, I am sure of it
	d'ici	hence	{	il arriva ici, comme j'en parlais	{	he arrived here as I was set- ting off from hence
	de là	thence	{	vous allez à Pa- ris, et monsi- eur en vient	{	you are going to Paris, this gen- tleman comes from thence.



OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUN, OR ADVERB *y*.

Y for	à lui to him	{ c'est un honnête homme, fiez-vous- <i>y</i>	{ he is an honest man, trust to him.
	à elle to her	{ cette raison est solide, je m'y rends	{ that reason is good, I yield to it.
	à eux to them	{ ces argumens sont pressans, je n'y vois point de réplique	{ these arguments are cogent, I see no reply to them.
	à elles to them	{ accablé de vos civilités, je ne sais comment <i>y</i> répondre	{ loaded with your civilities, I do not know how to acknowledge them.
	à cela to it	{ j'ai éprouvé cette perte quand j'y pensais le moins	{ I experienced that loss, when I least thought of it.
	ici here	{ nous partons de Londres, quand vous <i>y</i> venez	{ we set off from London, when you came hither.
	là there	{ c'est un endroit charmant, je compte m'y fixer	{ It is a fine place, I intend to settle there.

REMARK. *Y* and *en* are always put before the verb, except with the imperative affirmative.

## EXERCISE.

They speak (a great deal) of it. You like French  
*On parle beaucoup* aimez art. Français 2  
 authors, you are always speaking of them. That is a delicate  
*auteur* 1 \* 2 *parlez* 1 *Ce délicat* 2  
 affair; the success of it is doubtful. See them; I consent  
 = f. 1 *succès* m. *douteux* *Voyez* 1 *consens* 3  
 to it, but do not trust them. That is a fine appoint-  
 2 \* 1 5 *vous* 2 *fiez* 4 *y* 3 *Ce charge*  
 ment: he had long aspired to it. He has done  
 f. \* *depuis long-temps* 3 —rait 2 1 *a fait*  
 it; but he will get nothing by it.  
*ne* 1 *gagnera* 3 *rien* 4 *y* 2

## § II.

## OF POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

These pronouns are adjectives, which denote the possessions of things. When we say, *mon habit*, my coat; *votre maison*, your house; *son jardin*, his or her garden; it is the same as saying *l'habit qui est à moi*, the coat which belongs to me; *la maison qui est à vous*, the house which belongs to you; *le jardin qui est à lui*, or *à elle*, the garden which belongs to him or to her.

Of these pronominal adjectives, *some* always agree with a noun *expressed*, and *the others* with a noun *understood*; hence there are *two sorts* of possessive pronouns.

Of those that always agree with a noun *expressed*, some relate to *one* person, and others to *several*.

## PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES RELATING TO ONE PERSON.

PERSON.	Singular.		Plural.	
for the	1st	<i>mon, m.</i>	<i>ma, f.</i>	<i>mes, m. f.</i>
	2d	<i>ton, m.</i>	<i>ta, f.</i>	<i>tes, m. f.</i>
	3d	<i>son, m.</i>	<i>sa, f.</i>	<i>ses, m. f.</i>
				<i>my</i>
				<i>thy</i>
				<i>his, her, its</i>

## PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES RELATING TO MANY PERSONS.

PERSON.	Singular.		Plural.	
of the	1st	<i>notre, m. f.</i>	<i>nos, m. f.</i>	<i>our</i>
	2d	<i>votre, m. f.</i>	<i>vos, m. f.</i>	<i>your</i>
	3d	<i>leur, m. f.</i>	<i>leur, m. f.</i>	<i>their</i>

N. B. These possessive pronouns in French always agree in gender and number with the object *possessed*, and not with the *possessor*, as in English, for which reason they must be repeated before every noun.

## EXAMPLES.

Mon père, ma mère, et mes frères, sont à la campagne avec vos amis et leurs enfans.

Mon cousin est allé consoler sa sœur, qui a perdu son fils.

My father, mother, and brothers, are in the country, with your friends and their children.

My cousin is gone to visit and console his sister, who has lost her son.

*Mon, ton, son*, are also used before a noun feminine, when beginning with a vowel, or *h* mute; thus, *mon âme*, my soul; *ton humeur*, thy humour; *son amitié*, his friendship; must be said instead of *ma âme*, *ta humeur*, *sa amitié*.

## EXERCISE.

*My principles, my love of retirement, my taste*  
 — *pe goût m. pour art. retraite f. amour m.*  
 for (every thing) that (is connected) with learning, and  
*tout ce qui tient à art. instruction,*  
*my detestation of all spirit of party, (every thing) has*  
*haine f. h. asp. pour esprit parti tout a*  
 induced me to prefer a life passed in the closet, to the  
*porté préférer \* art. vie f. \* de \* cabinet*  
 active life of the world. Do not think, my daughter, that thy  
 = 2 f. 1 in. \* *pense que*  
*candour, thy ingenuousness, thy taste, so delicate and so*  
 = f. *ingénuité f. m. — cat*  
 refined, and even thy graces, can shelter thee from  
*fin même — puissent mettre à l'abri de*  
 censure. His wit, his talents, his honesty,  
 art. — f. *esprit m. — m. honnêteté f. h. m.*  
 and even his (good nature) make him beloved by every body.  
*même bonhomie f. font aimer de tout le monde.*  
*Our constancy and our efforts will (at last) surmount all*  
 = f. — m. \* *enfin 2 surmonteront 1*  
 obstacles. I see nothing that can (be cen-  
 art. — m. pl. *vois 2 ne 1 rien 3 que on puisse re-*  
 sured) in your conduct. Their taste for the fantastical, the  
*prendre dans conduite f. pour bizarre, m.*  
 monstrous, and the marvellous, gives to all their compo-  
*monstrueux, m. merveilleux, m. donne —*  
 sitions, although very fine in themselves, an air of deformity,  
 f. *quoique en elles-mêmes, — m. difformité f.*  
 which shocks at first sight.  
*qui choque à art. coup-d'œil.*

Of the pronouns, which always agree with nouns understood, some relate to one person, and others to several persons.

Those which relate only to one person are :

	m. Sing.	f. Sing.	m. Plur.	f. Plur.	
1st.	<i>Le mien,</i>	<i>la mienne,</i>	<i>les miens,</i>	<i>les miennes,</i>	mine
2d.	<i>Le tien,</i>	<i>la tienne,</i>	<i>les tiens,</i>	<i>les tiennes,</i>	thine
3d.	<i>Le sien,</i>	<i>la sienne,</i>	<i>les siens</i>	<i>les siennes,</i>	his, her, his

Those which relate to several persons are :

	m. Sing.	f. Sing.	Pl. of both Gen.
1st. <i>Le nôtre,</i>	<i>la nôtre,</i>	<i>les nôtres,</i>	<i>ours</i>
2d. <i>Le vôtre,</i>	<i>la vôtre,</i>	<i>les vôtres,</i>	<i>yours</i>
3d. <i>Le leur,</i>	<i>la leur,</i>	<i>les leurs,</i>	<i>theirs</i>

N. B. The real use of these pronouns is to spare the repetition of the nouns, which have been expressed a little before.

### EXAMPLE.

*Avez-vous toujours votre cheval ? je n' ai plus le mien.*      Have you still your horse ? I have disposed of mine.

### EXERCISE.

Is it your temper or hers, that hinders you from living well together ? If it be yours, it is easy for you to remedy it, by mastering (your temper); if it be hers, redouble your complaisance, attention, and good behaviour: it is very seldom that this method (proves unsuccessful). If my friends had served me with the same zeal as yours, it is very certain that I (should have) succeeded: but yours have been all fire, and mine all ice. All the pictures which we expected from Rome are arrived: there are some that are a little damaged; but yours, his, and mine, are in good condition. We know perfectly well what are your amusements in town, and I assure you we are very far from envying you them; but if you knew ours in the country, it (is most likely) you (would not be long) in giving them the preference. You have opened your heart to me with that noble frankness  
*ce humeur f. qui empêche de vivre ensemble ce est il 1 aisé \* 2 de porter remède y en prenant sur vous-même ; ce redoublez de \* de — de procédé m. pl. il très-rare ce moyen ne réussisse pas Si avaient servi même-zèle m. que très -sûr aurais réussi ont été de de glace. tableau m. que attendions arrivés il y en a qui peu endommagés en*  
*état m. savons parfaitement \* quels amusements in town, and I assure you we are very far from envying you them; but if you knew ours in the country, it (is most likely) you sont à campagne f. il y a toute apparence que (would not be long) in giving them the preference. You ne tarderiez pas à donner leur — f. avez ouvert — franchise f.*



which so well becomes an honest man: this confidence well  
*qui si 23 sied 1 à honnête confiance f. 2*  
 deserves mine.  
*mérite 1.*

REMARK. When through politeness *vous* is used for *tu*, then *votre*, *vos*, must take the place of *ton*, *ta*, *tes*, and *le vôtre*, *la vôtre*, *les vôtres*, be used for *le tien*, *la tienne*, *les tiens*, *les tiennes*.

## EXAMPLES.

*Que vous ressemblez peu à voê*s How little you resemble your  
*ancêtres!* ancestors!

*Quand vous aurez entendu* When you have heard our  
*nos raisons, nous écouterons les* reasons, we will listen to yours.  
*vôtres.*

## § III.

## OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

*Relative pronouns* are those which relate to a preceding noun, or pronoun, called *the antecedent*. In the phrase, *l'homme qui joue*, the man who plays; *qui* relates to the substantive *homme*; *l'homme* is then the *antecedent* to the pronoun relative *qui*.

<i>Qui</i>	{ who	<i>Dieu qui voit tout</i>	{ God <i>who</i> sees every thing
	{ which	<i>les chevaux qui courent</i>	{ the horses <i>which</i> are running
<i>Que</i>	{ whom	<i>l'homme que vous</i>	{ the man <i>whom</i> you seek
	{ which	<i>cherchez les lois que nous observons</i>	{ the laws <i>which</i> we observe
<i>Dont</i> or <i>de qui</i>	{ of which	<i>l'insulte dont vous vous plaignez</i>	{ the insult <i>of which</i> you complain
	{ whose	<i>la nature dont nous ignorons les secrets</i>	{ nature <i>whose</i> secrets are unknown to us
	{ of whom	<i>les gens de qui vous parlez</i>	{ the people <i>of whom</i> you speak
<i>Lequel</i> <i>Laquelle</i>	{ which	<i>c'est une condition sans laquelle il ne veut rien faire</i>	{ it is a condition, without <i>which</i> he will do nothing -
		<i>ceux auxquels il s'est adressé, ont refusé de le défendre</i>	{ those <i>to whom</i> he applied, refused to protect him
<i>Auxquels</i> <i>Auxquelles</i>	{ to whom		

<i>Quoi</i>	{	what	{	<i>ce sont des choses à</i>	{	these are things of
				<i>quoi vous ne pensez pas</i>		<i>which</i> you do not think
	{	which	{	<i>la cause, pourquoi on l'a arrêté, est connue</i>	{	the reason why he was arrested, is known

*Qui*, *que*, and *dont*, are of both genders and both numbers.

*Lequel* is a compound of *quel*, and the article *le*, *la*, *les*, with which it coalesces in the following manner :

Singular.		Plural.		
<i>lequel</i>	<i>laquelle</i>	<i>lesquels</i>	<i>lesquelles</i>	which
<i>duquel</i>	<i>de laquelle</i>	<i>desquels</i>	<i>desquelles</i>	of which
<i>auquel</i>	<i>à laquelle</i>	<i>auxquels</i>	<i>auxquelles</i>	to which

This pronoun always agrees in gender and number with its antecedent. *Quoi*, which sometimes supplies its place, is always governed by a preposition.

#### § IV.

#### OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.

*Pronouns absolute* are those which have no relation to an antecedent. They are the five following :

<i>Qui</i>	{	who	{	<i>je vous dirai qui l'a fait</i>	{	I will tell you <i>who</i> has done it
		whom		<i>vous pouvez consulter qui vous voudrez</i>		you may consult <i>whom</i> you please
		whom		<i>qui consulterez-vous ?</i>		<i>whom</i> will you consult ?
<i>Que</i>	{	what	{	<i>il ne sait que résoudre</i>	{	he does not know on <i>what</i> to determine
		what		<i>que ferez-vous ?</i>		<i>what</i> will you do ?
<i>Quoi</i>	{	what	{	<i>en quoi puis-je vous servir ?</i>	{	in <i>what</i> can I serve you ?
		what		<i>il y a là je ne sais quoi d'obscur</i>		there is in it, I do not know <i>what</i> obscurity

<i>Quel</i>	what	{ quelle instabilité dans les choses humaines!	{ what instability in human affairs?
	what	{ il ne sait quel parti prendre	{ he does not know what resolution to take
<i>Lequel</i>	which	{ lequel aimez-vous le mieux de ces ta- bleaux?	{ which do you pre- fer of those pic- tures?
	which	{ je sais bien lequel je choisirais	{ I know well which I would choose

*Qui* applies only to persons. *Que* and *quoi* to things.

*Quel*, masc. *quelle*, fem. sing. *quels*, m. *quelles*, f. pl. always precede a substantive, the gender and number of which they take.

*Lequel*, *duquel*, *auquel*, &c. are used to mark a distinction between several objects.

### § V.

#### OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS, &c.

*Demonstrative pronouns* are those which point, as it were, to the objects spoken of. These are,

Singular.			Plural.		
masc.	fem.		masc.	fem.	
ce, cet*	cette	this, or that	ces	ces	these, or those
celui	celle	this, or that	ceux	celles	these, or those
celui-ci	celle-ci	this	ceux-ci	celles-ci	these
celui-là	celle-là	that	ceux-là	celles-là	those
ceci	—	this	these have no plural.		
celà	—	that			

*m.	{	CE before a consonant	CE livre	this book
	{	CE before an <i>h</i> aspirated	CE héros	that hero
	{	CET before a vowel	CET enfant	this child
	{	CET before an <i>h</i> mute	CET homme	that man
f.		CETTE before any feminine noun	CETTE femme	that woman

CE { when without a noun, } as { *qui est-ce ?* } who is it ?  
 { intimates a person, or } { *ce que je vous* } what I tell you  
 { thing spoken of } { *dis est vrai* } is true

## EXERCISE.

Nothing is so opposite to *that* true eloquence, the office  
*ne 2 rien 1 opposé véritable —f. fonc-*  
 (of which) is to ennoble (every thing,) as the use  
*tion f.2 1 de 1 ennoblir 3 tout 2 \* que emploi m.*  
 of those refined thoughts, and hunting after those light,  
*fin 2 pensée f. 1. art. recherche f. de léger 2*  
 airy, unsolid ideas, which, like a leaf of  
*délié 2 sans consistance 4 idée f. 1 comme feuille f.*  
 beaten metal, acquire brightness only by losing  
*battu 2— m. 1 ne prennent de art. éclat m. que en perdant*  
 part of their solidity. This man has nothing in common  
*\* \* art. = f. h m. de commun*  
 with *that* hero. This long restrained hatred broke  
*h asp. 1 long-temps 3 contenu 4 haine f. 2 éclata*  
 out, and was the unhappy source of those dreadful events.  
*fut malheureux —f. terrible évène-*  
*ment m. pl. Ce It is a great pleasure to me. It was a great*  
*pain to us. plaisir m. \* fut*  
*déplaisir m. \* nous.*

## § VI.

## OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

*Indefinite pronouns* are those which are of a vague and indeterminate nature.

They are of four sorts.

## FIRST CLASS.

*Those that are never joined to a substantive.*

ON { one on aime à se flatter } one is apt to flatter one's  
 { a man } on n'est pas toujours } self  
 { maître de soi } a man is not always mas-  
 { ter of his own temper.



ON	a woman	{ on n'est pas toujours maîtresse d'aller où* l'on veut }	{ it is not always in the power of a wo- man to go where she wishes }
	somebody	{ on frappe à la porte }	{ somebody knocks at the door }
	people	{ on pense et * l'on dit tout haut }	{ people think and say openly }
	they	{ on raconte diversement cette histoire }	{ they relate that sto- ry differently }
	we	{ on acquiert l'expéri- ence à ses dépens }	{ we acquire experi- ence at our own expense }
	you	{ on trouve partout des importuns }	{ you will find trou- blesome people every where }
	I	{ on prévient qu'on n'a point eu l'intention de, &c. }	{ I beg to observe that I had no intention to, &c. }
	I	{ Quand on vous dit que * l'on compte sur vous }	{ when I tell you that I depend upon you }
	they	{ si * l'on vous blâme et si * on le loue, on a tort }	{ if they blame you and praise him, they are wrong }

Quelqu'un	{ one somebody some one }	{ quelqu'un m'a dit, somebody told me. }
Quiconque	{ whoever whosoever }	{ quiconque connaît les hommes, ap- prend à s'en défier, whoever knows mankind, learns to dis- trust them. }
Chacun	{ each every one }	{ chacun s'en plaint, every one complains of him. }

* In- stead of	{ et on } it is better for euphony to { ou on } part these words with { si on } an l' }	thus	{ et l'on } when the next word does not { ou l'on } begin with an l, as is seen by { si l'on } the examples
and * In- stead of	{ les habitudes qu'on contracte ce après quoi on court quoiqu'on croie un homme à qui on reproche }	say rather	{ les habitudes que l'on con- tracte ce après quoi l'on court bien que l'on croie un homme à qui l'on re- proche }

<i>Autruï</i>	{ other people	{ <i>n'enviez pas le bien d'autrui</i> , do not covet the property of others. <i>ne faites pas à autrui ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu'on vous fit</i> , do not do to others what you would not have done to you.
	{ others	
<i>Personne</i>	{ nobody	{ <i>la fierté ne convient à personne</i> , pride becomes nobody. <i>rien ne lui plaît</i> , nothing pleases him.
	{ no one	
<i>Rien</i>	{ nothing	{ <i>y a-t-il rien qui puisse lui plaire ?</i> is there any thing that can please him?
	{ not any thing	
	{ any thing	

## EXERCISE.

If you (behave yourself) (in that manner,) what will people  
*vous conduisez* *ainsi* \* on 2  
say of you? *It* (is thought) that this news is true.  
*dira-t l* *On croit* nouvelle f.  
*They* write me word from Ispahan that thou hast left  
*écrit* \* — *as quitté* art.  
Persia, and art now at Paris. *One* cannot read  
*Perse* f. *que tu es actuellement à* *ne peut lire*  
Telemachus, without becoming better: we there find (every  
*Télémaque* m. *sans devenir meilleur*, on y trouve par-  
where) a mild philosophy, noble and elevated sentiments: we  
*tout doux* =f. *des—2 élève* 3. —1  
there find in every line the effusions of a noble soul, and we  
*y voit à chaque ligne épanchement* m. *beau* f.  
admire precepts calculated to effect the happiness of  
*des précepte* pl. *propre* *faire* *bonheur* m.  
the world.  
*monde* m.

## SECOND CLASS.

*Those which are always joined to a substantive.*

<i>Quelque</i>	some	{ <i>si cela était vrai, quelque historien en aurait parlé</i> , if that were true, some historian would have mentioned it.
<i>Chaque</i>	each, every	
<i>Quelconque</i>	{ whoever { whatever	{ <i>à chaque jour suffit sa peine</i> , the trouble of each day is sufficient of itself. { <i>il n'y a raison quelconque qui puisse l'y obliger</i> , no reason whatever can oblige him to it.

<i>Certain</i>	{ certain some	{ <i>certain homme</i> , a certain man. <i>certaines nouvelles</i> , some news.
<i>Un</i>	a, an	{ <i>j'ai vu un homme</i> , I saw a man; <i>prenez une orange</i> , take an orange.

## THIRD CLASS.

*Those which are sometimes joined to a substantive, and sometimes not.*

<i>Nul</i>	no, none	{ <i>nulle raison</i> peut le convaincre, no reason can convince him; <i>nul d'eux</i> ne l'a rencontré, not one of them has met him.
<i>Pas un</i>	no, not one	{ <i>il n'y a pas une erreur</i> dans cet ouvrage, there is no error in that work; <i>pas un</i> ne le dit, not one says so.
<i>Aucun</i>	no, none	{ <i>je ne connais aucun</i> de vos juges, I know none of your judges; <i>il n'a fait aucune difficulté</i> , he has made no difficulty.
<i>Autre</i>	other	{ <i>servez-vous d'une autre</i> expression, make use of another expression; <i>je vous prenais pour un autre</i> , I took you for another.
<i>Même</i>	same	{ <i>c'est le même homme</i> que je vis hier, he is the same man I saw yesterday; <i>cet homme n'est plus le même</i> , that man is no longer the same.
<i>Tel</i>	{ such like	{ <i>il tint à peu près un tel discours</i> , he delivered nearly such a discourse; <i>je ne vis jamais rien de tel</i> , I never saw any thing like it.
<i>Plusieurs</i>	{ several many	{ <i>il est arrivé plusieurs vaisseaux</i> , several vessels are arrived; <i>il ne faut pas que plusieurs pâtissent pour un seul</i> , many must not suffer for one.
<i>Tout</i>	{ all every every thing	{ <i>tous les êtres créés</i> , all created beings; <i>tout disparaît devant Dieu</i> , every thing vanishes before God.

## FOURTH CLASS.

*Of those which are followed by QUE.*

<i>Qui que</i>	whoever	{ <i>qui que tu sois</i> , whoever thou may- est be ; <i>qui que ce soit</i> , whoever it may be. <i>quoi que se soit</i> , whatever it may be ; <i>quoi que vous disiez</i> , whatever you may say.
<i>Quoi que</i>	whatever	{ <i>quel que soit cet homme</i> , whoever that man may be ; <i>quel que soit votre courage</i> , whatever your courage may be.
<i>Quel que</i>	{ whoever whatever	{ <i>cette étoffe est telle que vous la vou-</i> <i>lez</i> , this stuff is such as you wish for.
<i>Tel que</i>	such as	{ <i>quelque raison que vous donniez</i> , whatever reason you may give. <i>quelque puissant que vous soyez</i> , how- ever powerful you may be.
<i>Quelque— que</i>	{ whatever however	{ <i>tout savant qu'il est</i> , however learned he may be.
<i>Tout—que</i>	however	

## CHAP. V.

## OF THE VERB.

The *Verb* is a word, the chief use of which is to express affirmation: it has persons, moods, and tenses.

In the phrase *la vertu est aimable*, virtue is amiable, it is affirmed that the quality *aimable*, belongs to *la vertu*; likewise in this sentence, *le vice n'est pas aimable*, vice is not amiable, it is affirmed that the quality *aimable*, does not belong to *le vice*; the word *est* expresses this affirmation.

That concerning which we affirm, or deny a thing, is called the *subject*, and what is affirmed, or denied, is called its *attribute*. In the two preceding sentences, *vertu* and *vice* are subjects of the verb *est*, and *aimable* is the attribute affirmed respecting the one, and denied with respect to the other.



There are in verbs *two numbers*, the singular and plural, and in each number *three persons*.

- 1 { The first person is that who speaks; it is designated by *je*, I, in the singular, and by *nous*, we, in the plural; as, *je pense*, I think; *nous pensons*, we think.
- 2 { The second is the person spoken to, expressed by *tu*, thou, in the singular, and by *vous*, you, in the plural; as, *tu penses*, thou thinkest; *vous pensez*, you think.
- 3 { The third is the person spoken of, known by *il*, he, or *elle*, she, in the singular, and by *ils*, or *elles*, they, in the plural; as, *il*, or *elle pense*, he, or she thinks; *ils*, or *elles pensent*, they think.

All substantives, either common, or proper, are of the third person, when not addressed, or spoken to.

- REM. { A word is known to be a *verb*, when it admits the personal pronouns; thus, *finir*, to finish, is a verb, because we can say, *je finis*, *tu finis*, *il*, or *elle finit*, &c.

There are *five moods*, or modes of conjugating verbs.

- 1 { The *infinitive mood* affirms, in an indefinite manner, without either number, or person; as, *aimer*, to love; *avoir aimé*, to have loved.
- 2 { The *indicative* simply indicates and asserts a thing in a direct manner; as, *j'aime*, I love; *il aime*, he loved.
- 3 { The *conditional* affirms a thing with a condition, as, *j'aimerais*, *si*, &c., I should love, if, &c.
- 4 { The *imperative* is used for commanding, exhorting, requesting, or reproving; as, *aime*, love (thou); *aimons*, let us love.
- 5 { The *subjunctive* subjects a thing to what precedes; as, *vous voulez*, *qu'il aime*, you wish that he may love; *que nous aimions*, that we may love.

There are three tenses, the *present*, which declares a thing now existing, or doing, as, *je lis*, I read; the *past*, or *preterit*, denoting that the thing has been done, as, *j'ai lu*, I have read; the *future*, denoting that the thing will be done, as, *je lirai*, I shall read. But these are subdivided, so that there are several preterit, and two future tenses.

There are five kinds of verbs, the *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, *pronominal*, and *impersonal*.

The *verb active* is that which expresses an action, the object of which is either declared, or understood. *Aimer*, to love, is a verb active, as it expresses an action, the object of which may be *quelqu'un*, some person, or *quelque chose*, some thing; as, *aimer Dieu*, to love God; *aimer l'étude*, to love study. The object of this action is called the *regimen*, or *government* of the verb active.

N.B. { A simple question will show this *regimen*, as,  
*qu'est-ce que j'aime?* what do I love? answer,  
*Dieu*, God. *Dieu* is then the regimen of the  
verb *j'aime*.

In the French language, the *passive verbs* are supplied by the verb *être*, as they are in English by the verb *to be*, and the participle past of the verb active followed by the preposition *de*, or *par*, the subject and regimen of the verb active being reversed. Thus, to change the verbs from active to passive in these sentences, *mon père m'aime*, my father loves me; *le milan a enlevé le canari*, the kite has carried off the canary; they must be reversed in this way, *je suis aimé de mon père*, I am loved by my father: *le canari a été enlevé par le milan*, the canary has been carried off by the kite.

The *verb neuter*, is that which has no direct regimen, as the verb *active* has. *Aller*, to go; *marcher*, to walk, are verbs neuter, because we cannot say, *aller quelqu'un*, to go somebody; *marcher quelque chose*, to walk something. *Plaire*, to please, is likewise a verb neuter, as we cannot say in French *plaire quelqu'un*, to please somebody, but *plaire à quelqu'un*.

The *pronominal verbs* are those in which each person is conjugated through all the tenses, with a double personal pronoun.

as {	<i>je me,</i>	I myself	<i>nous nous</i>	we ourselves
	<i>tu te,</i>	thou thyself	<i>vous vous</i>	{ you yourself
	<i>il se,</i>	he himself	<i>ils se</i>	{ or ye yourselves
	<i>elle se,</i>	she herself	<i>ellesse</i>	{ they themselves

There are four sorts of *pronominal verbs*.

1 { The *pronominal verb active*, when the action of the verb falls upon the subject, as, *je me flatte*, I flatter myself; *il se loue*, he praises himself. Almost all the active verbs are susceptible of being reflected.

2 { The *pronominal verb neuter*, which indicates only a state, a disposition of the subject, as, *se repentir*, to repent, *se désister*, to desist, *s'enfuir*, to run away.

3 { The *reciprocal verb* expresses a reciprocity of action between two or more subjects, and consequently has no singular: such are *s'entr'aider*, to help one another, *s'entre-donner*, to give each other.

4 { The *pronominal verb impersonal* is only used in the third person singular. Active verbs frequently assume this form, in a passive sense, for the sake of brevity and energy; as, *il se bâtit*, there is building; *il se faisait*, there was doing; *il se conclut*, there was concluded; *il s'est dit*, it has been said; *il se donnera une grande bataille*, a great battle will be fought.

The *impersonal verb* is only used in the third person singular, with the pronoun *il*, and has no relation to any person or thing. *Neiger*, to snow, is an impersonal verb, as it cannot be applied to any person or thing: *il neige*, it snows, *il neigeait*, it did snow.

Though the greatest part of the French verbs are re-

gular, there are, however, as in other languages, some that are *irregular*, and others that are *defective*. Regular verbs are those which are conjugated conformably to a general standard. Irregular verbs are those which do not conform to the verb employed as a model; and defective verbs are those which, in certain tenses or persons, are not used.

## OF CONJUGATIONS.

To conjugate a verb is to rehearse it with all its different inflections.

The French have four conjugations, which are easily distinguished by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

The	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{FIRST} \\ \text{SECOND} \\ \text{THIRD} \\ \text{FOURTH} \end{array} \right\}$	ends in	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} -er \\ -ir \\ -oir \\ -re \end{array} \right.$	as, parler, aimer, chanter, donner, &c.
				as, finir, sentir, ouvrir, tenir, &c.
				as, recevoir, apercevoir, devoir, &c.
				as, rendre, plaie, paroître, reduire, joindre, &c.

The French, like most modern nations, not having a sufficient number of inflections in their verbs to represent the great variety of their tenses, supply this deficiency with two auxiliary verbs, *avoir* and *être*, to have and to be.

Those tenses in a verb whose inflections are derived pure and unmixed from the parent stock, are called *simple tenses*, and are always in French expressed by a *single word*. But the *tenses* which are formed by the union of those of the verbs *avoir*, or *être*, with a participle past, are called *compound*, and necessarily consist of not less than *two* or *three* words. Thus, *avoir*, *j'ai*, *j'avais*, *j'eus*, &c. *parler*, *je parle*, *je parlais*, &c. are simple tenses; but *avoir eu*, *j'ai eu*, *j'eus eu*, *j'avais eu*, *avoir parlé*, *j'ai parlé*, *j'eus parlé*, *j'ai eu parlé*, &c. are compound tenses.



CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *Avoir*, TO HAVE.

INFINITIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

COMPOUND TENSES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

avoir *to have*

avoir eu *to have had*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

PAST.

ayant *having*

ayant eu *having had*

eu, *m. eue, f. had*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE, OR COMPOUND  
OF THE PRESENT.

j'ai	<i>I have</i>	j'ai	} eu {	<i>I have</i>	} <i>had</i>
tu as	<i>thou hast</i>	tu as		<i>thou hast</i>	
il, or elle a	<i>he, or she has</i>	il a		<i>he has</i>	
nous avons	<i>we have</i>	nous avons		<i>we have</i>	
vous avez	<i>you have</i>	vous avez		<i>you have</i>	
ils, or elles ont	<i>they have</i>	ils ont		<i>they have</i>	

EXERCISE.

REM. { In the following exercises, the substantive being taken in a partitive sense, it will be necessary to use the article, according to the direction given, page 86.

PRESENT.—I have books. Thou hast friends. He has *livre ami*

honesty. She has sweetness. We have credit. You have *honnêteté f. h m douceur f. — m.*

riches. They have virtues. They have modesty. *richesse pl. m. vertu f. = f.*

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I have had pleasure. Thou hast had *plaisir m.*

gold. He has had patience. She has had beauty. We have *or m. — f. = f.*

had honours. You have had friendship. They have had *honneur amitié f. m.*

sentiments. They have had sensibility. *— f. = f.*

IMPERFECT.—I had ambition. Thou hadst wealth. He had *bien m.*

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## IMPERFECT.

PLUPERFECT, or COMPOUND OF THE  
IMPERFECT.

j'avais	<i>I had, or did j'avais</i>	} eu	<i>I had</i>	} had
	<i>have</i>			
tu avais	<i>thou hadst, or tu avais</i>		<i>thou hadst</i>	
	<i>didst have</i>			
il avait	<i>he had, or did il avait</i>		<i>he had</i>	
	<i>have</i>			
nous avions	<i>we had, or did nous avions</i>		<i>we had</i>	
	<i>have</i>			
vous aviez	<i>you had, or did vous aviez</i>		<i>you had</i>	
	<i>have</i>			
ils avaient	<i>they had, or ils avaient</i>		<i>they had</i>	
	<i>did have</i>			

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

PRETERIT ANTERIOR, or COMPOUND  
OF THE PRETERIT.

j'eus	<i>I had</i>	j'eus	} eu	<i>I had</i>	} had
tu eus	<i>thou hadst</i>	tu eus		<i>thou hadst</i>	
il eut	<i>he had</i>	il eut		<i>he had</i>	
nous eûmes	<i>we had</i>	nous eûmes		<i>we had</i>	
vous eûtes	<i>you had</i>	vous eûtes		<i>you had</i>	
ils eurent	<i>they had</i>	ils eurent		<i>they had</i>	

sincerity. She had grapes. We had oranges. You had pears.  
= f. — — poire

They had apples. They had lemons.  
m. pomme f. citron.

PLUPERFECT.—I had had apricots. Thou hadst had nectarines.  
*abricot brugnion*  
He had had walnuts. She had had hazel-nuts. We had had  
*noix noisette*  
chestnuts. You had had figs. They had had medlars. They  
*châtaigne figue m. nèfle f.*  
had had filberts.  
*aveline.*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—I had plums. Thou hadst cherries.  
*prune cerise*  
He had strawberries. She had pine-apples. We had almonds.  
*fraise ananas amande*  
You had currants. They had raspberries. They had  
*groseille m. framboise f.*  
grapes.  
*raisin m. pl.*

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

j'aurai	<i>I shall, or will have</i>	j'aurai	} eu {	<i>I shall or will have</i>	} had
tu auras	<i>thou shalt, or will have</i>	tu auras		<i>thou wilt have</i>	
il aura	<i>he will have</i>	il aura		<i>he will have</i>	
nous aurons	<i>we shall have</i>	nous aurons		<i>we shall have</i>	
vous aurez	<i>you shall have</i>	vous aurez		<i>you will have</i>	
ils auront	<i>they will have</i>	ils auront		<i>they will have</i>	

REM. { In the following exercises, the addition of an adjective, after the substantive, will make no change in the remark on the preceding exercise.

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—I had had very black ink. Thou  
*fort 2 noir 3 encre f. 1.*  
hadst had honest proceedings. She had had uncommon  
*honnête 2 procédé 1 rare 2*  
graces. We had had very ripe grapes. You had had exquisite  
*1. 2 mûr 3 1. exquis 2*  
melons. They had had ready money.  
—m. 1. *comptant 2 argent m. 1.*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall have studious pupils. Thou  
*appliqué 2 élève m. 1.*  
wilt have horrid pains. He will have ridiculous ideas.  
*horrible 2 peine f. 1. ridicule 2 idée f. 1.*  
We shall have useless cares. You will have true and real  
*inutile 2 soin m. 1. 2 réel 3*  
pleasures. They will have poignant griefs.  
m. 1. *cuisant 2 chagrin m. 1.*

REM. { But if the adjective precedes the substantive, then *de*, or *d'* only is to be used.

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—I shall have had good paper. Thou  
*papier m.*  
wilt have had excellent fruit. She will have had charming  
m. pl. *charmant*  
flowers. We shall have had good pens. You will have had  
*fleurs f. plume f.*

## CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

PRESENT.		PAST, or COMPOUND OF THE CONDITIONAL.	
j'aurais	<i>I should, could, j'aurais or would have</i>	} eu {	<i>I should have</i>
tu aurais	<i>thou should'st tu aurais have</i>		<i>thou should- est have</i>
il aurait	<i>he should have il aurait</i>		<i>he should have</i>
nous aurions	<i>we should have nous aurions</i>		<i>we should have</i>
vous auriez	<i>you should have vous auriez</i>		<i>you should have</i>
ils auraient	<i>they should have ils auraient</i>		<i>they should have</i>

large buildings. They will have had fine clothes.  
*grand bâtiment m. superbe habit m.*

PRESENT OF THE CONDITIONAL.—I should have fine engravings. *gravure*  
 Thou should'st have pretty playthings. He should  
*f. joli joujou m.*  
 have immense treasures. We should have beautiful pictures.  
 — *trésor m. tableau m.*  
 You would have pretty houses. They should have long conversations.  
*f.*

REM. { The preceding remark holds good likewise  
 after a word expressing quantity, such as *beaucoup*, a great deal, great many; *peu*, little, few;  
*plus*, more; *moins*, less; *trop*, too much, too  
 many, &c. except *bien*, much, many, which re-  
 quires *du, de la, de l', des*.

CONDITIONAL PAST.—I should have had a great deal of trouble.  
*peine f.*  
 Thou would'st have had more pleasure. He would have  
*de*  
 had (a vast deal) of knowledge. We should have had more  
*infiniment connaissance f. pl.*  
 opportunities of succeeding. You would certainly  
*de occasion f. pl. réussir certainement*



N. B. { *J'eusse eu, tu eusses eu, il eût eu, nous eussions eu, vous eussiez eu, ils eussent eu*, I should have had, &c. is also used for the conditional past.

IMPERATIVE.

Aie, or aye	<i>Have (thou)</i>
Qu'il ait	<i>Let him have</i>
Ayons	<i>Let us have</i>
Ayez	<i>Have (ye)</i>
Qu'ils aient	<i>Let them have</i>

have had *many* advantages over him. They would have  
*1 beaucoup de avantage sur lui*  
 had *many* enemies.  
*bien ennemi.*

Observe that, when the verb is followed by several substantives, the proper article and preposition must be repeated before each.

IMPERATIVE.—Have complaisance, attention, and  
 —f. *égard m. pl.*  
 politeness. Let him have modesty, and more correct ideas.  
*politesse f. —f. 2 juste 1.*  
 Let her have more decency. Let us have courage and firmness.  
*décence — m. fermeté f.*  
 Have gravy soup, nice roast-beef, and a pudding. Let  
*un gras 2 soupe f. 1 un bon rosbif m. pouding m.*  
 them have ale, rum, and punch. Let them have manners,  
*m. aile f. rum m. ponche m. f. mœurs f. pl.*  
 and conduct.  
*conduite f.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.—That I may have many friends. That thou  
*beaucoup*  
 may'st have good reasons to give him. That he may have  
*donner lui*  
 elevated sentiments. That we may have courage and mag-  
*élevé 2 — m. 1. bravoure f.*  
 nanimity. That you may have delightful landscapes, and  
*= f. délicieux 2 paysage m. pl. 1.*  
 beautiful sea-pieces. That they may have more condescension  
*marine f. pl. —dance*  
 and more prepossessing manners.  
*2 prévenant 3 manière f. pl. 1.*

PRETERIT.—That I may have had wine, beer, and cider.  
*vin m. bière f. cidre m*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.			COMPOUND TENSES.	
PRESENT. PRETERIT, or COMPOUND OF THE PRESENT.				
Que*	That	Que*	} eu {	That
j'aie	I may have	j'aie		I may have
tu aies	thou may'st have	tu aies		thou may'st have
il ait	he may have	il ait		he may have
nous ayons	we may have	nous ayons		we may have
vous ayez	you may have	vous ayez		you may have
ils aient	they may have	ils aient		they may have

That thou may'st have had a good horse, and a fine dog.  
*cheval m. chien m.*  
 That he may have had enlightened judges. That we may have  
*éclairé 2 juge m. 1.*  
 had snow, rain, and wind. That you may have had a great  
*neige f. pluie f. vent m.*  
 dining-room, a beautiful drawing-room, a pretty  
*salle-à-manger f. superbe salon-de-compagnie m. joli*  
 dressing-room, and a charming bed-room. That  
*cabinet de toilette m. —mant chambre-à-coucher f.*  
 they may have had vast possessions, fine meadows, and de-  
*vaste —f. prairie f. de-*  
 lightful groves.  
*licieux 2 bois m. 1.*

IMPERFECT.—That I might have a sword, musket, and  
*épée f. fusil m.*  
 pistols. That thou might'st have a knife, a spoon, and a  
*pistolet m. couteau m. cuillère f.*  
 fork. That we might have a penknife, pencils, and good  
*fourchette f. canif m. pinceau m.*  
 copies. That he might have a coach, a good house, and  
*modèle m. carrosse m. f.*

\* REM. { The subjunctive, in French, is always preceded by  
 the conjunction *que*, that, which is often suppressed in  
 English.

SIMPLE TENSES.

COMPOUND TENSES.

IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT, or COMPOUND OF THE IMPERFECT.	
Que	That	Que	That
j'eusse	<i>I had, or might have</i>	j'eusse	<i>I might have</i>
tu eusses	<i>thou might'st have</i>	tu eusses	<i>thou might-est have</i>
il eût	<i>he might have</i>	il eût	<i>he might have</i>
nous eussions	<i>we might have</i>	nous eussions	<i>we might have</i>
vous eussiez	<i>you might have</i>	vous eussiez	<i>you might have</i>
ils eussent	<i>they might have</i>	ils eussent	<i>they might have</i>

furniture, simple but elegant. That you might have  
*meuble, m. pl. — mais —*  
 health and great respect. That they might have fruitful  
*santé f. un considération f. fertile 2*  
 lands.  
*terre f. 1.*

PLUPERFECT.—That I might have had friendship. That thou  
*amitié f.*  
 might'st have had gloves, boots, and horses. That he  
*gant m. botte f. cheval m.*  
 might have had zealous and faithful servants. That we  
*zèle 2 fidèle 3 domestique m. 1.*  
 might have had fine clothes, precious jewels, and magnificent  
*= 2 bijou m. 1 magnifique 2*  
 furniture. That you might have had warm friends. That  
*1 chaud 2 1*  
 they might have had greatness of soul and pity.  
*grandeur f. pitié f.*

N. B. { The verb *avoir* serves not only as an auxiliary to conjugate its own compound tenses, but likewise the compound tenses of the verb *être*, and those of the active, the impersonal, and almost all the neuter verbs.

## SENTENCES ON THE SAME VERB, WITH A NEGATIVE.

In the following sentences, the preposition *de* or *d'*, is put before the substantive, according as it begins with a consonant or a vowel, *ne* between the personal pronoun and the verb, and *pas* or *point*, after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle in the compound tenses; as,

Je n'ai pas de livres,	<i>I have no books.</i>
Tu n'avais pas de bien,	<i>Thou hadst no wealth.</i>
Elle n'eut pas d'honnêteté,	<i>She had no honesty.</i>
Nous n'avons pas eu d'amitié,	<i>We have had no friendship.</i>
Vous n'aviez pas eu de puissans amis,	<i>You had not had powerful friends.</i>
Ils n'auront pas d'ennemis redoutables,	<i>They will not have formidable enemies.</i>

## EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE. PRESENT. I have no precious medals.

=2 médaille f. l.

We have no useless things.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

*inutile 2 chose f. l.*

I have had no constancy. We have had no generosity.

=f.

=f.

IMPERFECT. Thou hadst not a beautiful park. You had no

*parc m.*

good cucumbers. PLUPERFECT. He had had no fine houses.

*concombre m.*

They had had no money. PRETERIT DEFINITE. He had not

*argent m.*

a skillful gardener.

They had no carpets.

PRETERIT AN-

*habile jardinier m.*

*tapis m.*

TERIOR. Thou hadst had no complaisance. You had had no

—f.

great talents. FUTURE ABSOLUTE. I shall have no great bu-

—m.

af-

siness. We shall have no uncommon prints.

FUTURE

*faire f. pl.*

*rare 2*

*estampe f. l.*

ANTERIOR. Thou shalt have had no consolation. You shall not

—f.

have had quiet days.

*tranquille 2 m. l.*



## CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.—He should not have bad pictures. They  
*mauvais tableau m.*  
 should have no leisure.  
*loisir m.*

PAST.—I should have had no griefs. We should have  
*chagrin m. pl.*  
 had no troubles.  
*peine f. pl.*

## IMPERATIVE.

Have no impatience. Let him not have absurd  
*sing. — absurde 2. f. pl.*  
 ideas. Let us not have dangerous connexions. Have no such  
*1. =2 liaison f. pl. tel*  
 whims. Let them not have so whimsical a project.  
*caprice m. bizarre 2. projet m. 1.*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.—That I may have no protectors. That we may  
*= m.*  
 have no success.  
*succès m.*

PRETERIT.—That he may have had no perseverance. That  
*= f.*  
 they may have had no valour.  
*bravoure f.*

IMPERFECT.—That thou might'st have no principles of taste.  
*principe m. goût m.*  
 That you might not have a just reward.  
*juste récompense f.*

PLUPERFECT.—That I might have had no good advice. That  
*avis m. pl.*  
 we might have had no news.  
*nouvelle f. pl.*

THE VERB *Avoir*, INTERROGATIVELY AND AFFIRMATIVELY.

In interrogations, the personal pronoun, accompanied by a hyphen (-), is placed after the verb, in the simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle, in the compound tenses, and, when the third person singular of the verb ends with a vowel, for euphony a *t* is added between it and the pronoun, preceded and followed by a hyphen, thus (-*t*). See likewise the remarks, page 125.

Ai-je des livres ?	<i>Have I books ?</i>
Avais-tu du bien ?	<i>Hadst thou wealth ?</i>
Eut-elle de l'honnêteté ?	<i>Had she honesty ?</i>
Avons-nous eu de bons conseils ?	<i>Have we had good advice ?</i>
Aviez-vous eu de la prudence ?	<i>Had you had prudence ?</i>
Aura-t-il de l'argent ?	<i>Will he have money ?</i>
Aura-t-elle eu des protecteurs ?	<i>Will she have had protectors ?</i>

## EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE. PRESENT.—Hast thou needles ?	Have you
coloured maps ?	<i>aiguille f.</i>
<i>enluminé 2 carte f. 1.</i>	PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—Have I had pens ?
Have we had convenient houses ?	IMPERFECT.—Had she silk ?
<i>commode 2 f. 1.</i>	<i>plume f.</i>
Had they large buildings ?	PLUPERFECT.—Had she had pins ?
<i>grand bâtiment m.</i>	<i>soie f.</i>
Had they had extensive fields ?	PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Had
<i>spacieux 3 champ m. 1.</i>	
he good shoes ?	Had they looking-glasses ?
<i>soulier m. f. miroir m.</i>	PRETERIT ANTE-
RIOR.—Hadst thou had lace ?	Had you had odoriferous
<i>dentelle f.</i>	<i>odoriférant 2</i>
shrubs.	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—Shall I have gold, silver,
<i>arbuste m. 1.</i>	<i>m. argent m.</i>
and platina.	Shall we have (good luck) ?
<i>platine m. bonheur m.</i>	FUTURE ANTERIOR.—
Will she have had joy ?	Will they have had company ?
<i>joie ?</i>	<i>compagnie f.</i>
CONDITIONAL. PRESENT.—Shouldst thou have happy	
moments ?	<i>heureux</i>
Should you have good wine and nice cordials ?	
—m.	<i>vin. m. fin 2 liqueur f. 1.</i>
PAST.—Should he have had uncommon fruits ?	Should they
<i>rare 2 m. 1.</i>	
have had rich clothes ?	

## THE SAME VERB INTERROGATIVELY AND NEGATIVELY.

In sentences of this form observe the different rules that are prefixed to the exercises on the verb, and in sentences simply interrogative, always place *ne* at the beginning of sentences, and *pas*, or *point*, after the personal pronoun, whether in the simple or compound tenses.

N'ai-je pas des livres?	<i>Have I no books?</i>
N'avais-tu pas des amis?	<i>Hadst thou no friends?</i>
N'a-t-elle pas beaucoup d'esprit?	<i>Has she not a great deal of wit?</i>
N'avons-nous pas eu de bons procédés?	<i>Have we not acted fairly?</i>
N'aviez vous pas eu de nouvelles robes?	<i>Had you not had new gowns?</i>
N'aura-t-il pas des ressources?	<i>Will he have no resources?</i>
N'auront-elles pas eu des consolations?	<i>Will they have had no consolations?</i>

EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE. PRESENT.—Hast thou no diamonds?	<i>Have</i>	<i>diamant m.</i>
you no indulgent parents?	PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—Hast thou	
— 2 — m. 1.		
not had contempt, and even hatred,	for that man? Have	
<i>mépris m. même haine f. h asp. pour cet</i>		
you not had better examples?	IMPERFECT.—Had he not a	
<i>meilleur exemple m.</i>		
rigid censor?	Had they not inattentive children?	
<i>sévère 2 censeur m. 1. = 2 enfant m. 1.</i>		
PLUPERFECT.—Had I not had other views?	Had we not had	
<i>autre vue? f. pl.</i>		
amethysts, rubies, and topazes?	PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Had I	
<i>améthyste f. rubis m. topaze? f.</i>		
no great wrongs?	Had we not perfidious friends?	PRETERIT
<i>tort m. perfide 2 1</i>		
ANTERIOR.—Had he not used far-fetched expressions?	Had	
<i>eu 2 recherché 2 — f. 1.</i>		
they not excellent models?	FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—Wilt thou	
— <i>modèle m.</i>		
not lead a more regular life?	Will you not have	
<i>avoir plus 2 réglé 3 conduite f. 1.</i>		
fashionable gowns?	FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I have had no	
<i>à la mode 2 robe f. 1.</i>		
sweetmeats?	Shall we not have had a good preacher?	
<i>confitures? f. prédicateur? m.</i>		
CONDITIONAL. PRESENT.—Should she not have clear	<i>clair 2</i>	
and just ideas?	Would they not have more extensive know-	
<i>3 f. 1 2 étendu 3 con-</i>		
ledge?	PAST.—Should she have had no patience?	
<i>naissances f. pl. 1.</i>		
Should they have had no rectitude?		
<i>f. droiture? f.</i>		





SIMPLE TENSES.

COMPOUND TENSES.

IMPERFECT.

PLUPERFECT.

j'étais	<i>I was</i>	j'avais	} été {	<i>I had</i>	} been
tu étais	<i>thou wast</i>	tu avais		<i>thou hadst</i>	
il était	<i>he was</i>	il avait		<i>he had</i>	
nous étions	<i>we were</i>	nous avions		<i>we had</i>	
vous étiez	<i>you were</i>	vous aviez		<i>you had</i>	
ils étaient	<i>they were</i>	ils avaient		<i>they had</i>	

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.\*

je fus	<i>I was</i>	j'eus	} été {	<i>I had</i>	} been
tu fus	<i>thou wast</i>	tu eus		<i>thou hadst</i>	
il fut	<i>he was</i>	il eut		<i>he had</i>	
nous fûmes	<i>we were</i>	nous eûmes		<i>we had</i>	
vous fûtes	<i>you were</i>	vous eûtes		<i>you had</i>	
ils furent	<i>they were</i>	ils eurent		<i>they had</i>	

thou always been steady? She has been faithful. Have we  
*posé* *fidèle*  
 been firm and courageous? You have been charitable. Have  
*ferme* *=* *—*  
 those men always been good and benevolent?  
*bienfaisant?*

IMPERFECT.—I was too busy to see you. Wast not thou  
*occupé pour recevoir*  
 troublesome? Was this girl idle? Were we not too un-  
*importun* *fille paresseux* *in-*  
 tractable? You were not quiet enough. They were vain,  
*docile?* *tranquille* 2 assez 1. f. *—*  
 frivolous, and coquettish.  
*frivole* *coquette*

PLUPERFECT.—I had hitherto been very indifferent. Hadst  
*jusqu'alors* *insouciant*  
 not thou been too imprudent? Had his wife been sufficiently  
*—* *épouse* *assez*  
 modest and reserved? We had not yet been sufficiently  
*assez réservé* *encore*

\* REM. { PRET. ANT.—Exercises upon this tense would be  
 as yet too complicated, as may be seen by this sen-  
 tence: *à peine y eus-je été cinq ou six minutes, qu'il ar-*  
*riva*, I had scarce been there five or six minutes, when  
 he arrived.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.			FUTURE ANTERIOR.		
je serai	<i>I shall or will</i>	j'aurai	} été {	<i>I shall or will have</i>	} been
tu seras	<i>thou wilt be</i>	tu auras		<i>thou wilt have</i>	
il sera	<i>he will be</i>	il aura		<i>he will have</i>	
nous serons	<i>we shall be</i>	nous aurons		<i>we shall have</i>	
vous serez	<i>you shall be</i>	vous aurez		<i>you will have</i>	
ils seront	<i>they shall be</i>	ils auront		<i>they will have</i>	

attentive. Had you been envious and jealous? They had not  
*appliqué* = *\*jaloux*  
 been grateful.  
*reconnoissant.*

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Perhaps I was not sufficiently  
*Peut-être que* *assez*  
 prudent. Wast thou discreet enough on that occasion? Was  
 — *discret* I *en* — f.  
 not that princess too proud? We were very unhappy. Were you  
 — *cesse fier*  
 not too hasty? They were not much satisfied.  
*prompt fort satisfait.*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—To-morrow I shall be at home till  
*Demain* *chez-moi jusqu'à*  
 (twelve o'clock). Wilt thou always be restless, brutal, and  
*midi inquiet, bourru*  
 sour? Will your father be at home this evening?  
*chagrin Monsieur chez-lui soir m.*  
 Shall we not be more diligent? Will you always then be  
 — *3 donc 2 1*  
 capricious, obstinate, and particular? Will not your scholars be  
*quinteux opiniâtre, pointilleux? écolier*  
 troublesome?  
*incommode?*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall not I have been too severe? Thou  
 —  
 wilt have been too distrustful. Will not his sister have been  
*défiant sœur*  
 whimsical and capricious? Shall not we have been eager  
*fantasque = empressé 2*

## CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

je serais	<i>I should, would,</i>	j'aurais
	<i>or could be</i>	
tu serais	<i>thou would'st</i>	tu aurais
	<i>be</i>	
il serait	<i>he would be</i>	il aurait
nous serions	<i>we should be</i>	nous aurions
vous seriez	<i>you would be</i>	vous auriez
ils seraient	<i>they would be</i>	ils auraient

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PAST.

	<i>I</i>	<i>should</i>	
	<i>have</i>		
	<i>thou would'st</i>		
	<i>have</i>		
	<i>he</i>	<i>would</i>	
	<i>have</i>		
été	<i>we</i>	<i>should</i>	<i>been</i>
	<i>have</i>		
	<i>you</i>	<i>should</i>	
	<i>have</i>		
	<i>they</i>	<i>would</i>	
	<i>have</i>		

The conditional past, *J'eusse été, tu eusses été, il eût été, nous eussions été, vous eussiez été, ils eussent été*, is also used.

enough? Will you not have been inconsiderate? Will not the

1  
judges have been just?  
*juge*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT. I would not be so rash.

*téméraire.*

Would'st thou be as consistent in thy behaviour as in thy lan-  
*conséquent dans conduite f.* *pro-*  
guage? Would not his son be ready in time? Should we be  
*pos m. pl.* *fil* *prêt à*  
always incorrigible? You would not be disinterested enough.  
*désintéressé 2 1*

Would not those ladies be always virtuous?

*dame* *vertueux?*

PAST. (Had it not been for) your instructions, I should have

*Sans* *conseil m. pl.*

been proud and haughty. Would'st not thou have been

*dédaigneux* *hautain*

malicious and sarcastic? Would that man have been so

*malin* *ricaneur* *tellement*

destitute of common sense? Certainly we should not have been

*dépourvu bon sens*

so ridiculous. Would not you have been more kind and

*si ridicule* *doux* *plus*

indulgent? They would not have been so ungentle.

*complaisant?* *malhonnête.*

## IMPERATIVE.

Sois	<i>Be (thou)</i>
Qu'il soit	<i>Let him be</i>
Soyons	<i>Let us be</i>
Soyez	<i>Be (ye)</i>
Qu'ils soient	<i>Let them be</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

PRESENT.			PRETERIT.		
que	<i>that</i>	que		<i>that</i>	
je sois	<i>I may, can, or should be</i>	j'aie		<i>I may, can, or should have</i>	
tu sois	<i>thou may'st be</i>	tu aies		<i>thou may'st have</i>	
il soit	<i>he may be</i>	il ait	été	<i>he may have</i>	been
nous soyons	<i>we may be</i>	nous ayons		<i>we may have</i>	
vous soyez	<i>you may be</i>	vous ayez		<i>you may have</i>	
ils soient	<i>they may be</i>	ils aient		<i>they may have</i>	

IMPERATIVE.	Be liberal.	Do not be so lavish.	Let
	sing. —	sing. <i>prodigue</i>	
us be equitable,	humane, and prudent.	Let us not be covetous.	
	<i>humain,</i>	<i>avide.</i>	
Be economical and temperate.		Do not be thoughtless.	
pl. <i>économique</i>	<i>sobre</i>	pl. <i>léger</i>	

As the *third person* singular and plural of the imperative mood belong rather to the subjunctive, they are there exemplified.

It has already been observed, that before the *subjunctive* can form a complete sense, it must be preceded by another verb. For the sake of brevity, therefore, complete sentences will only be given on the present tense. This remark applies alike to the four conjugations.



## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## IMPERFECT.

que	that	que
je fusse	<i>I might, or</i>	j'eusse
	<i>could be</i>	
tu fusses	<i>thou might'st be</i>	tu eusses
il fût	<i>he might be</i>	il eût
nous fus-	<i>we might be</i>	nous eus-
sions		sions
vous fussiez	<i>you might be</i>	vous eussiez
ils fussent	<i>they might be</i>	ils eussent

## PLUPERFECT.

{	<i>that</i>	{
	<i>I might or</i>	
	<i>could</i>	
	<i>thou might'st</i>	
éte	<i>he might</i>	
	<i>we might</i>	
	<i>you might</i>	
	<i>they might</i>	
}		}

*have been*

PRESENT.—Is it possible I can be so credulous? They wish  
 — \* — *le* *On désire*  
 thou may'st be more modest. Is it possible she can be so ob-  
*modeste* \* *en-*  
 stinate? They wish us to be more assiduous. It is not  
*tête* *assidu* *On\**  
 expected you should be timid. It is feared they may  
*s'attend* *timide.* *On\* craint* *ne*  
 be guilty.  
*coupable.*

PRETERIT.—That I should have been so hasty and impatient.  
*emporté si* —  
 Thou should'st have been so puffed up with pride. That she  
*bouffi* *de*  
 should have been so fickle. That we should have been so head-  
*volage* *tête*  
 strong. That you should have been so avaricious. That they  
*avare*  
 should have been so unreasonable.  
*dérisonnable.* †

Observe, the verb *être* serves as an auxiliary to conjugate the passive verbs through all their tenses, the compound tenses of the pronominal verbs, and those of about fifty neuter verbs.

IMPERFECT.—That I should not be humane and generous.  
*humain* =  
 That thou might'st be more careful. That she might not be so  
*soigneux.*  
 arrogant. That we might be victorious. That you might not be  
 — =  
 so stern. That they might not be so cruel.  
*sévère.*

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

IN *er*.

1 { In verbs ending in *-ger*, the *e* is preserved in those tenses where *g* is followed by the vowels *a*, or *o*, in order to preserve to this letter its soft sound; as, *mangeant, jugeons, je négligeai*.

2 { In verbs ending in *-cer*, for the same reason, a cedilla is put under *c*, when followed by *a*, or *o*; as, *suçant, plaçons, j'effaçai*.

3 { In verbs ending in *-oyer* and *-uyer*, the *y* is changed into *i* before a mute *e*; as, *j'emploie, il essuie, j'appuierai, il nettoierait*.

4 { This practice is extended by some to verbs in *-ayer* and *-eyer*, as *il paie, j'essaierai, elle grasséye, or grasséie*.

5 { In some few verbs ending in *-eler* and *-eter*, the *l* and *t* are doubled in those inflections, which receive an *e* mute after these consonants, as, from *appeler, il appelle*, from *jeter, je jetterai*, &c.

6 { The first person singular of the present of the indicative changes *e* mute into acute *é* in interrogative sentences. The remark is also applied to some verbs of the second conjugation ending in *-vrir*, *-frir*, and *-lir*; as, *négligé-je? aimé-je? offré-je? cueillé-je?*

## EXERCISE.

PLUPERFECT. That I might have been more studious. That thou might'st have been more circumspect. That she might have been more attentive to her duty. That we might have been less addicted to pleasure. That you might have been more assiduous and more grateful. That they might have been less daring.

*livré à art. m. pl.*  
*assidu plus reconnaissant*  
*hardi.*

## PARADIGM, OR MODEL.

## INFINITIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

parl-*er*      *to speak*

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PAST.

avoir parl-*é*      *to have spoken*

## PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

parl-*ant*      *speaking*

## PAST.

parl-*é* m. -*ée* f. *spoken*      } ayant parl-*é*      *having spoken*

## REMARKS.

- 1 { All the regular verbs of the First Conjugation  
adopt the terminations of the verb *parler*; EXAM.

	parl- <i>er</i>	aim- <i>er</i>	expliqu- <i>er</i>	avou- <i>er</i>
	parl- <i>ant</i>	annonç- <i>ant</i>	engag- <i>eant</i>	défray- <i>ant</i>
	parl- <i>é</i>	agré- <i>é</i>	décri- <i>é</i>	dédommag- <i>é</i>
je	parl- <i>e</i>	dans- <i>e</i>	ignor- <i>e</i>	renvoi- <i>e</i>
tu	parl- <i>es</i>	dîn- <i>es</i>	rejet- <i>tes</i>	renouvel- <i>les</i>
il	parl- <i>e</i>	chant- <i>e</i>	bégai- <i>e</i>	grassé- <i>e</i>
nous	parl- <i>ons</i>	berç- <i>ons</i>	choy- <i>ons</i>	chang- <i>eons</i>
vous	parl- <i>ez</i>	régn- <i>ez</i>	essuy- <i>ez</i>	épel- <i>ez</i>
ils	parl- <i>ent</i>	caress- <i>ent</i>	ennu- <i>ient</i>	appel- <i>lent</i>

And so on through the whole verb.

- 2 { Adverbs, with few exceptions, must be placed  
after the verb, in simple tenses, and between the  
auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses,  
when this adverb is only a single word.

- 3 { The remarks prefixed to the exercises on the verb  
*avoir*, when *de* is to be placed between the verb and  
the substantive, ought to be attended to.

- 4 { The article *the*, after the verb, must always be  
expressed in French, though often understood in  
English.

## EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I willingly give that plaything to  
*volontiers donner joujou m.*

## INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

je parl- <i>e</i>	<i>I speak</i>	j'ai
tu parl- <i>es</i>	<i>thou speakest</i>	tu as
il parl- <i>e</i>	<i>he speaks</i>	il a
nous parl- <i>ons</i>	<i>we speak</i>	nous avons
vous parl- <i>ez</i>	<i>you speak</i>	vous avez
ils parl- <i>ent</i>	<i>they speak</i>	ils ont

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRÆTERIT INDEFINITE.

je parl- <i>e</i>	<i>I speak</i>	j'ai	} parl- <i>é</i>	{	<i>I have</i>	} <i>spoken.</i>
tu parl- <i>es</i>	<i>thou speakest</i>	tu as			<i>thou hast</i>	
il parl- <i>e</i>	<i>he speaks</i>	il a			<i>he has</i>	
nous parl- <i>ons</i>	<i>we speak</i>	nous avons			<i>we have</i>	
vous parl- <i>ez</i>	<i>you speak</i>	vous avez			<i>you have</i>	
ils parl- <i>ent</i>	<i>they speak</i>	ils ont			<i>they have</i>	

your sister. Do I prefer pleasure to my duty? Dost  
 f. \* *préférer* art. m. *devoir* m.  
 thou not irritate thy enemies? He does not propose salutary  
*irriter* *ennemi* *proposer un* = 2  
 advice to his friends. We sincerely love peace and  
*avis* m. 1 *sincèrement* art. *paix* f. art.  
 tranquillity. We do not neglect (any thing) to please you.  
 = f. \* *négliger* *rien* *pour* *plaire*  
 Do you not admire the beauty of that landscape? Do not  
*admirer* = f. *paysage* m. \*  
 your parents comfort the afflicted? They (make use of) all  
 — *consoler* *affligé* m. pl. *employer*  
 means to succeed.  
 art. *moyen* m. *pour réussir*.

PRÆTERIT INDEFINITE.—I have (given up) my favourite  
*céder* *favori* 2  
 horse to my cousin. Hast thou not exchanged watches  
*cheval* m. 1 —m. *changer de montres*  
 with my sister? Has the tutor given fine engravings to his  
*précepteur de* *gravure* f. pl.  
 pupil? We have spoken (a long while) of your adventure.  
*élève* m. *long-temps* *aventure* f.  
 Have you not insisted too much upon that point? Have your  
*insisté* \* *sur* —m.  
 aunts prepared their ball dresses?  
*tante préparer de bal* 2 *habit* m. pl. 1.

IMPERFECT.—I unceasingly thought of my misfortunes.  
*sans cesse* *penser à* *malheur* m. pl  
 Didst thou dread his presence and firmness? He ex-  
*redouter* —f. *pron. fermeté* f. *re-*  
 hibited in his person all the virtues of his ancestors. Did not  
*tracer en* f. f. *ancêtre*



## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## IMPERFECT.

je parl-ais	<i>I did speak, or</i>	j'avais
	<i>was speaking</i>	
tu parl-ais	<i>thou didst speak</i>	tu avais
il parl-ait	<i>he did speak</i>	il avait
nous parl-ions	<i>we did speak</i>	nous avions
vous parl-iez	<i>you did speak</i>	vous aviez
ils parl-aient	<i>they did speak</i>	ils avaient

## PLUPERFECT.

	<i>I had</i>	
	<i>thou hadst</i>	
	<i>he had</i>	
	<i>we had</i>	
	<i>you had</i>	
	<i>they had</i>	

spoken.

that woman accuse her friend of levity? We did not protect  
*accuser ami f. légèreté f. \* protéger*  
 that bad man. You despised a vain erudition. Did the  
*méchant mépriser —2 —f. 1. \**  
 Romans disdain so weak an enemy? The bees were there  
*Romain dédaigner faible 2 m. 1. abeille \* y*  
 sucking the cups of the flowers.  
*sucer calice m. fleur.*

PLUPERFECT.—I had drained an unwholesome marsh

*dessécher mal sain 2 marais m. 1.*

Had'st thou not married a man rich, but unluckily without  
*épouser malheureusement sans*  
 education? Had his father rejected these advantageous

—f. *rejeter avantageux 2*  
 offers? We had not long listened to the singing of the  
*offre f. 1. long-temps écouter \* chant m.*

birds. Had you already studied geography and history?  
*oiseau m. déjà étudier art. = f. art. =*

Had not his friends procured him a troop of cavalry?  
*procurer 2 lui 1 compagnie f. cavalerie?*

There is a fourth preterit, called *preterit anterior indefinite*, which is used instead of the preterit anterior, when speaking of a time not entirely elapsed; as *j'ai eu achevé mon ouvrage ce matin, cette semaine, &c.* and not *j'eus achevé*: as it is found in every conjugation, I shall insert it here; *j'ai eu parlé, tu as eu parlé, il a eu parlé, nous avons eu parlé, vous avez eu parlé, ils ont eu parlé.*

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

je parl-ai	<i>I spoke</i>
tu parl-as	<i>thou spokest</i>
il parl-a	<i>he spoke</i>
nous parl-âmes	<i>we spoke</i>
vous parl-âtes	<i>you spoke</i>
ils parl-èrent	<i>they spoke</i>

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

j'eus	} parl-é	{	<i>I had</i>	} spoken.
tu eus			<i>thou hadst</i>	
il eut			<i>he had</i>	
nous eûmes			<i>we had</i>	
vous eûtes			<i>you had</i>	
ils eurent			<i>they had</i>	

PRETERIT DEFINITE.—Did I not gladly give peaches  
 \* *avec plaisir de art. pêche f. pl.*  
 and flowers to my neighbours? Thou forgottest an  
 pr. art. *fleurs f. pl.* *voisin m. pl.* *oublier*  
 essential circumstance. Did not your cousin relate that  
*essentielle 2 circonstance f. pl.* \* *raconter*  
 charming history with (a great deal) of grace? He lightly  
 — *mant = f. avec beaucoup légèrement*  
 judged of my intentions. Did we not show courage,  
*juger \** — \* *montre de art. — m. pr.—*  
 constancy, and firmness? Did you visit the grotto  
 art. = f. pr. art. f. \* *visiter grotte f.*  
 and the grove? They did not generously forgive their  
*bois m.* *généreusement pardonner à*  
 enemies.

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—I had soon wasted my money, and  
*bientôt manger argent m.*  
 exhausted my resources. Hadst thou very soon reinforced thy  
*épuiser ressource f.* \* *vite renforcer*  
 party? Had not Alexander soon surmounted all obstacles?  
*parti m.* *Alexandre surmonter tous art. = m. pl.*  
 We had not soon enough shut the shutters, and (let down) the  
*tôt 2 assez 1 fermer volet baisser*  
 curtains. Had you not quickly dined? In the twinkling  
*rideau promptement dîner.* *Dans \* un clin*  
 of an eye, they had dispersed the mob.  
 \* *œil disperser populace f.*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I shall relieve the poor. Wilt  
*soulager pauvre m. pl.*  
 thou faithfully keep that secret? Will he consult  
*fidèlement garder —m. consulter de art.*

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

je parl- <i>erai</i>	<i>I shall, or</i>	j'aurai	} parl- <i>é</i>	<i>I shall or</i>	} <i>have spoken.</i>
tu parl- <i>eras</i>	<i>will speak</i>	tu auras		<i>will</i>	
il parl- <i>era</i>	<i>thou shalt</i>	il aura		<i>thou shalt</i>	
	<i>speak</i>				
nous parl- <i>erons</i>	<i>he shall</i>	nous aurons		<i>he shall</i>	
	<i>speak</i>				
vous parl- <i>erez</i>	<i>we shall</i>	vous aurez		<i>we shall</i>	
	<i>speak</i>				
ils parl- <i>eront</i>	<i>you shall</i>	ils auront		<i>you shall</i>	
	<i>speak</i>				
				<i>they shall</i>	

enlightened judges? He will support you with all his credit.  
*éclairé 2 juge 1. appuyer de*  
 We shall not prefer pleasure to glory, and riches to  
*préférer art. m. art. f. art. pl. art.*  
 honour. By such conduct, will you not afflict your father  
*tel conduite f. affliger*  
 and mother? Will they astonish their hearers?  
*pron. étonner auditeur m. pl.*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—I shall soon have finished this book. By  
*achever m.*  
 thy submission, wilt thou not have appeased his anger? Will  
*soumission f. appaiser colère f.*  
 the king have triumphed over his enemies? We, perhaps, shall  
*triompher de 2 1*  
 not have rewarded enough the merit of this good man.  
*récompenser mérite m. de bien 2 1*  
 Will you not have flown to his assistance? Will our servants  
*voler secours m. domestique m.*  
 have brought money?  
*apporter de art. argent.*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.—Should I form conjectures  
*former de art. —f. pl.*  
 without number? Thou would'st not avoid so great a danger.  
*nombre m. éviter 2 3 1 4*  
 Would not his attorney (clear up) that business? We would  
*procureur débrouiller affaire f.*  
 (drive away) the importunate. Would you not discover  
*chasser importun m. pl. dévoiler*

## CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

je parl- <i>erais</i> <i>I should,</i>	j'aurais	} parl- <i>é</i> }	<i>I should,</i>	} <i>have spoken.</i>
<i>would, or</i>			<i>would, or</i>	
<i>could speak</i>			<i>could</i>	
tu parl- <i>erais</i> <i>thou should'st</i>	tu aurais		<i>thou should'st</i>	
<i>speak</i>				
il parl- <i>erait</i> <i>he should</i>	il aurait		<i>he should</i>	
<i>speak</i>		}		}
nous parl- <i>erions</i> <i>we should</i>	nous aurions		<i>we should</i>	
<i>speak</i>				
vous parl- <i>eriez</i> <i>you should</i>	vous auriez		<i>you should</i>	
<i>speak</i>				
ils parl- <i>eraient</i> <i>they should</i>	ils auraient		<i>they should</i>	
<i>speak</i>				

*J'eusse parlé, tu eusses parlé, il eût parlé, nous eussions parlé, vous eussiez parlé, ils eussent parlé,* is also used for the conditional past. This remark holds good for every verb.

that atrocious plot?

They would not unravel the clue of

*atroce 2 complot m. 1.*

*démêler fil m.*

that intrigue.

—f.

PAST.—I should have liked hunting, fishing, and the  
*aimer art. chasse f. art. pêche f.*  
country. Would'st thou not have played? Would he not have  
*campagne f. jouer*  
bowed to the company? Would we gladly have praised his  
*saluer \* compagnie f. avec plaisir 2 louer 1*  
pride and incivility? You would have awakened  
*orgueil m. pron. malhonnêteté f. éveiller*  
every body. Would those merchants have paid their debts?  
*tout le monde marchand payer dette f. pl.*

IMPERATIVE.—In all thy actions, consult the light of  
*Dans —f. pl. consulter lumière f. art.*  
reason. Never yield to the violence of thy passions.  
*f. te abandonner —f. —*  
Let us love justice, peace, and virtue. Let us not  
*art. —f. art. f. art. f.*  
cease to work. Sacrifice your own interest to the  
*cesser de travailler Sacrifier \* intérêt m. pl.*



## IMPERATIVE.

parl-e\*  
qu'il parl-e  
parl-ions  
parl-ez  
qu'ils parl-ent

*speak (thou)*  
*let him speak*  
*let us speak*  
*speak (ye)*  
*let them speak*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

que	<i>that</i>	que
jé parl-e	<i>I may, or can</i>	j'aie
	<i>speak</i>	
tu parl-es	<i>thou may'st</i>	tu aies
	<i>speak</i>	
il parl-e	<i>he may speak</i>	il ait
nous parl-ions	<i>we may speak</i>	nous ayons
vous parl-iez	<i>you may speak</i>	vous ayez
ils parl-ent	<i>they may speak</i>	ils aient

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRETERIT.

} parl-é	<i>that</i>	} <i>have spoken.</i>
	<i>I may, or</i>	
	<i>can</i>	
	<i>thou</i>	
	<i>may'st</i>	
	<i>he may</i>	
	<i>we may</i>	
	<i>you may</i>	
	<i>they may</i>	

public good. Do not omit such useful and interest-  
 2 bien 1 \* négliger de art si utile 2 intres-  
 ing details.  
 sant 3 —m. pl. 1.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may not always listen to  
 écouter \*  
 a severe censor of my defects. That thou should'st find  
 — 2 = m. 1. défaut m. pl. trouver  
 real friends. That he would adorn his speeches with the graces  
 de vrai parer discours de  
 of a pure diction. That she would remain in her boudoir.  
 — 2 —f. 1. rester — m.  
 That we should so hastily condemn the world. That  
 légèrement condamner monde m.

\* REM. The second person singular of the imperative of this conjugation, and likewise of some verbs of the second ending in *vrir, frir, llir*, take *s* after *e*, before the word *y* and *en*, as, *portes-en à ton frère*, carry some to thy brother; *offres-en à ta sœur*, offer some to thy sister; *cueilles-en aussi pour toi*, gather some alike for thyself; *apportes-y tes livres*, bring there thy books.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
que	that	que	that
je parl-asse	I might, could, or would speak	j'eusse	I might, could, or would
tu parl-asses	thou might'st speak	tu eusses	thou might'st
il parl-ât	he might speak	il eût	he might
nous parl- assions	we might speak	nous eus- sions	we might
vous parl- assiez	you might speak	vous eus- siez	you might
ils parl-as- sent	they might speak	ils eus- sent	they might

you may pout incessantly. That they may work more  
*bouder sans cesse* *travailler* *plus*  
 willingly.  
*volontiers.*

PRETERIT.—That I may have caressed insolence, and  
*caresser art.* — f.  
 flattered pride. That thou would'st have added nothing to  
*flatter art.* *ajouter*  
 that work. That he should have carried despair into  
*ouvrage m.* *porter art.* *désespoir m.* *dans*  
 the soul of his friend. That we may have blamed a conduct  
*âme* *blâmer* *conduite f.*  
 so prudent and so wise. That you may have exasperated so  
 — *sage* *exaspérer*  
 petulant a character. That they may not have taken (advan-  
 — 2 *caractère m.* 1. *profiter*  
 tage) of the circumstances.  
*circonstance f. pl.*

IMPERFECT.—That I should not copy his example. That  
*imiter exemple m.*  
 thou might'st (give up) perfidious friends. That he  
*abandonner de art.* — de 2 1  
 might inhabit a hut instead of a palace. That we  
*habiter chaumière f. au lieu palais m.*  
 should fall at the feet of an illegitimate king. That you  
*tomber à pied m. illégitime 2 1*  
 would respect the laws of your country. That they would  
*respecter loi f. pl. pays m.*

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

IN *-ir*.

This conjugation is divided into *four branches*.

The first branch contains upwards of two hundred and eighty regular verbs in *-ir*, exclusive of fifty-three more comprised in the three other branches, which may be considered as *exceptions*, and may be reduced to *thirteen roots*, with thirty-nine derivatives. By presenting some of the regular verbs of the *first* branch, which nearly resemble the *three following lists of exceptions*, the scholar will evidently see that the terminations in *-mir*, *-vir*, *-tir*, and *-nir*, are not absolutely the distinctive marks of the three other branches, the lists of which ought to be learned by heart.

1 BR.	ralent-ir	to slacken	ressort-ir	{ to be under the jurisdiction of a court
	retent-ir	to resound		
	appésant-ir	to make heavy	asserv-ir	to enslave
	nant-ir	to pledge	sév-ir	to use hard
	renform-ir	to plaster	assouv-ir	to glut
	affer-ir	to strengthen	appauvr-ir	to impoverish
	répart-ir	to distribute	tern-ir	to tarnish
	avert-ir	to inform	vern-ir	to varnish
	sert-ir	to set a stone	garn-ir	to garnish
	dessert-ir	to unset a stone	a four-ir	to furnish
	sort-ir son plein et entier effet	{ to obtain full effect (by law)	bén-ir	to bless
	assort-ir		henn-ir, &c.	to neigh
		to match		

not speak at random.

*à-tort et à-travers.*

PLUPERFECT. That I should not have burnt that work. That  
 thou might'st not have contemplated the beauties of the coun-  
 try. That he should have perfected his natural qualities.  
 That we might not have gained the victory. That you  
 had enchanted the public. That they would have struck  
 their enemies with fear.  
*de crainte.*





## PARADIGMS.

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

	BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.
<i>Simple</i>	<i>to punish</i> pun-ir	<i>to feel</i> sen-tir	<i>to open</i> ouv-rir	<i>to hold</i> t-enir

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

<i>Simple</i>	<i>punishing</i> pun-issant	<i>feeling</i> sen-tant	<i>opening</i> ouv-rant	<i>holding</i> t-enant
---------------	--------------------------------	----------------------------	----------------------------	---------------------------

## PARTICIPLE PAST.

<i>Simple</i>	<i>punished</i> pun-i	<i>felt</i> sen-ti	<i>opened</i> ouv-ert	<i>held</i> t-enu
<i>Comp. pres.</i>	<i>to have punished</i> avoir pun-i	<i>felt</i> sen-ti	<i>opened</i>	<i>held</i>
<i>Comp. partic.</i>	<i>having punished</i> ayant pun-i		<i>ouv-ert</i>	<i>t-enu</i>

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

<i>Sim.</i>	<i>I punish</i> je pun-is tu pun-is il pun-it nous pun-issons vous pun-issez ils pun-issent	<i>feel</i> sen-s sen-s sen-t sen-lons sen-tez sen-tent	<i>open</i> ouv-re ouv-res ouv-re ouv-rons ouv-rez ouv-rent	<i>hold</i> t-iens t-iens t-ient t-enons t-enez t-iennent
-------------	---	---	---	---

INDICATIVE. PRESENT. I choose this picture. I feel all  
*choisir* *tableau m.*  
 the unpleasantness of your situation. Whence comest thou?  
*désagrément m.* — *d'où venir*  
 Does he thus define that word? Does his mother (go out) so  
*ainsi définir* *mot m.* *sortir*  
 soon? Do we not (set off) for the country? Do you not  
*tôt* *partir* *campagne f.*  
 pity his sorrows? Do you not (tell a lie)? They are  
*compâtir à* *mal m. pl.* *mentir*  
 finishing at this moment. They (act contrary) to your  
*finir* *dans \* art.* — *m.* *contrevenir*  
 orders.  
*ordre.*

IMPERFECT. I fortified his soul against the dangers of  
*prémunir* *contre* —

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

Comp.	{ <i>I have punished</i>	<i>felt</i>	<i>opened</i>	<i>held</i>
	{ <i>j'ai pun-i</i>	<i>sen-ti</i>	<i>ouv-ert</i>	<i>t-enu</i>

## IMPERFECT.

Simple	{ <i>I did punish</i>	<i>feel</i>	<i>open</i>	<i>hold</i>
	{ <i>je pun-issais</i>	<i>sen-tais</i>	<i>ouv-raïs</i>	<i>t-étais</i>

## PLUPERFECT.

Comp.	{ <i>I had punished</i>	<i>felt</i>	<i>opened</i>	<i>held</i>
	{ <i>j'avais pun-i</i>	<i>sen-ti</i>	<i>ouv-ert</i>	<i>t-enu</i>

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

Simple	{ <i>I punished</i>	<i>felt</i>	<i>opened</i>	<i>held</i>
	{ <i>je pun-is</i>	<i>sen-tis</i>	<i>ouv-ris</i>	<i>t-ins</i>
	{ <i>tu pun-is</i>	<i>sen-tis</i>	<i>ouv-ris</i>	<i>t-ins</i>
	{ <i>il pun-it</i>	<i>sen-tit</i>	<i>ouv-rit</i>	<i>t-int</i>
	{ <i>nous pun-îmes</i>	<i>sen-tîmes</i>	<i>ouv-rîmes</i>	<i>t-înmes</i>
	{ <i>vous pun-îtes</i>	<i>sen-tîtes</i>	<i>ouv-rîtes</i>	<i>t-întes</i>
	{ <i>ils pun-irent</i>	<i>sen-tirent</i>	<i>ouv-rirent</i>	<i>t-inrent</i>

seduction. I served my friends warmly. Did'st not  
 art. — f. *servir* *avec chaleur*  
 thou amuse him with fair promises? He complied (at last)  
*entretenir de beau promesse f. pl. consentir enfin*  
 with the wishes of his family. Did we not frequently  
 à *désir m. pl. famille f. fréquemment*  
 warn our friends of the bad state of their affairs? Did we  
*avertir état*  
 sleep then? Did you not belie your character? Did  
*dormir alors? démentir caractère m.*  
 not the enemies invade an immense country? Did the  
*envahir — 2 pays m. 1.*  
 wild beasts often (come out) from the bottom of  
*sauvage 2 bête f. 1. souvent sortir fond m.*  
 their mountains?  
*montagne.*

PRETERIT. I softened my father by my submission. I  
*fléchir soumission f.*  
 foresaw that terrible catastrophe. Thou did'st not (come again)  
*pressentir — 2 — f. 1. revenir*  
 as thou had'st promised. He did not succeed through  
*comme le ind-2 promis réussir par*

N. B. Only the first person of those tenses, which are invariably conjugated alike, will now be given, the scholar will easily supply the rest.

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

Comp.	<i>I had punished</i>	<i>felt</i>	<i>opened</i>	<i>held</i>
	<i>j'eus pun-i</i>	<i>sen-ti</i>	<i>ouv-ert</i>	<i>t-enu</i>

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Simple	<i>I shall punish</i>	<i>feel</i>	<i>open</i>	<i>hold</i>
	<i>je pun-irai</i>	<i>sen-tirai</i>	<i>ouv-rirai</i>	<i>t-iendrai</i>

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

Comp.	<i>I shall have punished</i>	<i>felt</i>	<i>opened</i>	<i>held</i>
	<i>j'aurai pun-i</i>	<i>sen-ti</i>	<i>ouv-ert</i>	<i>t-enu</i>

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

Simple	<i>I should punish</i>	<i>feel</i>	<i>open</i>	<i>hold</i>
	<i>je pun-irais</i>	<i>sen-tirais</i>	<i>ouv-rirais</i>	<i>t-iendrais</i>

thoughtlessness.

*étourderie* f.

immediately? Did not Alexander sully his glory by his pride?

*sur-le-champ*

*ternir*

Did we (go out of the city) before him? We never betrayed

*ville* f. *avant lui*

*trahir*

that important secret. Did you not agree to trust

—2

— m. 1.

*consentir de vous en rapporter*

to me? They served their country with courage. Did the

*moi*

*pays*

ancient philosophers enjoy great consideration?

*philosophe* m. pl. *jouir de un*

— f.

FUTURE.—Shall I not obtain this of you?

*obtenir cela de*

What will be-

come of thee, if I forsake

thee?

Will he not embellish

*venir \* tu*

*abandonner*

*embellir*

his country-seat?

He will not sleep quietly.

*maison de campagne*

*tranquillement*

Shall we consent to that ridiculous bargain?

With

2

*marché* m. 1. *avec de art.*

time and patience, you will compass your end. We

m. pr. art. f.

*venir à-bout de dessein* m.

shall not sully the splendour of our life by an unworthy action.

*éclat* m.

*indigne* 2 — 1

Will those men enrich their country by their industry?

Will

*enrichir*

*pays*

*industrie*

not our friends offer us their assistance?

*offrir*

*secours*

## PAST.

Comp.	{ I should have punished	felt	opened	held
	{ j'aurais pun-i	sen-ti	ouv-ert	t-enu

## IMPERATIVE.

Sim.	{ punish (thou)	feel	open	hold
	{ pun-is	sen-s	ouv-re	t-iens
	{ qu'il pun-isse	sen-te	ouv-re	t-ienne
	{ pun-issons	sen-tons	ouv-rons	t-enons
	{ pun-issez	sen-tez	ouv-rez	t-enez
	{ qu'ils pun-issent	sen-tent	ouv-rent	t-iennent

CONDITIONAL.—I would open the door and the window.  
*porte f. fenêtr f.*  
 I should still cherish life. Would'st not thou interpose in  
*cherir art. intervenir*  
 that affair? Would my brother (set off again) without taking  
*f. repartir sans prendre*  
 leave of us? You would not succeed in injuring him in the  
*congé parvenir à nuire lui*  
 public opinion. Could'st thou soften that flinty heart?  
*—2 —f 1. attendre de rocker 21*  
 Could they foresee their misfortune? Would men always  
*pressentir malheur art.*  
 (grow old) without growing wiser, if they reflected on the  
*vieillir sans devenir inf-1 réfléchir ind-2 sur*  
 shortness of life?  
*brèveté f. art.*

IMPERATIVE Shudder with horror and terror. Support  
*Frémir de = de effroi m. Soutenir*  
 thy character in good and bad fortune. Do not  
*art. dans art. mauvais —f.*  
 obtain thy point, but by means consistent with  
*parvenir à fin f. pl. que par des moyens que avoue 2 \* art.*  
 delicacy. Let us feed the poor. Let us gain  
*délicatesse 1 nourrir m. pl. obtenir art.*  
 glory by our perseverance. Let us not divulge our secrets  
*=f. — découvrir —*  
 to every body. Never submit to so unjust a yoke. Do not  
*tout-le-monde fléchir sous 2 joug m. 1.*  
 maintain so absurd an opinion. Do not (come upon us) again  
*souvenir —de 2 —f. 1. survenir plus*  
 (in that unexpected manner.)  
*ainsi à l'improviste.*



## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

Sim.	{	that I may punish	feel	open	hold
		que je pun-is-se	sen-te	ouv-re	t-ienne
		que tu pun-isses	sen-tes	ouv-res	t-iennes
		qu'il pun-is-se	sen-te	ouv-re	t-ienne
		que nous pun-issions	sen-tions	ouv-rions	t-enions
		que vous pun-issiez	sen-tiez	ouv-riez	t-eniez
		qu'ils pun-issent	sen-tent	ouv-rent	t-iennent

## PRÆTERIT.

Comp.	{	that I may have punished	felt	opened	held
		que j'aie pun-i	sen-ti	ouv-ert	t-enu

## IMPERFECT.

Sim.	{	that I might punish	feel	open	hold
		que je pun-is-se	sen-tisse	ouv-risse	t-insse
		que tu pun-isses	sen-tisses	ouv-risses	t-insses
		qu'il pun-ît	sen-tît	ouv-rit	t-înt
		que nous pun-issions	sen-tissions	ouv-rissions	t-inssions
		que vous pun-issiez	sen-tissiez	ouv-rissiez	t-inssiez
		qu'ils pun-issent	sen-tissent	ouv-rissent	t-inssent

## PLUPERFECT.

Comp.	{	that I might have punished	felt	opened	held
		que j'eusse puni	senti	ouvert	tenu

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may never blemish my reputation. That I may (be before-hand) with such dangerous enemies. I will not have thee (go out) this morning. That he may not enjoy his glory. That he may not obtain his ends. That we may become just, honest, and virtuous. That you may punish the guilty. That you may return covered with laurels. That they may establish wise and just laws. That they may agree about the conditions.

3    1                      convenir de                      —

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

IN *-oir*.

PARADIGM.

This conjugation contains only seven regular verbs, which are:

<i>perc-evoir</i>	<i>to receive</i>	<i>déc-evoir</i>	<i>to deceive</i>
<i>aperc-evoir</i>	<i>to perceive</i>	<i>d-evoir</i>	<i>to owe</i>
<i>conc-evoir</i>	<i>to conceive</i>	<i>red-evoir</i>	<i>to owe again</i>

And *recevoir*, which serves as paradigm. *Percevoir* is a law term, and *apercevoir* is often reflected.

OBSERVE. In verbs ending in *-cevoir*, the *c*, to preserve the *soft sound* of that letter, takes a *cedilla*, when followed by *o* or *u*. See page 3.

## INFINITIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRESENT.

## PAST.

<i>rec-evoir</i>	<i>to receive</i>	<i>avoir reç-u</i>	<i>to have received</i>
------------------	-------------------	--------------------	-------------------------

## PARTICIPLES.

## PRESENT.

<i>rec-éant</i>	<i>receiving</i>
-----------------	------------------

## PAST.

<i>reç-u</i>	<i>received</i>
--------------	-----------------

}	<i>ayant reç-u</i>	<i>having received</i>

IMPERFECT.—That I might stun the whole neighbourhood.  
*étourdir* 1 *tout* 2 *voisinage* m.  
 That I might not (bring about) my designs. That thou  
*venir à-bout de projet* m. pl.  
 would'st (tell a wilful lie.) That he might not bear  
*mentir de dessein prémédité.* *soutenir*  
 his disgrace with firmness. That we might disobey the laws.  
 —f. *fermeté* *désobéir à*  
 That we should belong to that great king. That you might  
*appartenir*  
 renounce your errors and prejudices. That they might  
*revenir de* = pr. pron. *préjugé*  
 weaken the force of their reasons. That they might hold  
*affaiblir* f. *raisonnement* *tenir à*  
 the most absurd ideas.

## INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

<i>I receive, &amp;c.</i>	<i>we receive, &amp;c.</i>
je reç-ois	nous rec-evons
tu reç-ois	vous rec-evez
il reç-oit	ils reç-oivent

## IMPERFECT.

<i>I did receive</i>	<i>we did receive</i>
je rec-evais	nous rec-evions

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

<i>I received</i>	<i>we received</i>
je reç-us	nous reç-ûmes
tu reç-us	vous reç-ûtes
il reç-ut	ils reç-urent

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

j'ai reç-u	<i>I have received</i>
tu as, &c.	<i>thou, &amp;c.</i>

## PLUPERFECT.

j'avais reç-u	<i>I had received</i>
---------------	-----------------------

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

j'eus, reç-u	<i>I had received</i>
tu eus, &c.	<i>thou, &amp;c.</i>

## EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I perceive the summit of the Alps

apercevoir	sommet	Alpes f. pl.
covered with perpetual snow.	What gratitude	dost
de éternel 2	neige f. pl. 1	reconnaissance f.
thou not owe to her who (has discharged) the duty of a mother,		
devoir celle 1	remplir 3	5
(to thee) (in thy infancy !)	Does your scholar understand	
près de 4	2	écolier concevoir
well that rule which is so simple?	We do not owe a large	
bien règle f. * *	devoir	gros
sum. Do you not perceive the snare?	Ought	firm
somme f.	piège m.	Devoir 5 des 1 3
and courageous men to yield to	circumstances?	
= 4	2 * céder	art. circonstance?

IMPERFECT.—Did I not receive him kindly?

Did he

le avec amitié?	
see the castle from such a distance?	We did not re-
apercevoir château si * loin	per-
ceive our income. Did you not receive	great civilities?
cevoir revenu m. pl.	de honnêteté f. pl

### SIMPLE TENSES.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

<i>I shall receive</i>	<i>we, &amp;c.</i>	<i>j'aurai reç-u</i>	<i>I shall have</i>
<i>je reç-evrai</i>	<i>nous rec-evrons</i>		<i>received.</i>

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

PAST.

*I should receive*    *we should, &c.*    j'aurais reç-u    *I should have*  
je rec-evrais    nous rec-evrions tu, &c.    received.

IMPERATIVE.

		rec-eons <i>let us receive.</i>
reç-ois	<i>receive thou</i>	rec-evez <i>receive ye.</i>
qu'il reç-oive	<i>let him receive</i>	qu'ils reç-oivent <i>let them receive.</i>

Did those tyrants conceive all the blackness of their crimes?  
*tyran*    *concevoir*    *noirceur* f.    —

PRETERIT.—I perceived him walking by moon  
*le qui se promenait à art. clair de*  
light. Did the queen conceive a great esteem for that  
*la lune m. estime f.*  
honest man. Did we not immediately perceive the snare?  
*de bien 2 1*  
You did not receive his letters in time. Did the ministers con-  
*lettres à-temps. — tre*  
ceive the depth of his plan.  
*profondeur f. — m.*

FUTURE.—Shall I receive visits to-day? He will  
*de art. visite aujourd'hui?*  
 not discover the spire of his village. We shall conceive  
*apercevoir clocher m. — m.*  
 well founded hopes. Will you never conceive so  
*de art. fondé 2 espérance f. pl. 1.*  
 luminous a principle? Shall men always owe their mis-  
*= 2 1 art. mal-*  
 fortunes to their faults?  
*heur faite?*

CONDITIONAL.—Should I receive the offers of my enemy?  
*offre*



## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

that I may receive that we, &c.  
 que je reç-oive que nous rec-evions  
 que tu reç-oives que vous rec-eviez  
 qu'il reç-oive qu'ils reç-oivent

## IMPERFECT.

that I might, &c. that we might, &c.  
 que je reç-usse que nous reç-ussions  
 que tu reç-usses que vous reç-ussiez  
 qu'il reç-ût qu'ils reç-ussent

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRETERIT.

que j'aie reç-u that I may  
 que tu, &c. have re-  
 qu'il, &c. ceived.

## PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse that I might  
 reç-u have re-  
 que tu, &c. ceived.

Should a wise man thus (give himself up) to  
*devoir* 4 1 3 2 *ainsi* 6 *s'abandonner* 5 art.  
 despair? Should we conceive such abstract ideas?  
*désespoir* m. *de art. si* 2 *abstrait* 3 1  
 You would easily perceive so gross a trick. Would not  
*grossier* 2 *ruse* f. 1  
 my sisters receive their friends with tenderness?  
*tendresse* ? f.

IMPERATIVE.—Conceive the horror of his situation. Do not  
 receive that mark of confidence with indifference. Let us  
*marque* f. *confiance* —  
 entertain a horror of vice. Let us never owe (any  
*concevoir* \* *de art.* *pour* art. m.  
 thing.) Receive his advice with respect and gratitude. Re-  
*rien* *avis* — —  
 ceive no more of his letters.  
*lettre* f. pl.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.—That I may receive consolation  
*de art.*  
 tions. That he should not conceive a thought so well explained.  
*pensée* f. *développé.*  
 That we may always receive false news. That you  
*de* *nouvelle* f. pl.  
 may not perceive the danger of books which are contrary  
 — art. \* \* *contre*  
 to good morals. That they may not collect unjust  
 \* art. *mœurs* f. pl. *percevoir* *de injuste* 2  
 taxes.  
 —f. pl. 1.

## FOURTH CONJUGATION.

IN -re.

REMARK.—This conjugation has five branches.

The FIRST ends	{	in -andre	as, répandre	to spill
		in -endre	as, vendre	to sell
		in -ondre	as, répondre	to answer
		in -erdre	as, perdre	to lose
		in -ordre	as, mordre	to bite
the SECOND ends		in -aire	{ as, plaire	to please
			{ as, taire	to keep secret
the THIRD ends	{	in -âtre	as, repaître	to feed
		in -aître	as, connaître	to know
the FOURTH ends		in -uire	as, instruire	to instruct
the FIFTH ends	{	in -aindre	as, contraindre	to constrain
		in -eindre	as, peindre	to paint
		in -oindre	as, joindre	to join

## PARADIGMS.

## INFINITIVE.

## PRESENT.

BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.	BRANCH 5.
<i>to render</i>	<i>to please</i>	<i>to appear</i>	<i>to reduce</i>	<i>to join</i>
<i>rend-re</i>	<i>pl-aire</i>	<i>par-aître</i>	<i>rédui-re</i>	<i>joi-ndre</i>
<i>rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>avoir rend-u</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>

IMPERFECT.—That I might conceive such a project. That  
 he might perceive the secret designs of the enemy's general.  
*caché 2 dessein 1 2 \* 1*  
 That we should not receive every body with civility. That you  
*honnêteté.*  
 could not conceive the depth of this book. That they  
*profondeur f.*  
 might not perceive the masts of the ship.  
*mât m. pl. vaisseau m.*

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.	BRANCH 5.
<i>rendering</i>	<i>pleasing</i>	<i>appearing</i>	<i>reducing</i>	<i>joining</i>
<i>rend-ant</i>	<i>pl-aisant</i>	<i>par-aissant</i>	<i>rédui-sant</i>	<i>joi-gnant</i>

## PARTICIPLE PAST.

<i>rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>rend-u</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

<i>I</i>	<i>render</i>	<i>please</i>	<i>appear</i>	<i>reduce</i>	<i>join</i>
<i>je</i>	<i>rend-s</i>	<i>pl-ais</i>	<i>par-ais</i>	<i>rédui-s</i>	<i>joi-ns</i>
<i>tu</i>	<i>rend-s</i>	<i>pl-ais</i>	<i>par-ais</i>	<i>rédui-s</i>	<i>joi-ns</i>
<i>il</i>	<i>rend</i>	<i>pl-ait</i>	<i>par-ait</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>
<i>nous</i>	<i>rend-ons</i>	<i>pl-aions</i>	<i>par-aissions</i>	<i>rédui-sons</i>	<i>joi-gnons</i>
<i>vous</i>	<i>rend-ez</i>	<i>pl-aïsez</i>	<i>par-aïssez</i>	<i>rédui-sez</i>	<i>joi-gnez</i>
<i>ils</i>	<i>rend-ent</i>	<i>pl-aissent</i>	<i>par-aissent</i>	<i>rédui-sent</i>	<i>joi-gnent</i>

PRETERIT INDEFINITE. (*I have*)

<i>rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>j'ai rend-u</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—*I know his fiery and impetuous*  
*temper. I wait his return with impatience. Does he*  
*caractère m. 1 attendre relour*  
*fear death? Does not virtue please every body? We do*  
*craindre art. f. à*  
*not force you to adopt this opinion. We suppress for*  
*contraindre de adopter —f. taire*  
*the present several interesting circumstances. Do you not*  
*—m. intéressant 2 f. 1*  
*confound these notions one with another? You seduce*  
*confondre art. art. séduire*  
*your hearers by your modest exterior. Do your sons*  
*auditeur m. pl. 2 = m. 1*  
*acknowledge their errors? Do not these workmen waste their*  
*reconnaître = ouvrier perdre*  
*time about trifles? —f.*  
*à de art. bagatelle pl.*

IMPERFECT.—*I did not displease by my conduct. I was*  
*pitying those sad victims of the revolution. Did not*  
*plaindre triste victime f. pl. —f.*

## IMPERFECT.

BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.	BRANCH 5.
<i>I did render</i>	<i>please</i>	<i>appear</i>	<i>reduce</i>	<i>join</i>
<i>je rend-ais</i>	<i>pl-aisais</i>	<i>par-aisais</i>	<i>rédui-sais</i>	<i>joi-gnais</i>

## PLUPERFECT.

<i>I had rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>j'avais rend-u</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nl</i>

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

<i>I rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>je rend-is</i>	<i>pl-us</i>	<i>par-us</i>	<i>rédui-sis</i>	<i>joi-gnis</i>
<i>tu rend-is</i>	<i>pl-us</i>	<i>par-us</i>	<i>rédui-sis</i>	<i>joi-gnis</i>
<i>il rend-it</i>	<i>pl-ut</i>	<i>par-ut</i>	<i>rédui-sît</i>	<i>joi-gnit</i>
<i>nous rend-îmes</i>	<i>pl-ûmes</i>	<i>par-ûmes</i>	<i>rédui-sîmes</i>	<i>joi-gnîmes</i>
<i>vous rend-îtes</i>	<i>pl-ûtes</i>	<i>par-ûtes</i>	<i>rédui-sîtes</i>	<i>joi-gnîtes</i>
<i>ils rend-irent</i>	<i>pl-urent</i>	<i>par-urent</i>	<i>rédui-sirent</i>	<i>joi-gnirent</i>

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

<i>I had rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>j'eus rend-u</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>

this dog bite? *chien mordre* Did that man (at last) acknowledge his *enfin*  
 injustice? We did not appear convinced. We joined our  
 — f. *convaincu* pl.  
 sighs and tears. Were you painting an historical  
*soupir* m. pl. pron. *larme* f. pl. *peindre* *d'histoire* 2  
 subject? Did those orators throw the graces of  
*tableau* m. 1 = *répandre* —  
 expression into their speeches? They led the people  
 art. — *discours* *induire* m.  
 into an error.  
*en* \*

PRETERIT.—I aimed at an honest end. Did his prudence  
*tendre à* 2 *but* m. 1 — f.  
 extinguish the fire of a disordered imagination? Did not your  
*éteindre* *dérégler* 2 — f. 1  
 conduct (do away) his prejudices? We led our  
*—duite* f. *détruire* *prévention* f. pl. *reconduire*  
 friend back to his country-house. Did we offer our in-  
 \* *dé campagne* 2 f. 1 *vendre* *en-*  
 cense to the pride of a blockhead? Did you feign to think  
*cens* *sot* *feindre de*  
 as a madman? Did you conduct your children from truth to  
*en* \* *fou* *conduire*



## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.	BRANCH 5.
<i>I shall render</i>	<i>please</i>	<i>appear</i>	<i>reduce</i>	<i>join</i>
<i>je rend-rai</i>	<i>pl-airai</i>	<i>par-aîtrai</i>	<i>rédui-rai</i>	<i>joi-ndrai</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR. (*I shall have*)

<i>rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>j'aurai rend-u</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>

## CONDITIONAL.

## PRESENT.

<i>I should render</i>	<i>please</i>	<i>appear</i>	<i>reduce</i>	<i>join</i>
<i>je rend-raïs</i>	<i>pl-airais</i>	<i>par-aîtrais</i>	<i>rédui-raïs</i>	<i>joi-ndrais</i>

truth? Did those frightful spectres appear again?  
*effrayant* 2 — m pl. 1 *apparaître* *de nou-*  
 Did not the children (come down) at the first sum-  
*veau* *descendre* à *or-*  
 mons?  
*dre* m. sing.

FUTURE.—Shall I hear the music of the new opera?  
*entendre* *musique* f.  
 I shall not conceal from you my mind. Will the ge-  
*taire* \* *façon de penser*  
 neral constrain the officers to join their respective corps?  
*contraindre* *officier* *rejoindre* =  
 Will not a thought, true, grand, and well expressed, please  
 f. *exprimé*  
 at all times? We shall (make our appearance) on this great  
*dans* art. m. pl. *paraître* *sur*  
 theatre, next month. Shall we describe all the  
 — m. art. *prochain* 2 mois m. 1 *dépeindre*  
 horror of this terrible night? Will you not new-model a  
 — 2 *nuit* f. 1 *refondre*  
 work so full of charming ideas? Will you know your  
*plein* 2 1 *reconnaître*  
 things again? Will they always reduce our duties to  
*effet* m. pl. \* *devoir* m. pl.  
 beneficence? They will assiduously correspond with  
 art. *bienfaisance* f. *assidûment* *correspondre*  
 their friends.

CONDITIONAL.—Should I, by these means, gain the  
*moyen* m. s. *atteindre* à  
 desired end? I should (carry on) the undertaking with suc-  
*désiré* 2 but m. 1. *conduire* *entreprise* f.

PAST. (*I should have*)

BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.	BRANCH 5.
<i>rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
j'aurais rend-u	pl-u	par-u	rédui-t	joi-nt

## IMPERATIVE.

<i>render, (thou)</i>	<i>please</i>	<i>appear</i>	<i>reduce</i>	<i>join</i>
rend-s	pl-ais	par-ais	rédui-s	joi-ns
qu'il rend-e	pl-aise	par-aisse	rédui-se	joi-gne
rend-ons	pl-aissons	par-aissons	rédui-sons	joi-gnons
rend-ez	pl-aisez	par-aisez	rédui-sez	joi-gnez
qu'ils rend-ent	pl-aisent	par-aisent	rédui-sent	joi-gnent

cess. Would his mother wait with (so much) patience? Could  
*tant de*

sincerity displease the man (of sense?) Should we sell  
 art. = f. *à* *sensé* *vendre*

our liberty? Should we build our house upon that plan?  
*construire* — m.

Would you oblige young people to live as you  
*astreindre de art.* *gens pl.* *vivre comme*

do? Would you reduce your child to despair? They  
*art. désespérer m.*

should dread the (public) censure. Would my pro-  
*craindre* 1 *du public* 3 f. 2.

tectors introduce an unknown person into the world?

= *introduire* *inconnu m.* \*

IMPERATIVE.—Depict in thy idyl all the charms of a  
*peindre* *idylle* *douceur f.*

rural life. Expect not happiness from exter-  
*champêtre* 2 1 *attendre* art. art. *exté-*

nal objects; it is in thyself. Know the powers of thy mind  
*rieur* 2 m. pl. 1 *force f.*

before thou writest. Let us unite prudence with  
*avant de* \* *écrire* *joindre* art. f. *à* art.

courage. Let us not descend to useless particulars.  
 m. *descendre dans des* 2 — *larité* 1

Let us not (give offence) by an air of haughtiness. Seem  
*déplaire* *des* — m. pl. *paraître* 2

neither too cheerful nor too grave. Ye sovereigns, make  
*ne* 1 *ni* *gai* *ni* *sérieux* \* *souverain pl.* *rendre*

the people happy. Do not despise his friendship. Sweet  
*dédaigner* *doux*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT. (*that I may*)

BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.	BRANCH 5.
<i>render</i>	<i>please</i>	<i>appear</i>	<i>reduce</i>	<i>join</i>
<i>que je rend-e</i>	<i>pl-aise</i>	<i>par-aisse</i>	<i>rédui-se</i>	<i>joi-gne</i>
<i>tu rend-es</i>	<i>pl-aises</i>	<i>par-aisses</i>	<i>rédui-ses</i>	<i>joi-gnes</i>
<i>il rend-e</i>	<i>pl-aise</i>	<i>par-aisse</i>	<i>rédui-se</i>	<i>joi-gne</i>
<i>nous rend-ions</i>	<i>pl-aisions</i>	<i>par-aissions</i>	<i>rédui-sions</i>	<i>joi-gnions</i>
<i>vous rend-iez</i>	<i>pl-aisiez</i>	<i>par-aissiez</i>	<i>rédui-siez</i>	<i>joi-gniez</i>
<i>ils rend-ent</i>	<i>pl-aisent</i>	<i>par-aissent</i>	<i>rédui-sent</i>	<i>joi-gnent</i>
PRETERIT. ( <i>that I may have</i> )				
<i>rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>que j'aie rend-u</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>

illusions, vain phantoms, vanish. (Keep to yourself) such  
 — f. — *fantôme m. disparaître* *taire* *certain*  
 truths as may offend.  
 f. pl. *qui peuvent offenser.*

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT. That I may fear that cloud of ene-  
 mies. That I should please every body, *nuée f.* is impossible.  
*à ce*  
 That he may not reply to such absurd criticism. That  
*répondre un si 2 3 critique f. pl.*  
 he may lead his pupil step by step to a perfect knowledge  
*conduire élève pas à connaissance*  
 of the art of speaking and writing. That we may entice by an  
*inf-1 pr. inf-1 séduire*  
 enchanting style. That we may confound the arts with the  
 — *teur 2 m. 1*  
 sciences. That you may have the same end in view. That  
*but m. 2 tendre à 1*  
 they may not depend on any body. That they may not in-  
*dépendre de personne ac-*  
 crease our sufferings.  
*croître peines.*

IMPERFECT. That I might not melt into tears. That  
*fondre en larme*  
 I would acknowledge the truth. That he might (draw a picture)  
*reconnaître peindre*  
 of distressed virtue. That she might please by her accom-  
*art. malheureux 2 1* *grac.*

IMPERFECT. (*that I might*)

BRANCH 1.	BRANCH 2.	BRANCH 3.	BRANCH 4.	BRANCH 5.
<i>render</i>	<i>please</i>	<i>appear</i>	<i>reduce</i>	<i>join</i>
<i>que je rend-isse</i>	<i>pl-usse</i>	<i>par-usse</i>	<i>rédui-sisse</i>	<i>joi-gnisse</i>
<i>tu rend-isses</i>	<i>pl-usses</i>	<i>par-usses</i>	<i>rédui-sisses</i>	<i>joi-gnisses</i>
<i>il rend-ît</i>	<i>pl-ût</i>	<i>par-ût</i>	<i>rédui-sît</i>	<i>joi-gnît</i>
<i>nous rend-issions</i>	<i>pl-ussions</i>	<i>par-ussions</i>	<i>rédui-sissions</i>	<i>joi-gnissions</i>
<i>vous rend-issiez</i>	<i>pl-ussiez</i>	<i>par-ussiez</i>	<i>rédui-sissiez</i>	<i>joi-gnissiez</i>
<i>ils rend-issent</i>	<i>pl-ussent</i>	<i>par-ussent</i>	<i>rédui-sissent</i>	<i>joi-gnissent</i>

PLUPERFECT. (*that I might have*)

<i>rendered</i>	<i>pleased</i>	<i>appeared</i>	<i>reduced</i>	<i>joined</i>
<i>que j'eusse</i>	<i>pl-u</i>	<i>par-u</i>	<i>rédui-t</i>	<i>joi-nt</i>
<i>rend-u</i>				

## PARADIGM, OR MODEL FOR PRONOMINAL VERBS.

*Se repentir to repent.*

*Pronominal verbs*, as was said page 123, are conjugated throughout, in each person, with a *double personal pronoun*, and as all their compound tenses are formed by means of the auxiliary verb *être*, their participle past must always agree in gender and number with the *objective pronoun*, when it is *direct*, otherwise not. Their inflections all follow the conjugations to which they belong.

plishments more than by her beauty. That we might conduct  
 f. pl. *conduire*  
 him to court. That we should affect such low  
 art. *cour* f. *feindre de* art. *si* *bas* 2  
 sentiments. That you might hear their justification. That  
 1 *entendre*  
 you might know your real friends. That they might (wait for)  
*vrai* *attendre*  
 the opinion of sensible persons. That they would not ap-  
 art. *sensé* 2 f. pl. 1. f.  
 pear so scornful and vain.  
*dédaigneux* f. pl. *ni si* f. pl.



In all participles past, except *absous*, *dissons*, *résous*, which are to be seen in their places, the feminine is formed by adding *e* mute to the masculine, and the plural by adding *s* to the singular, both masculine and feminine, when it does not already end with this letter, the French language not admitting a final *double consonant*.

As there is some difficulty in conjugating pronominal verbs, some few are here selected, which it will prove advantageous to practise.

<i>s' alarmer</i>	<i>s' abstenir</i>	<i>s' habituer</i>	<i>s' enorgueillir</i>
<i>s' assoupir</i>	<i>se servir</i>	<i>se nantir</i>	<i>se méconnaître</i>
<i>s' apercevoir</i>	<i>se souvenir</i>	<i>se contraindre</i>	<i>s' immortaliser</i>
<i>se défendre</i>	<i>se prévaloir</i>	<i>se rendre</i>	<i>se dorloter</i>
<i>se hâter</i>	<i>se repaître</i>	<i>s' évertuer</i>	<i>s' ingénier</i>
<i>se dépêcher</i>	<i>se conduire</i>	<i>s' impatienter</i>	<i>s' obliger</i>
<i>se ressentir</i>	<i>s' enrhummer</i>	<i>se fâcher</i>	<i>se recueillir</i>
<i>se pouvoir</i>	<i>s' ennuyer</i>	<i>se reposer</i>	<i>se blesser</i>
<i>se taire</i>	<i>s' orienter</i>	<i>s' enquérir</i>	<i>s' enrouer</i>
<i>se promener</i>	<i>s' endormir</i>	<i>se méfier</i>	<i>se réjouir</i>
<i>se coucher</i>	<i>se morfondre</i>	<i>se formaliser</i>	<i>s' embarrasser</i>
<i>se lever</i>	<i>se perdre</i>	<i>se rapétisser</i>	<i>s' habiller</i>
<i>s' asseoir</i>	<i>s' évanouir</i>	<i>se réconcilier</i>	<i>s' émanciper</i>
<i>s' arroger</i>	<i>s' applaudir</i>	<i>se savoir gré</i>	<i>se dire</i>
<i>se procurer</i>	<i>s' attribuer</i>	<i>se prescrire</i>	<i>se rendre compte</i>
<i>se visiter</i>	<i>s' entr'aider</i>	<i>s' entr'ouvrir</i>	<i>s' entrevoir</i>

---

### INFINITIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRESENT.

*se repentir*      *to repent*

## PAST.

*s' être*      { *repenti*  
                  *or*  
                  *repentie* } *to have repented.*

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

*se repentant*      *repenting*

## PARTICIPLE PRESENT and PAST.

PAST.  
*repenti* } *repented.*  
*repentie* }

*s' étant*      { *repenti*  
                  *or*  
                  *repentie* } *having repented.*

## INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

*I repent.*

je	<i>me</i>	repens
tu	<i>te</i>	repens
il, <i>or</i> elle	<i>se</i>	repent
nous	<i>nous</i>	repentons
vous	<i>vous</i>	repentez
ils, <i>or</i> elles	<i>se</i>	repentent

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRETERIT INDEFINITE.

*I have repented.*

je	<i>me</i>	<i>suis</i>	} repenti
tu	<i>t'</i>	<i>es</i>	
il, <i>or</i> elle	<i>s'</i>	<i>est</i>	} repentie
nous	<i>nous</i>	<i>sommes</i>	
vous	<i>vous</i>	<i>êtes</i>	} or
ils, <i>or</i> elles	<i>se</i>	<i>sont</i>	

## IMPERFECT.

*I did repent.*

je	<i>me</i>	repentais
tu	<i>te</i>	repentais
il, <i>or</i> elle	<i>se</i>	repentait
nous	<i>nous</i>	repentions
vous	<i>vous</i>	repentiez
ils, <i>or</i> elles	<i>se</i>	repentaient

## PLUPERFECT.

*I have repented.*

je	<i>m'</i>	<i>étais</i>	} repentir
tu	<i>t'</i>	<i>étais</i>	
il, <i>or</i> elle	<i>s'</i>	<i>était</i>	} repentie
nous	<i>nous</i>	<i>étions</i>	
vous	<i>vous</i>	<i>étiez</i>	} or
ils, <i>or</i> elles	<i>s'</i>	<i>étaient</i>	

INDICATIVE PRESENT.—I commonly walk by moon-  
*d'ordinaire se promener à art. clair*  
 light. Dost thou not deceive thyself? He (is never happy)  
*de la lune m. se tromper \* ne se plaire*  
 but (when he is doing) wrong! Do we not (nurse our-  
*que à faire de art. mal m. s'écouter*  
 selves) too much? How do you do? They mean to  
*se porter se proposer de*  
 travel in the spring.  
*voyager à m.*

PRETERIT INDEFINITE.—I (have been) tolerably well for  
*se porter assez bien depuis*  
 some time. Didst thou not lose thyself in the wood? (It is  
*s'égarer \* On*  
 said) that he killed himself (out of) despair. Have we flattered  
*dit se tuer \* de se flatter*  
 ourselves without foundation? Ladies, have you walked  
*fondement - Mesdames, se promener*  
 this morning? Did those ladies recognise themselves in  
*dame se reconnaître \* à*  
 this portrait?  
 — m.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRETERIT DEFINITE.

*I repented.*

je	<i>me</i>	repentis
tu	<i>te</i>	repentis
il, or elle	<i>se</i>	repentit
nous	<i>nous</i>	repentîmes
vous	<i>vous</i>	repentîtes
ils, or elles	<i>se</i>	repentirent

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRETERIT ANTERIOR.

*I had repented.*

je	<i>me</i>	<i>fus</i>	} repentî,
tu	<i>te</i>	<i>fus</i>	
il, or elle	<i>se</i>	<i>fut</i>	} or
nous	<i>nous</i>	<i>fûmes</i>	
vous	<i>vous</i>	<i>fûtes</i>	} repentie
ils, or elles	<i>se</i>	<i>furent</i>	
			} repentis,
			} or
			} repenties

IMPERFECT.—I tormented myself incessantly about the  
*se tourmenter* \* *sans cesse* *pour*  
 affairs of others. Wast thou not (laying the foundation for)  
*autrui* *se préparer*  
 much sorrow by thy foolish conduct? He made himself  
*bien des regrets* *se rendre* \*  
 more and more unhappy (every day.) We despaired without  
*de jour en jour* *se désespérer*  
 reason. Did you not laugh at us? They ruined them-  
*se moquer de* *se perdre* \*  
 selves wantonly.  
*de gaieté de cœur.*

PLUPERFECT.—I had trusted myself to (very uncertain)  
*se livrer* *à des* *peu sûr* 2  
 guides. Didst thou not confide too inconsiderately in this  
 m. pl. 1. *se confier* *légèrement* *à*  
 man? Had that officer rushed rashly into this  
*—cier se précipiter* *témérement* *dans*  
 danger? We had condemned ourselves. Had you not (been  
 — m. *se condamner nous-mêmes.* *s'oc-*  
 engaged) in trifles? Had those travellers (gone out) of  
*cuper* *de bagatelle* f. pl. *voyageurs* *se détourner*  
 the right way?  
*droit chemin* m.

PRETERIT.—I repented but too late of having taken such a  
*tard* inf-1 *fait* 2 1  
 step. Wast thou not well entertained yesterday even-  
*démarche* f. *s'amuser* *hier* *au*  
 ing? He suffered for his imprudence. We  
*ne se trouver pas bien de*  
 met in the street, but did not speak. Did you say  
*se rencontrer* *rue* *se parler* *dites-vous*  
 nothing (to each other?) Did not those rash children ap-  
*téméraire* 2 1 *s'ap-*  
 plaud themselves for their folly?  
*plaudir* \* *de* *sottise.*

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

*I shall repent.*

je	me	repentirai
tu	te	repentiras
il, or elle	se	repentira
nous	nous	repentirons
vous	vous	repentirez
ils, or elles	se	repentiront

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## FUTURE ANTERIOR.

*I shall have repented.*

je	me	serai	}	repenti,
tu	te	seras		or
il, or elle	se	sera	}	repentie
nous	nous	serons		repentis,
vous	vous	sererez	}	or
ils, or elles	se	seront		repenties

PRETERIT ANTERIOR.—(As soon as) I discovered that they  
*dès-que s'apercevoir on*

sought to deceive me, I was on my guard.  
*chercher ind-2 tromper se tenir ind-3 garde f. pl.*  
 What didst thou, when thou saw'st thyself thus forsaken?  
*fis quand se trouver \* ainsi abandonné*  
 When she recollected all the circumstances, she was quite  
*se souvenir de f. ind-3 toute*  
 ashamed. When he had rejoiced sufficiently, we parted.  
*honteux se réjouir assez se séparer ind-3*  
 When you had amused yourself sufficiently at his expense,  
*s'amuser \* à dépens m. pl.*  
 did you not leave him quiet? When they had walked  
*laisser ind-3 tranquille se promener*  
 enough, they (sat down) at the foot of a tree.  
*s'assirent à*

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.—I will yield, if they convince me.  
*se rendre on convainc*

Wilt thou remember the engagement that thou makest? What  
*se souvenir de prends*  
 will not he reproach (himself for?) We shall not forget our-  
*se reprocher à lui-même s'oublier*  
 selves (so far as) to (be wanting) in respect towards him. Will  
*\* jusque manquer de \* lui*  
 you employ the means I (point out) to you? Will not  
*se servir de que indiquer \**  
 these flowers fade?  
*f. se flétrir.*

FUTURE ANTERIOR.—Shall I have betrayed myself? Wilt  
*se trahir moi-même*

thou not have degraded thyself in his eyes? He will have  
*s'avilir \* à*  
 (been proud) of this trifling advantage. We shall have  
*s'enorgueillir foible avantage m.*



## CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

*I should repent.*

je	me	repentirais
tu	te	repentirais
il, or elle	se	repentirait
nous	nous	repentirions
vous	vous	repentiriez
ils, or elles	se	repentiraient

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PAST.

*I should have repented.*

je	me	serais	} repenti, or repentie
tu	te	serais	
il, or elle	se	serait	
nous	nous	serions	} repentis, or repenties
vous	vous	seriez	
ils, or elles	se	seraient	

fatigued ourselves (to no purpose.) In the end, you will have  
*se fatiguer* \* *inutilement* à  
 (been undeceived.) Will your children have (loved each other)  
*se désabuser* *s'entr'aimer*  
 too much ?

\*

## CONDITIONAL. PRESENT.

Should I suffer

myself to

*se laisser*

\* \*

(be drawn) into the party of the rebels ?  
*entraîner* *parti m.*Wouldst thou be  
 2 \*

(so easily) frightened ?

Would not the nation sub-

*de si peu de chose* 3 *s'effrayer* 1— f. *se sou-*

mit to so just a law ?

We should not rejoice

to see the

*mettre* 3 4 1 2*se plaire**voir*

triumph of guilt.

Would you dishonour yourselves by

*triomphe* art. crime m.*se déshonorer*

\*

such an action ?

Would those lords

(avail themselves) of

2 1

*seigneur**se prévaloir*

de

their birth

and

fortune, (in order to) hurt

*naissance f.**de leurs**richesses**pour**faire vio-*

our feelings ?

*lence à sentiment.*

## PAST. Should I not have devoted

myself entirely

to

*se dévouer*

\*

*entièrement*

the service of my country ?

(Had it not been for) thy careless-

*pays m.**sans**insouci-*

ness, thou would'st certainly have (grown rich.)

Would this

ance f.

*s'enrichir*

pleasing hope

have vanished so soon ?

Should we have

*doux espoir m.**s'évanouir*

degraded ourselves to such a degree ?

You would have

*se dégrader* \*

2 1 point m.

## IMPERATIVE.

## AFFIRMATIVE.

*Repent (thou).*

		repens-toi
qu'il, or	}	se repente
qu'elle		
		repentons-nous
		repentez-vous
qu'ils, or	}	se repentent
qu'elles		

## NEGATIVE.

*Do not repent.*

		ne te	repens	}	pas
qu'il, or	}	ne se	repente		
qu'elle					
		ne nous	repentons		
		ne vous	repentez		
qu'ils, or	}	ne se	repentent		
qu'elles					

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## PRESENT.

*That I may repent.*

que		
je	me	repente
tu	te	repentes
il, or elle	se	repente
nous	nous	repentions
vous	vous	repentiez
ils, or elles	se	repentent

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PRETERIT.

*That I might have repented.*

que			
je	<i>me</i>	<i>sois</i>	} repenti, <i>or</i>
tu	<i>te</i>	<i>sois</i>	
il, <i>or</i> elle	<i>se</i>	<i>soit</i>	} repentie
nous	<i>nous</i>	<i>soyons</i>	
vous	<i>vous</i>	<i>soyez</i>	} repentis, <i>or</i>
ils, <i>or</i> } elles }	<i>se</i>	<i>soient</i>	
			repenties

reduced yourselves to every kind of want.

They

*se réduire*

\*

*sorte f. privation f. pl.*

would have (been drowned,) if (they had not had assistance.)

*se noyer**on ne les avoit secourus.*

IMPERATIVE. O man, remember that thou art mortal. Do

*se souvenir*

not flatter

(thyself that thou wilt succeed easily.) Let

*te promets**un succès facile*

take an exact account of our actions. Let us not deceive

*se rendre* — 2 *compte* 1*se séduire*

ourselves. Rest yourself under the shade of this tree.

*nous-mêmes. Se reposer* \* *à* *ombre*

Do not expose yourself so rashly.

*s'exposer*

\*

*témérement.*

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

I must

*il faut que se*

rise to-morrow at

*lever**de*

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## IMPERFECT.

*That I may repent.*

que			
je	<i>me</i>	repentisse	
tu	<i>te</i>	repentisses	
il, or elle	<i>se</i>	repentît	
nous	<i>nous</i>	repentissions	
vous	<i>vous</i>	repentissiez	
ils, or elles	<i>se</i>	repentissent	

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## PLUPERFECT.

*That I might have repented.*

que					
je	<i>me</i>	fusse		repenti,	
tu	<i>te</i>	fusses		or	
il, or elle	<i>se</i>	fût		repentie	
nous	<i>nous</i>	fussions		repentis,	
vous	<i>vous</i>	fussiez		or	
ils, or elles	<i>se</i>	fussent		repenties	

an earlier hour. I wish that thou may'st be  
 \* *meilleur* *heure f.* *souhaiter* *se porter*  
 better. I wish him to conduct himself better. Is it not es-  
*mieux* *veux qu'il* \* *se conduire* \*  
 sential that we should contain ourselves? They wish that  
 —*tiel* *se contenir* \* *On désirer*  
 you should accustom yourselves early to labour.  
*s'habituer* \* *de bonne heure* art. *travail m.*  
 It is time that they should (have relaxation) from the fatigue  
*se délasser* — f.  
 of business.  
 art. f. pl.

PRETERIT. Can I have (been deceived) so grossly?

*Se peut-il que* *se tromper* *grossière-*

It is astonishing that thou hast determined to stay. It is  
*ment?* *étonnant* *se décider* *rester. On\**

not said that he interfered in this business. It will never be  
*dit* *se mêler de* *On* \*

believed that we have conducted ourselves so ill. It is not  
*croira* *se comporter* \* *mal. On \**

suspected that you have disguised yourselves so ingeniously.  
*soupçonner* *se déguiser* \* *adroitement*

It is not feared that they have behaved ill.

*craindre* *se conduire.*

IMPERFECT. They required that I should (go to bed) at ten

*On exigeait* *se couchèr à*

o'clock. They wish that thou should'st walk oftener.

*heure* *On voudrait* *se promener*

Did they not wish that he should practise fencing?

*On* *voulait* *s'exercer à faire des armes*

Was it necessary that we should (make use) of this method?

= *se servir* *moyen m.*

## CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERBS.

There is but one mode of conjugating passive verbs; it is by adding to the verb *être*, through all the moods and tenses, the participle past of the verb active, which then must agree in gender and number with the subject; as,

Je suis aimé, <i>or</i> aimée	<i>I am loved</i>
tu étais estimé, <i>or</i> estimée	<i>thou wast esteemed</i>
ce roi fut chéri de son peuple	<i>that king was beloved by his people</i>
elle fut toujours chérie	<i>she was always beloved</i>
mon père fut respecté	<i>my father was respected</i>
ma mère fut révérée	<i>my mother was revered</i>
nous serons loués, <i>or</i> louées	<i>we shall be praised</i>
vous en serez blâmés, <i>or</i> blâmées	<i>you will be blamed for it</i>
ils seraient craints et redoutés	<i>they would be feared and dreaded</i>
je voudrais que les portes fussent } ouvertes }	<i>I wish the doors were opened</i>
tu en avais été averti, <i>or</i> avertie	<i>thou hadst been apprized of it</i>
lorsqu'il eut été mordu	<i>when he had been bitten</i>
je soupçonne que la ruse aura été } découverte }	<i>I suspect the artifice will have been discovered</i>
vous auriez été aperçus, <i>or</i> aperçues	<i>you would have been perceived</i>
bien qu'elles aient été reconnues	<i>although they were recognised</i>
supposez que les lumières eussent } été éteintes. }	<i>suppose the lights had been put out.</i>

Did they wish that you should complain without reason?  
*on voulait se plaindre*  
 Did they not wish them (to make more haste?)  
*on désirer ind-2 que ils se hâter davantage?*

PLUPERFECT. Would they have wished that I had revenged  
*voulu se venger*  
 myself? I could have wished that thou had'st shown  
*\* désirer se montrer*  
 thyself more accommodating. I could have wished that this  
*\* moins difficile voulu*  
 painter had (been less negligent.) Would you have wished that  
*peintre se négliger moins voulu*  
 we should have ruined ourselves in the public opinion, (in order  
*se perdre \* 2 f. 1 pour*  
 to) satisfy your resentment? I could have wished perhaps  
*satisfaire ressentiment désirer peut-être*  
 that you had applied yourselves more to your studies.  
*s'appliquer \* davantage*  
 We could have wished that they had extricated themselves  
*se tirer*  
 more skilfully from the difficulties (in which) they (had  
*adroitement embarras où*  
 involved themselves.)  
*s'étaient mis.*



In the following exercises upon the verbs, the tenses will now be promiscuously intermixed.

## EXERCISE ON THE PASSIVE VERBS.

That young lady is so mild, so polite, and so kind, that  
*jeune demoiselle doux honnête bon*  
 she is beloved by every body. He performed with (so much)  
*aimé de jouer ind-4 tant de*  
 ability, that he was universally applauded. He is known  
*intelligence ind-4 applaudi*  
 by nobody. How many countries, unknown to the ancients,  
*de que de pays inconnu*  
 have been discovered by modern navigators?  
 art. 2 *navigateur m. pl. 1.*

## CONJUGATION OF THE NEUTER VERBS.

There are in the French language about six hundred neuter verbs, which are conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir* in their compound tenses; the only *excepted* are the following, which take *être*; even some of them, and particularly those marked with an asterisk, take either, according to the sense.

Aller	to go	venir	to come
accourir	to run to	revenir	to come back
arriver	to arrive	devenir	to become
choir	to fall	redevenir	to become again
déchoir	to decay	avenir	to happen
échoir	to become due	intervenir	to intervene
monter*	to go up	parvenir	to attain
descendre*	to go down	provenir	to come from
remonter*	to go up again	survenir	to befall
redescendre	to go down again	disconvenir	to deny, or disown
entrer	to enter	naître	to be born
rentrer	to come in again	mourir	to die
retourner	to return	décéder	to die
tomber	to fall	éclore	{ to be hatched, to
retomber	to fall again		blow
partir	to set out	accoucher	{ to be brought to
repartir	to set out again		bed
rester	to stay	demeurer*	to stay, or remain
échapper*	to escape	apparaître*	to appear
expirer*	to expire	périr*	to perish
passer*	to pass away	résulter*	to result
sortir	to go out	convenir*	to agree, to suit
ressortir	to go out again	contrevenir*	to contravene
aborder*	to land, &c.		

REMARK. The participle of these neuter verbs, which take *être* for auxiliary, must accordingly agree both in gender and number with their subject; as,

Je suis tombé, or tombée  
 quand tu fus venu, or venue  
 il était arrivé avant moi  
 elle était déjà arrivée  
 ma sœur était partie avant lui  
 nous serons revenus, or revenues  
 quand vous serez descendus, or  
 descendues }

I have fallen  
 when thou hadst come  
 he had arrived before me  
 she had already arrived  
 my sister had set off before him  
 we shall have returned  
 when you shall have come down

<i>ils seraient repartis</i>	}	<i>they would have set off again</i>
<i>elles seraient reparties</i>		
<i>vos sœurs étaient sorties, sont-elles à présent rentrées?</i>	}	<i>your sisters went out, are they now come back?</i>
<i>cela lui est échu en partage</i>		<i>that fell to his lot</i>
<i>cette maison m'a convenu, et je suis convenu du prix</i>		<i>that house suited me, and I have agreed about the price</i>
<i>il n'en est pas disconvenu</i>		<i>he did not deny it</i>
<i>cette chose m'est échappée de la mémoire, de la main</i>		<i>that thing escaped from my memory, dropped from my hand</i>
<i>la trêve est expirée</i>		<i>the truce has expired</i>
<i>les délais sont expirés</i>		<i>the delays have expired</i>
<i>elle a expiré dans les bras de sa mère</i>		<i>she expired in the arms of her mother</i>
<i>qu' a-t-il résulté de là? qu'en est-il résulté?</i>		<i>what has been the result, or consequence of it?</i>
<i>tous ceux qui étaient sur ce vaisseau ont péri, ou sont périés</i>		<i>all those that were on board of that ship, have perished</i>
<i>a-t-on descendu le vin à la cave?</i>	}	<i>have they carried down the wine into the cellar?</i>
<i>le baromètre a descendu de quatre degrés pendant la journée</i>		<i>the barometer fell four degrees during the day</i>
<i>les actions ont monté beaucoup</i>		<i>the stocks rose very much</i>
<i>je n'ai pas remonté ma montre</i>		<i>I have not wound up my watch</i>
<i>il a monté quatre fois à sa chambre pendant la journée</i>		<i>he went up to his room four times in the course of the day</i>
<i>il est monté dans sa chambre, et il y est resté</i>		<i>he is gone up to his room, and has remained there</i>
And so on through all the compound tenses of the other verbs.		

## EXERCISE.

They came to see us with the greatest haste.			When
ind-4 * <i>voir</i>		<i>empressement</i>	Quand
did they arrive?		That estate	fell to his
<i>est-ce que</i>	<i>arriver ind-4</i>	<i>terre f. lui est échu en *</i>	
lot.	He fell	from his horse, but happily received	
<i>partage</i>	<i>tomber ind-4</i>	*	<i>il—ind-4</i>
only	a slight contusion on the knee.		
<i>ne que léger</i>	—f.	<i>à genou m.</i>	

## OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Observe that, in impersonal verbs, *il* has no relation to a substantive, as may be seen by the impossibility of substituting a noun in its place.

## IMPERSONAL VERBS.

<i>il pleut</i>	<i>it rains</i>	<i>il bruine</i>	<i>it drizzles</i>
<i>il neige</i>	<i>it snows</i>	<i>il importe</i>	<i>it matters</i>
<i>il grêle</i>	<i>it hails</i>	<i>il semble</i>	<i>it seems</i>
<i>il tonne</i>	<i>it thunders</i>	<i>il paraît</i>	<i>it appears</i>
<i>il éclaire</i>	<i>it lightens</i>	<i>il suffit que</i>	<i>it suffices</i>
<i>il gèle</i>	<i>it freezes</i>	<i>il convient</i>	<i>it becomes</i>
<i>il dégèle</i>	<i>it thaws</i>	<i>il s'ensuit que</i>	<i>it follows that</i>
<i>il arrive</i>	<i>it happens</i>	<i>il est à propos</i>	<i>it is proper</i>
<i>il sied</i>	<i>it is becoming</i>	<i>il faut</i>	<i>it is necessary</i>
<i>il messied</i>	<i>it is unbecoming</i>	<i>il y a, &amp;c.</i>	<i>there is, or are</i>

## EXERCISE.

Does it rain	this morning?	Did it hail
<i>pleuvoir</i>	<i>matin m.</i>	<i>grêler ind-4 art.</i>

last night? It does not snow. I thought it had thund-  
*dernier 2 f. 1 neiger croyais que ton-*  
 dered. Does it not lighten? Do you think it freezes?  
*ner ind-6 éclairer croyez que geler*  
 It is a remarkable thing. It was a terrible hurricane.  
*ce ce ind-2 2 ouragan 1*  
 It is ten o'clock. It (was not my friend's fault) that it  
*heure pl. ne tenir ind-3 pas à mon ami la chose*  
 was not so. It will freeze long. I do not think so; it  
*subj-2 ne ainsi long-temps crois*  
 seems, on the contrary, that it thaws. It (is fit) to act  
*sembler à contraire dégeler convenir de*  
 so. It (was of great importance) to succeed. Would it be  
*importer beaucoup ind-2 de réussir être*  
 proper to write to your friends? It appears that he has  
*à propos de*  
 not attended to that business. Perhaps it (would be) better to  
*s'occuper de vaudrait*  
 (give up) the undertaking. It (was sufficient) to know his  
*abandonner entreprise suffisait de*  
 opinion.

## CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERSONAL VERB

*Falloir, il faut*, it must, it is necessary.

## INFINITIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT  *falloir*  
 PARTIC. PRES.  *wanted*

## COMPOUND TENSES.

PAST  *avoir fallu*  
 PAST  *fallu, ayant fallu.*

## INDICATIVE.

PRESENT	<i> il faut</i>	PRETERIT IND.	<i> il a fallu</i>
IMPERFECT	<i> il falloit</i>	PLUPERFECT	<i> il avait fallu</i>
PRETERIT DEF.	<i> il fallut</i>	PRETERIT ANT.	<i> il eut fallu</i>
FUTURE ABSOL.	<i> il faudra</i>	FUTURE ANTER.	<i> il aura fallu.</i>

## CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT  *il faudrait* PAST  *il aurait fallu*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT	<i> qu'il faille</i>	PRETERIT	<i> qu'il ait fallu</i>
IMPERFECT	<i> qu'il fallût</i>	PLUPERFECT	<i> qu'il eût fallu</i>

REMARK. The English verb *must*, not being impersonal, may take any noun or pronoun for its subject, whereas the French verb *falloir*, being always

impersonal, a change of construction in the translation becomes necessary, and this may be done in two different ways.

The most common method is by putting the conjunction *que* after *il faut, il fallait, &c.* then transporting the subject of the English verb *must* to the second verb, which is to be put in the subjunctive in French: thus, I must sell my house, *il faut que je vende ma maison.*

The other way is by allowing the second verb to remain in the infinitive, as in English, and substituting in the place of the personal pronoun, which is the subject of the verb *must*, its corresponding objective *mé, te, lui, nous, vous, leur*, which are to be placed between *il* and *faut, fallait, &c.* as, I must begin that work to-day, *il ME faut commencer cet ouvrage aujourd'hui.*

OBSERVE. That all expressions implying necessity, obligation, or want, may be rendered by *falloir*; as, I want a new grammar, *il ME faut une nouvelle grammaire.*

---

#### EXERCISE.

You *must* speak to him about that affair. It *was necessary*  
 sub-1 de f. ind-2 *que*  
 for him to consent to that bargain. We *were obliged to* (set  
 \* *il* \* sub-2 *marché m.* ind-3 *partir*  
 out) immediately. Children *should* learn every day some-  
 sub-2 *sur-le-champ* art. cond-1 sub-2  
 thing by heart. *Shall* I suffer patiently such an insult? He  
 ind-7 sub-1 2 1  
*must* have been a blockhead not to *understand*  
 cond-2 \* sub-2 *sot* 2 *pour* 1 *comprendre* inf-1 *des*  
 such easy rules. (How much) do you *want*? He *does*  
*si* 2 3 *règle f.* 1 *combien* *fait*  
 what is *requisite*. Do that as it (*should be*.) What *must* he  
*faites* ind-1 *que* 2 *lui* 1  
 have for his trouble? You are the man I *want*. Do not  
 \* *peine f.* *que*  
 give me any more bread, I have already more than I  
 \* *de* *en* *déjà* *ne*  
*want*. I *need* not ask you whether you will come. I do *not*  
*m'en* \* inf-1 *si*



think that it is necessary to be a conjurer to guess his motives.  
*crois il sub-1 \* sorcier pour deviner motif*  
 I could not suspect that I ought to ask pardon for a fault  
*pouvais soupçonner sub-2 \* inf-1 — de faute f.*  
 I have not committed.  
*que commise.*

---

## CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERSONAL VERB

*Y avoir, there to be.*

## INFINITIVE.

PRESENT	y avoir	<i>there to be</i>
PAST	y avoir eu	<i>there to have been</i>
PARTICIPLE PRES.	y ayant	<i>there being</i>
PARTICIPLE PAST	y ayant eu	<i>there having been</i>

## INDICATIVE.

PRESENT	il y a	<i>there is, or there are*</i>
PRETERIT INDEF.	il y a eu	<i>there has been, or there have been*</i>
IMPERFECT	il y avait	<i>there was, or there were*</i>
PLUPERFECT	il y avait eu	<i>there had been</i>
PRETERIT DEF.	il y eut	<i>there was, or there were*</i>
PRETERIT ANT.	il y eut eu	<i>there had been</i>
FUTURE ABSOLUTE	il y aura	<i>there will be</i>
FUTURE ANTERIOR	il y aura eu	<i>there would have been</i>

## CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT	il y aurait	<i>there would be</i>
PAST	il y aurait eu	<i>there will have been</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT	qu'il y ait	<i>that there may be</i>
PRETERIT	qu'il y ait eu	<i>that there may have been</i>
IMPERFECT	qu'il y eût	<i>that there might be</i>
PLUPERFECT	qu'il y eût eu	<i>that there might have been</i>

N. B. This verb in English is used in the plural, when followed by a substantive plural; in French it remains always in the singular.

---

## EXERCISE.

*There must be a great difference of age between those two persons. il doit — f.*  
*There being (so many) vicious people in this world. tant de = 2 gens m. pl. 1*

is it astonishing that *there* are so many persons who become  
*étonnant* sub-1 *devenir*  
the victims of the corruption of the age? *It is* a thousand  
*perversité f.* *siècle m.* \* *mille à*  
to one that he will not succeed. *There would be* more  
*parier contre* *réussir*  
happiness if (every one) knew how to moderate his desires.  
*de bonheur* *chacun* *savait \** *\* modérer* *désir*  
I did not think that *there could be* (any thing) to blame in  
*croyais* sub-2 *rien* *reprandre*  
his conduct. *There would not be* so many duels, did people  
*conduite f.* — *si l'on*  
reflect that one of the first obligations of a Christian is to  
*réfléchir* ind-2 *f.* — *f.* *Chrétien de*  
forgive injuries. Could *there be* a king more happy  
*pardonner art.* *Pourrait-il*  
than this, who has always been the father of his subjects?  
*celui-ci* *sujet*

## OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

### IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

#### INFINITIVE.

##### SIMPLE TENSES.

*To go (away).*

PRESENT (s' en) aller  
PARTICIPLE PRES. (s' en) allant }  
PARTICIPLE PAST. ( en) allé }

##### COMPOUND TENSES.

*To have gone (away).*

(s' en) être } allé, allés  
(s' en) étant } allée, allées

#### INDICATIVE.

PRES.	{	je	(m'	en) vais*	je	(m'	en) suis	{	allé, or
		tu	(t'	en) vas.	tu	(t'	en) es		allée
		il, or elle	(s'	en) va	il, or elle	(s'	en) est		
		nous	(nous	en) allons	nous	(nous	en) sommes		
	{	vous	(vous	en) allez	vous	(vous	en) êtes	{	allés, or
		ils, or elles	(s'	en) vont	ils, or elles	(s'	en) sont		allées
IMP.		je	(m'	en) allais	je	(m'	en) étais		allé, &c.
PRET.		je	(m'	en) allai	je	(m'	en) fus		allé, &c.
FUTURE,		je	(m'	en) irai	je	(m'	en) serai		allé, &c.
COND.		je	(m'	en) irais	je	(m'	en) serais		allé, &c.

\* Or je (me' en) vas.

## IMPERATIVE.

AFFIRMATIVE.				NEGATIVE.				
qu'il	va	(t' en)		ne (t' en) va	} pas.			
		(s' en)	aille	qu'il		ne (s' en) aille		
qu'ils	allons	(nous en)		ne (nous en) allons				
	allez	(vous en)		ne (vous en) allez				
		(s' en)	ailent	qu'ils	ne (s' en) aillent			

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.				COMPOUND TENSES.			
PRES. que.	je	(m'	en) aille	je	(m'	en) sois	} allé, <i>or</i> allée
	tu	(t'	en) ailles	tu	(t'	en) sois	
	il, <i>or</i> elle	(s'	en) aille	il, <i>or</i> elle	(s'	en) soit	} allés, <i>or</i> allées
	nous	(nous	en) allions	nous	(nous	en) soyons	
	vous	(vous	en) alliez	vous	(vous	en) soyez	
Imp.	ils, <i>or</i> elles	(s'	en) aillent	ils, <i>or</i> elles	(s'	en) soient	} allé, &c.
	je	(m'	en) allasse	je	(m'	en) fusse	

## REMARKS.

*Je fus, j'ai été, j'avais été, j'aurais été*, are sometimes used for *j'allai, je suis allé, j'étais allé, je serais allé*.

The imperative *va* takes an *s* when followed by *y*, or by *en*; as, *vas-y, vas en savoir des nouvelles*, go thither, go to hear some tidings of it; however, it takes no *s* when the *y* is followed by a verb; as, *va y donner ordre*, go and order that affair.

## EXERCISE.

Will you go this evening into the country? I am going to  
*soir à campagne f. \**  
 pay some visits, and if I be early (at liberty) I  
*faire ind-1 de bonne heure 2 libre 1*  
 shall certainly go home. Go there with thy brother.  
*s'en aller chez-moi*  
 Go and do that errand. Go there and put every  
*\* faire commission f. \* mettre*  
 thing in order. Let him go to church on holidays.  
*en art. église f. \* art. jour pl. de*  
 By being loaded with scents, and particularly  
*fête. à force de inf-1 chargé de odeur f. pl. surtout*  
 amber, he (offends the smell.) They have woven  
*pr. ambre m. sentir mauvais. de art. f.*

*Puer*, to stink, is by no means irregular, but simply defective in the preterit of the indicative, and in the imperfect of the subjunctive.

*Tisser*, to weave, is a verb defective, which, to form its compound tenses, borrows the participle past *tissu*, from the obsolete verb *tistre*.

*Envoyer* and *renvoyer*, make in their future absolute and conditional present, *j'enverrai*, *j'enverrais*, and *je renverrai*, *je renverrais*.

## IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

### BRANCH I. *Punir*.

*Bénir*, to bless, has no irregularity, except in one of its two participles past, *béni*, *bénite*; as, *pain béni*, hallowed bread; *eau bénite*, holy water. The other, *béni*, *bénie*, being regular; as, *bénie entre toutes les femmes*, blessed among all women.

*Fleurir*, signifying to blossom, is regular; but when it means to flourish, to be in repute, honour, esteem,

silk and	cotton together, and	made a very pretty
stuff.	pr. art. m.	<i>en ont fait</i>
<i>étouffe</i> f.	I shall <i>send</i>	spring
ladies.	<i>de</i> art. <i>printanier</i> 2 f.	flowers to those
<i>dame</i> f. pl.	I would go to Rome, if I could.	pl. 1
( <i>send back</i> ) our horses.	Why	<i>pouvais</i>
	<i>pourquoi</i>	do they go away so soon?
My brother and	sister <i>went</i>	yesterday to Windsor. I
	pron. ind-4	
will not go (any more)	a hunting.	
<i>plus</i>	<i>à</i> * art. <i>chasse</i> f.	

### EXERCISE ON BRANCH I.

may the name of that good king be *blessed* from generation  
*nom m.*

to generation! These trees *blossomed* twice every  
*en* ind-2 *deux fois tout* art.  
year. The arts and sciences *flourished* at Athens in the  
*an pl.* art. ind-2 *à Athènes*



it makes, in the participle present, *florissant*, and in the imperfect of the indicative, *florissait*, *florissaient*.

In *haïr*, to hate, the letters *-aï* form throughout two syllables, except in the three persons singular of the present of the indicative, *je hais*, *tu hais*, *il hait*, and in the second person singular of the imperative *hais*, which are pronounced as one syllable, as if written, *je hès*, *tu hès*, *il hèt*.

*Gésir*, to lie, is a defective verb, and has only preserved *gisant*, *gît*, *nous gisons*, *ils gisent*, *il gisait*, used in familiar discourse, or poetry, and particularly in monumental inscriptions: *ci-gît*, here lies.

## BRANCH II. on *Sentir*.

BOUILLIR, to boil.

COURIR, to run.

Par. pres.	Bouillant—Past. bouilli	Courant—cours
	{ bous, bous, bout	cours, cours, court
IND. pres.	{ bouillons, bouillez,	courons, courez, courent
	{ bouillent	
Imperfect.	bouillais—Pret. bouillis	eourais—cours
Future.	bouillirai—Cond. bouil-	courrai—courrais
	lirais	
IMP.	bous, bouillons, bouillez	cours, courons, courez
SUB. pres.	bouille—Imp. bouillisse	coure—coursse

*Rebouillir*, to boil again, and *ébouillir*, to boil away, are conjugated like *bouillir*; this latter is only used in

time of Pericles.	Horace and Virgil flourished under the
<i>Périclès</i>	<i>Virgile</i> ind-2 <i>sous</i>
reign of Augustus.	We discovered from the top of the
<i>règne</i> <i>Auguste</i>	<i>découvrir</i> <i>haut</i>
mountain a vast plain	full of flowery meadows.
	<i>plaine f. rempli de fleurissant</i> 2 <i>pré m. pl. 1</i>
The empire of the Babylonians	was long a flour-
	<i>—nien</i> ind-3 <i>long-temps</i> *
rishing one.	We did not hate the man, but his vices. Does
*	
she really hate that vain pomp and all the parade of	
	<i>pompe f. appareil art.</i>
grandeur?	

compound tenses, and the infinitive; as, *cette sauce est trop ébouillie*, this sauce has boiled away too much.

Like *courir* are conjugated,

<i>accourir</i>	to run to	<i>parcourir</i>	to run over
<i>concourir</i>	to concur	<i>recourir</i>	to have recourse
<i>discourir</i>	to discourse	<i>secourir</i>	to assist
<i>encourir</i>	to incur		

FAILLIR, *to fail*.

*Part. pres. faillant.\* Pust. failli.*

*IND. pres. faux,\* faux,\* faut,\* faillons,\* faillez,\* faillent.\**

*Imperf. faillais.\* Pret. faillis, &c. Fut. faudrai.\**

*COND. faudrais.\* SUBJ. imperf. que je-faillisse.*

DEFAILLIR, *to faint*, has now only the plural of the  
*IND. pres. nous défaillons, ils défontent. Imperf. défontais.*

*Pret. défontais. Pret. indef. j'ai défonté, and INF. pres. défonter.*

N. B. The tenses marked with an asterisk are obsolete.

### EXERCISE ON BRANCH II.

Take that water off the fire, it *boils* too fast. Do not  
*Retirer* f. *de dessus* m. f. *fort*  
let the soup (*boil away*) (so much.) That sauce has  
*laisser* 1 *pot* 3 *tant* 2 f. *est*  
(*boiled away*) (too much.) *Boil* that meat again:  
f. *trop* *Faites rebouillir viande* f.\*  
It has not *boiled* long enough. He *runs* faster than I. He  
f. 2 \* *assez* 1 *vîte* *moi*  
*ran* about uselessly all the morning. We *ran* at the  
ind-4 \* *inutilement* *matinée* f. ind-3  
voice of that honest man, and *assisted* him. (The moment) he  
f. *dès-que*  
saw us in danger, he *ran* to us and delivered us. By so  
*vit en* \* *délivrer* ind-3 2  
whimsical a conduct, should we not *contribute* to our destruc-  
*bizarre* 3 1 *concourir* *perte* f.  
tion? He *discoursed* so long on the immortality of the soul,  
*sur* =  
and the certainty of another life, that he left  
*certitude* f. *laisser* ind-3  
nothing unsaid. If we (were to act thus,) we should  
*en arrière* *agir* ind-2 *ainsi*  
certainly *incur* the displeasure of our parents. I would not  
*disgrâce* f.  
*have recourse* to so base a method. Will men always  
*bas* 2 *moyen* m. 1 art.  
*run* after shadows?  
*de art.* *chimère* f. pl.

FUIR, to fly, to run away.

Part. pres. fuyant. Past. fui.

IND. pres. fuis, fuis, fuit, fuyons, fuyez, fuient.

Imperf. fuyais. Pret. fuis. Fut. fuirai. COND. fuirais.

IMP. fuis, fuie, fuyons, fuyez, fuient.

SUBJ. pres. fuie, fuies, fuie, fuyions, fuyiez, fuient.

Imperf. je fusse, or rather, prisse la fuite.

MOURIR, to die.

Part. pres. mourant. Past. mort.

IND. pres. meurs, meurs, meurt, mourons, mourez, meurent.

IMP. mourais. Pret. mourus. Fut. mourrai. COND. mourrais.

IMP. meurs, meure, mourons, mourez, meurent.

SUBJ. pres. meure, meures, meure, mourions, mouriez, meurent.

Imperf. mourusse. Comp. tenses. je suis mort, j'étais mort, &c.

REM. *S'enfuir*, to run away, is conjugated after *fuir*. *Mourir* takes the auxiliary *être*; and when reflected, *se mourir* signifies to be dying, or at the point of death. It is seldom used except in the present and imperfect of the indicative.

### EXERCISE ON FAILLIR, &c.

He (was near) losing his life in that rencounter. He  
*faillir perdre* \* art. *rencontre* f.  
 (was near) falling into the snare which was laid for him.  
*faillir ind-4 donner* piège m. *qu'on avait tendu* \* lui  
 His strength fails him every day. Let us  
 \* art. f. pl. *défaillir lui* art. m. pl. *Donnez-nous*  
 have something to eat directly; we are fainting with  
 \* \* *manger* 2 *vite* 1 *de*  
 fatigue and hunger. I cannot meet him, he shuns  
 — pr. *faim* *ne puis rencontrer*  
 me. When we have no employ, we endeavour to  
*on sait* *s'occuper* *chercher* *se*  
 fly from ourselves. Would he not avoid flatterers,  
 \* *soi-même* *fuir* art. *flatteur* m. pl.  
 if he knew all their falsehood? He died by a (very painful)  
 ind-2 *fausseté* f. *de* *cruel* 2  
 disease. She died of grief (for the loss of) her son.  
*maladie* f. 1 ind-4 *chagrin* m. *d'avoir perdu*  
 He is dying. She was expiring with grief, when the fear  
*se mourir* *se mourir* *de* *crainte* f.  
 of death at last wrested her secret from her  
 art. *enfin arracher* ind-3 —m. \* *lui*.

*Quérir*, to fetch, is used in familiar conversation after *venir*, *envoyer*, *aller*, as, *envoyez quérir*, send for; *allez quérir*, go and fetch.

ACQUÉRIR, to acquire.

*Part. pres.* acquérant. *Past.* acquis.

*IND. pres.* acquiers, acquiers, acquiert, acquérons, acquérez, acquièrent.

*Imper.* acquérais. *Pret.* acquis. *Fut.* acquerrai. *COND.* acquerrais.

*IMP.* acquiers, acquière, acquérons, acquérez, acquièrent.

*SUBJ. pres.* acquièr-e, -es, -e, acquér-ions, -iez, acquièrent.

*Imperf.* acquisse.

*S'enquérir*, to inquire, and *requérir*, to request, are conjugated as *acquérir*.

*Conquérir*, to conquer, is seldom used but in the *IND. pret.* je conquis, &c. and in the *SUBJ. imperf.* je conquisse. Its chief use is in the *compound tenses*.

*Ouïr*, to hear, is only employed in the *INF. pres.* ouïr. *Part. past.* ouï. *IND. pret.* j'ouïs, tu ouïs, &c. and *SUBJ. imperf.* j'ouïsses, tu ouïsses, &c. Its principal use is in the *compound tenses*, when it is generally accompanied by another verb; as, *je l'ai*, or *je l'avais ouï dire*, I have, or I had heard it said.

VÊTIR, to clothe.

*Part. pres.* vêtant.\* *Past.* vêtu.

*IND. pres.* vêts,\* vêts,\* vêt,\* vêtons, vêtez, vêtent.

*Imperf.* vêtais. *Pret.* vêtis. *Fut.* vêtirai. *COND.* vêtirais.

*IMP.* vêts,\* vête,\* vêtons, vêtez, vêtent.

*SUBJ. pres.* vête. *Imperf.* vêtisse.

N. B. *Vêtir* is seldom used in the forms marked with an asterisk, and is most frequently reflected.

*Revêtir*, to clothe, to invest, is used through all the tenses; *dévêtir*, to divest, is principally used as a reflected verb, and in some forms only.

### EXERCISE ON QUERIR, &c.

Send for the physician, and follow exactly his advice.

and fetch my cane.	Every day	he acquired
* canne f.	art. jour m. pl.	ind-3 de art.
celebrity by	works	calculated to fix the atten-
= f.	de art. ouvrage m. pl.	fait pour
tion of an enlightened public.	That I would acquire	
2	1	subj-2 de art.
riches at the expense	of my honesty!	He had acquired
dépens m. pl.	probité f.	



BRANCH III. *Ouvrir.*

## CUEILLIR, to gather.

<i>Part. Pres.</i>	cueillant.	<i>Past.</i>	cueilli.	<i>IND. pres.</i>	cueille.
<i>Imperf.</i>	cueillais.	<i>Pret.</i>	cueillis.	<i>Fut.</i>	cueillera
<i>COND.</i>	cueillerais.	<i>IMPER.</i>	cueille.	<i>SUBJ. pres.</i>	cueille.
<i>Imperf.</i>	cueillisse.				

Thus, *accueillir*, to welcome, and *recueillir*, to collect.

*Saillir*, to protect, has only *saillant*, *sailli*; and the following forms: *il saille*, *il saillait*, *il saillera*, *il saillera*, *il saillait*, *qu'il saille*, *qu'il saillît*. But *saillir*, to gush out, is regularly conjugated like *finir*; *saillissant*, *je*

by his merit great influence over the opinions of his contemporaries. I have inquired about that man (every where) *temporain* *de* *—là partout*

and have not (been able) (to hear any thing of him.) Who *je* *pu* *en avoir de nouvelles.* *Qui est-*

has requested it of you? Sesostris, king of Egypt, *ce qui* 3 4 *en* 2 \* 1

conquered a great part of Asia. The formidable empire *art.* 2 1

which Alexander conquered did not last longer than *—dre* *ind-6* *durer plus long-temps*

his life. I have heard that important news. He dressed *f.* *ouïr-dire* 2 *sing. 1* *se vêtir*

himself in haste and (went out) immediately. I wish *\* à art. hâte f. sortir sur-le-champ. voudrais*

she would dress the children with more care. If his *que* *vêtir subj-2* *de*

fortune permitted him, he would clothe all the poor of his *permettait le lui*

parish. Two servants clothed him with his ducal *paroisse f. domestique revêtir de 2*

mantle. He only passed for a traveller; but *manteau m. 1 ne ind-2 que voyageur*

lately he has assumed the character of an envoy. It *depuis peu revêtir. un \* envoyé*

begins to be very warm; it is time to (throw off *commencer faire chaud; de se dé-*

some clothing.) *vêtir.*

*saillis*, &c., *ils saillissent*, &c. Its principal use is in the third persons.

ASSAILLIR, *to assault*.

<i>Part. pres.</i>	<i>assaillant.</i>	<i>Past.</i>	<i>assailli.</i>	<i>IND. pres.</i>	<i>assaille.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>assaillais.</i>	<i>Pret.</i>	<i>assaillis.</i>	<i>Fut.</i>	<i>assaillirai.</i>
<i>COND.</i>	<i>assaillirais.</i>	<i>IMPER.</i>	<i>assaille.</i>	<i>SUB.</i>	<i>assaille.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>assaillisse.</i>				

### EXERCISE ON BRANCH III.

I will *gather* with pleasure some of these flowers and  
 fruits, since you wish to have some. Do not *gather* pr-pron.  
*puisque être bien-aise de en*  
 these peaches, before they are ripe. That is a  
*f. pl. avant que ne sub-1 mûr. Ce*  
 country where they neither reap corn, nor (gather)  
*pays où on ne recueillir ni blé ni \**  
 grapes. We shall collect in ancient history important  
*vin recueillir 2 1 de art. — 2*  
 and valuable facts. He received us in the most polite manner.  
*précieux 3 fait 1. accueillir de 2 manière*  
 Poverty, misery, sickness, persecution, in a  
*f. 1 art. f. art. f. art. maladie 5 f. pl. art. f. en*  
 word, all the misfortunes in the world, have (fallen upon)  
*malheur m. pl. de accueillir*  
 him. You will give six inches to that cornice; it will  
*voulez pouce m. pl. corniche f. f.*  
*project* too much. That balcony *projected* too much; it  
*balcon m. ind-2*  
 darkened the dining-room. When Moses struck  
*obscurcir ind-2 Quand Moïse frapper ind-3*  
 the rock, there gushed out (of it) a spring of (fresh running)  
*rocher m. il ind-3 en source f. vif 2*  
 water. The blood gushed from his vein with impetuosity.  
*f. 1 ind-2 veine f. =*  
 We shall *assault* the enemy to-morrow in their intrenchments.  
*pl. demain retranchement.*  
 Were we not overtaken by a horrible storm? At every word  
*ind-3 assailli tempête f. à chaque*  
 they said to him concerning his son, the good (old man)  
*que on disait \* de vieillard*  
 leaped for joy. Shall you not shudder with fear?  
*tressaillir ind-2 de joie. tressaillir peur f.*  
 N. B. *Tressaillir*, to start, conjugated like *assaillir*,  
 makes in the fut. *je tressaillirai*, or *tressaillera*, &c.

## IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

*Avoir*, to have, is conjugated at length, p. 125.

*Ravoir*, to have again, and *se ravoir*, to recover, are only used in the present of the infinitive.

*Choir*, to fail, has only the participle past, *chu*, *chue*, formerly *chute*, preserved in *chape-chute*.

*DECHOIR*, to decay.

(No Part. pres.) Part. past. *déchu*.

IND. pres. *déchois*, *déchois*, *déchoit*, *déchoyons*, *déchoyez*, *déchoient*.

(No Imperf.) Pret. *déchus*. Fut. *décherrai*. COND. *décherrais*. IMPER. *déchois*, *déchoie*, *déchoyons*, *déchoyez*, *déchoient*.

SUB. pres. *déchoie*, *déchoies*, *déchoie*, *déchoyi-ons*, —ez, *déchoient*. Imperf. *déchusse*.

*Echoir*, to fall to, to expire, has only now in use, the IND. pres. *il échoit*, sometimes pronounced *il échet*; the pret. *il échut*; fut. *il écherra*; cond. *il écherrait*; the imperf. SUBJ. *que j'échusse*, &c. and INF. *échoir*, *échéant*, *échu*.

N. B. *Choir*, *déchoir*, *échoir*, take the auxiliary *être*.

*Falloir*, to be necessary, is an impersonal verb, the conjugation of which has been given, p. 179.

## EXERCISE ON AVOIR, RAVOIR, &amp;c.

I had apartments that I liked; I will endeavour to have them  
 ind-2 *un logement* *aimer* *veux essayer* *de* s.  
 again. Beware of falling. How has he fallen into  
*prenez-garde* inf-1 *comment* en  
 poverty? Since the publication of his last work, he has  
*pauvreté?* *Depuis* *dernier*  
 much fallen in the esteem of the public. If he do not alter  
*déchoir* *changer*  
 his conduct, he will decline every day in his reputation  
 de \* *déchoir de jour-en-jour* de —f.  
 and credit. He has put in the lottery, and he hopes  
 pr. pron. —m. *mis à* *loterie* f.  
 that a capital prize will fall (to his share.) That bill  
 \* art. *gros* *lot* m. *échoir* *lui* *lettre* f.  
 of exchange has expired. The first term expires at Mid-  
*change* *échoir.* *terme* m. *à la Saint*

MOUVOIR, *to move.**Part. pres.* mouvant.*Part. past.* mu.*IND. pres.* meus, meus, meut, mouv-ons, —ez, meuvent.*Imperf.* mouvais. *Pret.* mus. *Fut.* mouvrai. *COND.* mouvrais.*IMPER.* meus, meuve, mouvons, mouvez, meuvent.*SUBJ. pres.* meuv-e, —es, —e, mouv-ions, —iez, meuvent.*Imperf.* musse.

In the same manner are conjugated, *émouvoir*, to stir up, to move; *promouvoir*, to promote; and *démouvoir*, to make one desist.

The first, whether in an actual or figurative sense, is much used. The second is employed in speaking of a dignity. The third is a law term, and is only used in the *INF. pres.*

PLEUVOIR, *to rain (impersonal.)**Part. pres.* pleuvant.*Past. plu.**IND. pres.* il pleut.*Imperf.* il pleuvait.*Pret.* il plut.*Fut.* il pleuvra.*COND.* il pleuvrait.*SUB. pres.* qu'il pleuve.*Imperf.* qu'il plût.

summer. You have drawn on me a bill of exchange; when  
*Jean.* *tirer sur moi*

is it payable? I did not believe that I must so soon (have taken)

*échoir ind-1* *croyais* *sub-2* *faire*

that journey. He must have sunk under the efforts

*voyage m.* *ind-4* *que succomber* *sub-2*

of (so many) enemies.

*tant de*

## EXERCISE ON MOUVOIR, &amp;c.

The spring which moves the whole machine is very inge-  
*ressort m.* *2 tout 1 —f.*

nious, though very simple. It was passion which moved

= *quoique* — *Ce ind-1 art. f.* *ind-4*

him to that action. Can you doubt that the soul, though it

—f. *Pouvez*

f.

is spiritual, moves the body at pleasure? That is a man

\* — *tuel ne* *sub-1* *à sa volonté?* *Ce*

whom nothing moves. We had scarcely lost sight of

*émouvoir* *ind-3 à peine perdu vue f. 3 2 art.*

land when there arose a violent tempest. We

*terre f. 1* *que il s'émouvoir ind-3 grande tempête f.*

were moved with fear and pity. When the famous

*ind-2 émus de crainte f.* *pr. pitié f. Quand célèbre*

d'Aguesseau was promoted to the dignity of chancellor, all

= f. *chancelier* *art.*



POUVOIR, *to be able.**Part. pres. pouvant.**Part. past. pu.*IND. *pres. puis or peux, peux, peut, pouv-ons, —ez, peuvent.*IMPERF. *pouvais. Pret. pus. Fut. pourrai. COND. pourrais.*(No imperative.) SUBJ. *pres. puisse. Imperf. pusse.*

REMARK. Conversation and poetry admit *je peux*; but in interrogations, *puis-je*? and not *peux-je*? must be used.

SAVOIR, *to know.**Part. pres. sachant.**Part. past. su.*IND. *pres. sais, sais, sait, savons, savez, savent. Imperf. savais.*PRET. *sus. Fut. saurai. COND. saurais.*IMPER. *sache, sache, sachons, sachez, sachent.*SUBJ. *pres. sache. Imperf. susse.*

*Seoir*, to become, to befit, has only the *part. pres. séyant*; and the third person of the simple tenses, *il sied, ils sièent, il séyait, il siéra, il siérait, qu'il siée*. But *seoir*, to sit, is used only in the two participles, *séant* and *sis*. This verb is also used impersonally.

France showed the greatest joy. That bishop well  
*f. en témoigner ind-3 f. évêque*  
 deserved by his talents and by his virtues, that the king  
*mériter ind-2*  
 should promote him to the dignity of primate. The people  
*sub-2 primat sing.*  
 think that it rains frogs and insects  
*croit de art. grenouille f. pl. pr-art. insecte m. pl.*  
 at certain seasons. It will not rain to-day, but I  
*en — temps pl. d'aujourd'hui*  
 (am fearful) of its raining to-morrow.  
*craindre que \* ne sub-1*

## EXERCISE ON POUVOIR, SAVOIR, &amp;c.

When he arrived at home, he (was quite ex-  
*ind-5 with être chez-lui n'en pouvoir*  
 hausted.) The minister had (so many) people at his  
*ind-2 plus ministre ind-2 tant de monde à*  
*levee,* that I could not speak to him. Are you afraid  
*audience, ind-2 \* 2 craignez 1*  
 that he will not accomplish that affair? I know  
*pouvoir sub-1 venir à bout de*  
 that he is not your friend, but I know likewise that he is a  
*de pl. aussi \**

## ASSEOIR, to sit.

*Part. pres. asséyant.**Part. past. assis.**IND. pres. assieds, assieds, assied, asséy-ons, —ez, —ent.**Imperf. asséyais. Pret. assis. Fut. assiérαι, or asséyerai.**COND. assiérαιs, or asséyerαιs. IMPER. assieds, asséye, asséyons, —ez, —ent. SUBJ. pres. asséye. Imperf. assisse.*

N. B. This verb is more frequently reflected, as *s'asseoir*, to sit down. Its compound *rasseoir*, to sit again, to calm, or to sit down again, is conjugated in the same manner.

## VOIR, to see.

*Part. pres. voyant.**Part. past. vu.**IND. pres. vois, vois, voit, voyons, voyez, voient.**Imperf. voyais. Pret. vis. Fut. verrai. COND. verrais.**IMPER. vois, voie, voyons, voyez, voient.**SUBJ. pres. voie, voies, voie, voyions, voyiez, voient. Imp. visse.*

man of probity. Let them *know* that their pardon depends on  
*bien* *grâce dépendre de*  
 their submission. I could wish that he *knew* his lessons  
*soumission* *désirer cond-1 sub-2*  
 a little better. Let us see if this new-fashioned  
*voyons d'un nouveau goût 2*  
 gown becomes you, or not. Be assured that too gaudy  
*robe f. 1 non art. voyant*  
 colours will not become you. The head-dress which that  
*f. coiffure f. que*  
 lady wore became her very ill. These colours become  
*porter ind-2 ind-2 lui inf-3*  
 you so well, you (would do wrong) to wear any others.  
*avoir tort cond-1 de en porter de*  
 Set that child in this arm-chair, and take care lest he  
*asseoir m. fauteuil m. prenez-garde que*  
 fall. I will sit down on the top of that hill,  
*ne subj-1 s'asseoir sommet m. colcau m.*  
 whence I shall discover a prospect (no less) magnificent  
*découvrir scène f. aussi — que*  
 than diversified. We (were seated) on the banks of the  
*varié s'asseoir ind-6 bord m. pl.*  
 Thames, whence we (were contemplating) myriads of  
*Tamise f. ind-2 de art. millier*  
 vessels, which bring every year, the riches of the two  
*vaisseau apporter art. pl.*  
 hemispheres.

*Revoir*, to see again, and *entrevoir*, to have a glimpse of, are conjugated in the same manner; but *prévoir*, to foresee, makes in the future and the conditional, *je prévoirai*, &c. *je prévoirais*, &c.

*Pourvoir*, to provide, differs in the *pret.* *je pourvus*, *tu pourvus*, &c. *fut.* *je pourvoirai*, &c. *COND.* *je pourvoirais*, &c. and *imperf.* *SUBJ.* *que je pourvusse*, &c.

*Surseoir*, to supersede, though a compound of *seoir*, is conjugated like *voir*, except that it makes *fut.* *je surseoirai*, &c. *COND.* *je surseoirais*, &c. and *part. past.* *sursis*.

VALOIR, to be worth.

*Part. pres.* *valant.*

*Part. past.* *valu.*

*IND. pres.* *vaux, vauz, vaut, valons, valez, valent.*

*Imperf.* *valais.* *Pret.* *valus.* *Fut.* *vaudrai.* *COND.* *vaudrais.*

*IMPER.* *vaux, vaille, valons, valez, vaillent.*

*SUBJ. pres.* *vaille, vailles, vaille, valions, valiez, vaillent.*

*Imperf.* *valusse.*

*Revaloir*, to return like for like, and *équivaloir*, to be equivalent, to follow *valoir*; but *prévaloir*, to prevail, makes in the *SUBJ. pres.* *que je prévale, que tu prévalues, qu'il prévale, que nous prévalions*, &c.

VOULOIR, to be willing.

*Part. pres.* *voulant.* *Part. past.* *voulu.*

*IND. pres.* *veux, veuz, veut, voulons, voulez, veulent.*

*Imperf.* *voulais.* *Pret.* *voulus.* *Fut.* *voudrai.* *COND.* *voudrais.*

*SUBJ. pres.* *veuill-e, —es, —e, voulions, vouliez, veuillent.*

*Imperf.* *voulusse.*

N. B. The imperative *veuille, veuillons, veuillez*, is also used, particularly *veuillez*, with the sense of, *be so good as, so kind as to*, &c.

### EXERCISE ON VOIR, &c.

See the admirable order of the universe: does it not announce

2 m. 1

a supreme architect?

Has he again seen with pleasure his

— 2 artisan m. 1.

country and his friends? (Had he had a glimpse of) the dawn

pays

of this fine day? To finish their affairs, it would be neces-

Pour

aurore  
falloir

## IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

BRANCH I. on *Rendre*.

SOUDRE, to solve, now obsolete, and replaced by

RESOUDRE, to resolve.

*Part. pres. résolvant. Part. past. résolu, or résous.**IND. pres. résous, résous, résout, résolv-ons, —ez, —ent.**Imperf. résolvais. Pret. résolu. Fut. résoudrai.**COND. résoudrais. IMPER. résous, résolve, résolv-ons, -ez, -ent.**SUBJ. pres. résolve. Imperf. résolusse.*

This verb has two participles past, *résolu*, when it means *determined*; and *résous*, when it means *resolved into*: in this last sense it has no feminine.

*Absoudre*, to absolve, is conjugated like *résoudre*; but has neither *pret. IND.* nor *imperf. SUBJ.*; its participle past is *absous*, m. *absoute*, f.

sary for them to (*see one another.*) I clearly *foresaw*, (from  
*que \* ils \* s'entrevoir subj-2 bien dès-*  
 that time,) all the obstacles he would have to surmount. *Would*  
*lors — m. surmonter. ind-2*

you have the judge (*put off*) the execution of the  
*\* que surseoir subj-2*

sentence that he had pronounced? I shall not *put off* the pur-  
*arrêt rendu*

suit of that affair. If men do not *provide* (for it,) God  
*suite f. pl. art. y*

will *provide* for it. *Would* this book *be good* for nothing? You  
*valoir \**

have not paid for this ground more than it *is worth*; (are you  
*\* terre f. f. ne crain-*

afraid) that it *is not worth* six hundred pounds? Let us  
*dre que subj-1 livre f. pl. sterling?*

take arbitrators. One ounce of gold *is equivalent* to  
*prenons de art. arbitre once f.*

fifteen ounces of silver. Doubt not that reason and  
*art. art.*

truth will *prevail* at last. I can and *will* tell the truth  
*\* ne subj-1 à la longue pron. dire*

If you *are willing*, he will *be willing* too. Let us *resolve* to  
*le le aussi vouloir \**

resist our passions, and we shall be sure to conquer them.  
*combattre de vaincre*

(*Be so good as*) to lend me your grammar.  
*vouloir \* prêter*



*Dissoudre*, to dissolve, has the same irregularities, and wants the same tenses, as *absoudre*.

*COUDRE*, to sew.

*Part. pres.* cousant.

*Part. past.* cousu.

*IND. pres.* couds, couds, coud, cousons, cousez, cousent.

*Imperf.* cousais. *Pret.* cousis. *Fut.* coudrai. *COND.* coudrais.

*IMPER.* couds. *SUBJ. pres.* couse. *Imperf.* cousisse.

*Découdre*, to unsew, and *recoudre*, to sew again, are conjugated in the same manner, so likewise *sourdre*, to issue from a fountain, which is only used in the infinitive *sourdre* and present of the indicative *il sourd*.

*METTRE*, to put.

*Part. pres.* mettant.

*Part. past.* mis.

*IND. pres.* mets, mets, met, mettons, mettez, mettent.

*Imperf.* mettais. *Pret.* mis. *Fut.* mettrai. *COND.* mettrais.

*IMPER.* mets. *SUBJ. pres.* mette. *Imperf.* misse.

In the same manner are conjugated the derivatives,

admettre	to admit	permettre	to permit
commettre	to commit	promettre	to promise
compromettre	to compromise	remettre	to replace
se démettre	{ to put out of joint to resign	soumettre	to subject
omettre		transmettre	to transmit
	to omit	s'entremettre	to intermeddle

### EXERCISE UPON RESOUDRE, &c.

Wood which is burned resolves itself into ashes  
*art. bois m. on brûler ind-2 se résoudre \* en cendre f.*  
 and smoke. Have they resolved on peace or war?  
*pr. fumée f. on \* art. f. art. f.*  
 The fog has resolved itself into rain. Could that  
*brouillard m. se résoudre ind-4 \* pluie f.*  
 judge thus lightly absolve the guilty? Strong  
*si légèrement cond-1 coupable m. pl. art. fort 2*  
 waters dissolve metals. Those drugs (were dissolved)  
*f. pl. 1 art. on 1 drogue 3 ind-4 2*  
 before they were put into that medicine. My sister  
*avant que de les \* mettre remède m.*  
 was sewing all day yesterday. That piece is not well sewed, it  
*ind-3 \* hier m.*  
 must (be sewed over again.) Unpick that lace, and sew it  
*la inf-1 Découdre dentelle f. 2 1*  
 again very carefully. Does he set a great value  
*avec beaucoup de soin mettre prix m.*

MOUDRE, *to grind* (corn, &c.)*Part. pres.* moulant.*Part. past.* moulu.*IND. pres.* mouds, mouds, moud, moul-ons, —ez, —ent.*Imperf.* moulais. *Pret.* moulus. *Fut.* moudrai.*COND.* moudrais.*IMPER.* mouds, moule, moulons, moulez, moulent.*SUBJ. pres.* moule. *Imperf.* moulusse.

In the same manner are conjugated the derivatives :

émoudre { *to grind* remoudre *to grind again* (corn, &c.)  
(knives, &c.) rémoudre *to grind again* (knives, &c.)PRENDRE, *to take.**Part. pres.* prenant.*Part. past.* pris.*IND. pres.* prends, prends, prend, pren-ons, —ez, prennent.*Imperf.* prenais. *Pret.* pris. *Fut.* prendrai. *COND.* prendrais.*IMPER.* prends, prennne, prenons, prenez, prennent.*SUBJ. pres.* prenn-e, —es, —e, pren-ions, —iez, prennent.*Imperf.* prisse.

upon riches? I never *admitted* those principles. Has  
à art.  
he *committed* that fault? If he (would take my  
*faute f.* *me*  
advice,) he would *resign* his charge in favour of his  
*croyait se démettre cond-1. de f. en =*  
son. He *put* his arm (out of joint) yester-  
*se démettre ind-3 \* art. bras m. \**  
day. I will *omit* nothing that depends on me to  
*de ce dépendre ind-7 de pour*  
serve you. God frequently *permits* the wicked to  
*souvent que méchant m. pl. \**  
prosper. *Put* this book in its place again. Under  
*prosperer sub-1 remettre à —f. \**  
whatever form of government you (may live,) remem-  
*quelque gouvernement m. que viviez se sou-*  
ber that your first duty is to be obedient to the laws. It  
*venir devoir m. de soumis*  
frequently happens that fathers *transmit* to their children  
*arriver art.*  
both their vices and their virtues. He has long *meddled*  
*long-temps s'entre-*  
with public affairs; but his endeavours have not been  
*mettre de art. 2 1 effort*  
crowned with success.  
*couronner de art. m*

In the same manner are conjugated,

apprendre	to learn	entreprendre	to undertake
désapprendre	to unlearn	se méprendre	to mistake
comprendre	to understand	reprendre	to retake, to reply
déprendre	to separate	surprendre	to surprise

ROMPRE, to break.

Part. pres. rompant.

Part. past. rompu.

IND. pres. romps, romps, rompt, romp-ons, —ez, —ent.

Imperf. rompais. Pret. rompis. Fut. romprai. COND. romprais.

IMPER. romps, rompe, rompons, rompez, rompent.

SUBJ. pres. rompe. Imperf. rompisse.

In the same manner are conjugated *corrompre*, to corrupt, and *interrompre*, to interrupt.

### EXERCISE ON MOUDRE, PRENDRE, &c.

I took great pains: but, at last, I ground all the  
 ind-3 *beaucoup de* sing. *enfin*  
 coffee. Grind those razors with care. Those knives  
*café m.* *rasoir m.* *couteau m.*  
 (are just) ground. This grain is not sufficiently ground, it  
*venir d'être* *assez*  
 should be ground again. I wish that you would take  
*falloir ind-1 le inf-1* *vouloir*  
 courage. What news have you learned? Philosophy com-  
 f. pl. art.  
*prehends* logic, ethics, physics, and  
*logique f. art. morale f. art. physique f. art.*  
 metaphysics. It is (with difficulty) that he divests himself of  
*métaphysique f. Ce difficilement que se déprendre*  
 his opinions. He has forgotten all that he knew. I fear  
*désapprendre ce que ind-2 que*  
 you will undertake a task above your strength. Could  
*ne subj-1 tâche f. au-dessus de f. pl. \**  
 he have been mistaken so grossly? I reproved  
 cond-2 *grossièrement reprendre ind-2*  
 him continually for his faults, but (to no purpose.) We  
*sans cesse de défaut inutilement*  
 surprised the enemy, and cut them to pieces. In the middle  
*ind-3 pl. tailler en à*  
 of the road the axletree of our carriage broke. Bad  
*chemin essieu m. carosse se rompre art.*  
 company corrupts the minds of young people. Why do  
 f. pl. sing. gens *pourquoi*  
 you interrupt your brother, when you see him busy?  
*quand occupé*

SUIVRE, to follow.

*Part. pres.* suivant. *Part. past.* suivi.

*IND. pres.* suis, suis, suit, suivons, suivez, suivent.

*Imperf.* suivais. *Pret.* suivis. *Fut.* suivrai. *COND.* suivrais.

*IMPER.* suis, suive, suivons, suivez, suivent.

*SUBJ. pres.* suive. *Imperf.* suivisse.

N. B. *S'ensuivre*, to ensue, only used in the third person singular and plural of every tense, and *poursuivre*, to pursue, are conjugated in the same manner.

VAINCRE, to conquer, to vanish.

*Part. pres.* vainquant. *Part. past.* vaincu.

*IND. pres.* vaincs,\* vaincs,\* vainc,\* vainqu-ons,\* —ez, —ént

*Imperf.* vainquais. *Pret.* vainquis. *Fut.* vaincrai. *CON.* vaincrais.

*IMPER.* vaincs,\* vainque, vainquons,\* vainqu-ez, —ent.

*SUBJ. pres.* vainque. *Imperf.* vainquisse.

All the persons of this verb, marked with an asterisk, are very little used. But its derivative, *convaincre*, to convince, is used in all its tenses and persons.

### EXERCISE ON SUIVRE, &c.

(For a long while) we followed that method, which was  
*long-temps* 2 ind-3 I f. ind-2  
 only calculated to mislead us. What (is the consequence?)  
*ne que propre égarer que s'ensuivre*  
 See the errors that have sprung from this propo-  
*sition*, which appeared so true. We pursued our course  
 ind-2 suivre ind-2 chemin  
 when some cries, which came from the midst of the  
*lorsque de art. cri, m. pl. \* sortis fond m.*  
 forest, excited terror in our souls. The Greeks  
*forêt f. porter ind-3 art. = f. Grec*  
 vanquished the Persians at Marathon, Salamis, Platea,  
*Perse à pr. Salamine pr. Platée*  
 and Mycale. I have, at last, convinced him, by such  
 pr. de art. si 2  
 powerful reasons, of the greatness of his fault, that I (have  
*fort 3 f. pl. 1 énormité faute f. ne*  
 no doubt) but he will repair it. It is during  
*douter nullement que ne réparer subj-1 Ce pendant*  
 winter that they thrash the corn in cold countries.  
 art. on battre froid 2 art. pays m. pl. 1



BATTRE, *to beat.**Part. pres. battant. Part. past. battu.**IND. pres. bats, bats, bat, battons, battez, battent.**Imperf. battais. Pret. battis. Fut. battrai. COND. battrais**IMPER. bats. SUBJ. pres. batte. Imperf. battisse.*

Conjugate in the same manner,

abattre	<i>to pull down</i>	combattre	<i>to fight</i>
rabattre	<i>to abate</i>	débattre	<i>to debate</i>
rebattre	<i>to beat again</i>	s'ébattre	<i>to be merry</i>

*être, to be, is conjugated at full length, p. 136.*VIVRE, *to live.**Part. pres. vivant. Part. past. vécu.**IND. pres. vis, vis, vit, vivons, vivez, vivent. Imperf. vivais.**Pret. vécus. Fut. vivrai. COND. vivrais. IMP. vis.**SUBJ. pres. vive. Imperf. vécusse.*In the same manner are conjugated, *revivre, to revive*; and *survivre, to survive*.

The enemy was so completely *beaten* in that engagement, that  
 pl. —ment rencontre f.

he was forced to abandon thirty leagues of the country. The

pl. de lieue f. \* pays

cannon (*beat down*) the tower. They were *fighting* with

canon *abattre* ind-3 tour f. \* ind-2 un

unexampled fury, when a panic terror made

sans exemple 2 acharnement m. 1 panique 2 = f. 1 ind-3

them take flight, and dispersed them in an instant. *Beat*

leur art. fuite f. m. rebattre

these mattresses again. Happy are those who *live* in soli-

matelas m. pl. \* \* art. re-

tude! Long live that good king! He

traite f. que 1 long-temps 4 sub-1 3 2

did not long *survive* a person who was so dear to him.

ind-3 à f. art.

Fathers *live again* in their children. He was in a strange de-

jection of mind; but the news which he has received has

cablement f. pl. f. pl. ont fait

revived him.

inf-1

BRANCH II. *Plaire.*

*Braire*, to bray, and *il brait, ils braient, il braira, ils brairont, il brairait, ils brairaient*, are only used when speaking of asses; though it may be used with propriety in the other persons by comparison.

FAIRE, to do.

*Part. pres.* fesant. *Part. past.* fait.

*IND. pres.* fais, fais, fait, fesons, faites, font.

*Imperf.* fesais. *Pret. fis.* *Fut.* ferai. *COND.* ferais.

*IMPER.* fais, fasse, fesons, faites, fassent. *SUBJ. pres.* fasse.

*Imperf.* fisse.

In the same manner are conjugated,

contrefaire	to counterfeit	refaire	to do again
défaire	to undo	satisfaire	to satisfy
redéfaire	to undo again	surfaire	to exact
forfaire*	to trespass	méfaire*	to misdo
malfaire*	to do ill	parfaire*	to perfect

## EXERCISE ON BRANCH II. FAIRE, &amp;c.

What will you have him do? Do not make (so  
*Que vouloir* \* *que il* subj-1  
much) noise. Do they never exact? That woman mimicked  
*tant de bruit* ind-2  
all the persons whom she had seen; this levity rendered  
f. pl. *que* f. pl. *légèreté f.* ind-3  
her odious. It was with difficulty he (*divested* himself) of the  
f. ind-3 *peine que se défaire*  
false opinions which had been given him in his infancy.  
— f. on \* f. pl. *lui* f.  
Could it be possible that we should not again make a jour-  
subj-2 art. \* *voy-*  
ney to Paris, Rome, and Naples? He says that you  
*age de -* pr. pr. *dit*  
have offended him, and that, if you do not satisfy him quickly,  
*offensé* *prompte-*  
he will find means to satisfy himself. Every  
*ment* art. *moyen sing. de se lui-même*  
night, she milked her sheep, which gave her a (great  
art. *soir m. pl. ind-2 brebis pl. ind-2 lui abon-*  
quantity) of wholesome milk. Have you milked your  
*dant 2 \* et sain 3 lait m. 1.*

\* These four verbs are only used in this form, and the partic, past, *forfait, malfait, méfait, and parfait.*

TRAIRE, *to milk* (defective.)*Part. pres.* trayant. *Part. past.* trait.*IND. pres.* trais, trais, trait, trayons, trayez, traient.*Imperf.* trayais. (*No pret.*) *Fut.* trairai. *COND.* trairais.*IMPER.* trais, traie, trayons, trayez, traient.*SUBJ. pres.* traie. (*No imperf.*)

## Conjugate in the same manner

attirer	<i>to allure</i>	retraire	<i>to find draw</i>
abstraire	<i>to abstract</i>	retraire	<i>to redeem</i>
distraindre	<i>to divert</i>	soustraire	<i>to substract</i>
extraire	<i>to extract</i>		

All these words are principally used in the compound tenses.

BRANCH III. *Paraître.*NAÎTRE, *to be born.**Part. pres.* naissant. *Part. past.* né.*IND. pres.* nais, nais, naît, naissons, naissez, naissent.*Imperf.* naissais. *Pret.* naquis. *Fut.* naîtrai. *COND.* naîtrais.*IMPER.* nais. *SUBJ. pres.* naisse. *Imperf.* naquisse.

This verb takes the auxiliary *être*; but its derivative, *renaître*, to be born again, has no participle past, and, consequently, no compound tenses.

goats? Are the cows milked? Salt is good to  
*chèvre* f. pl. *vache* f. pl. art. *Sel* m. *pour*  
*entice* pigeons. You will never know the nature of  
*attirer* art. m. pl. *connaître*  
 bodies, if you do not abstract their accessory qualities from  
 art. = 2 = 1  
 those which are inherent (in them.) The least thing (diverts  
 — leur moindre le  
 his attention.) Will you not extract that charming passage?  
*distraindre* —m.  
 Have you darned your gown? Should he not redeem that  
*retraire*  
 land? What! would you have me screen those  
*Quoi!* ind-1 \* *que je soustraire* sub-1  
 guilty persons from the rigour of the laws?  
*coupable* m. pl. \* à *rigueur* f.

PAÎTRE, to graze, (defective.)

*Part. pres.* paissant. *Part. past. pu.*

*IND. pres.* pais, pais, pait, paissions, paisez, paissent.

*Imperf.* paissais. (*No pret.*) *Fut.* paîtrai. *COND.* paîtrais.

*IMPER.* païs. *SUBJ. pres.* paise. (*No imperf.*)

*Repaître*, to feed, to bait, is, like *paraître*, regular in all its tenses, making in the *pret.* *IND.* je repus, &c. and in the *imperf.* *SUBJ.* je repusse, &c.

#### BRANCH IV. Réduire.

*Bruire*, to roar, which is defective, has, besides this form, the *part. pres.* bruyant, oftener used as an adjective, as, *des flots bruyans*; and the two third persons of the *imperf.* *IND.* il bruyait, ils bruyaient.

*Luire*, to shine, and *réluire*, to glitter, make the *part. past.* *lui*, *rélui*, neither the *pret.* *IND.* nor *imperf.* *SUBJ.* are in use.

*Nuire*, to hurt, making *part. pres.* nuisant, *past.* *nui*, has all its tenses.

#### EXERCISE ON BRANCH III. NAITRE, &c.

Was not Virgil born at Mantua? It is from that poisoned  
*ind-3 Mantoue? Ce empoisonné 2*  
source that have arisen all the cruel wars that have  
*f. 1 que naître f. pl. 2 f. pl. 1*  
desolated the universe. The fable says that, as soon as  
*désoler f. dit aussitôt que*  
Hercules had (cut off) one of the heads of the hydra,  
*Hercule h m. couper tête f. pl. hydre f.*  
others sprang up. While their united  
*d'autres 2 il en renaître ind-2 1 Tandis que réuni 2*  
flocks fed on the tender and flowery  
*troupeau m. pl. 1 paître ind-2 \* 2 fleuri 3*  
grass, they sung under the shade of a tree the  
*herbe f. 1 chanter ind-2 à ombre*  
sweets of rural life. Your horses have not  
*douceur f. pl. art. champêtre 2. f. 1*  
fed to-day; you must have them fed.  
*repaître d'aujourd'hui \* \* faire 2 1 inf-1.*  
He is a man who thirsts after nothing but blood  
*Ce ne se repaître de 2 \* que 1*  
and slaughter.  
*pr. carnage m.*



## CONFIRE, to pickle.

<i>Part. pres.</i>	confisant.	<i>Part. past.</i>	confit.
<i>IND. pres.</i>	conf-is, —is, —it, —isons, —isez, —isent.		
<i>Imperf.</i>	confisais.	<i>Pret.</i>	confis.
		<i>Fut.</i>	confirai.
<i>COND.</i>	confirais.	<i>IMP.</i>	confis.
		<i>SUBJ. pres.</i>	confise.
<i>Imperf.</i>	confisse.		

Its derivative *déconfire*, to discomfit, is rather obsolete.

*Circoncire*, to circumcise, and *suffre*, to suffice, make in the *part. past.* *circoncis* and *suffi*, the rest is as *confire*.

## DIRE, to say.

<i>Part. pres.</i>	disant.	<i>Part. past.</i>	dit.
<i>IND. pres.</i>	dis, dis, dit, disons, DITES,* disent.		
<i>Imperf.</i>	disais.	<i>Pret.</i>	dis.
		<i>Fut.</i>	dirai.
		<i>COND.</i>	dirais.
<i>IMPER.</i>	dis, dise, disons, DITES,* disent.		
<i>SUBJ. pres.</i>	dise.	<i>Imperf.</i>	disse.

## EXERCISE ON BRANCH IV. BRUIRE, &amp;c.

The thunder which roared from afar announced a dreadful storm. They heard roar the waves  
*tonnerre m. bruire ind-2 dans art. lointain m. ind-2 terrible 2 orage m. 1 On ind-2 inf-1 flot m. pl.*  
of an agitated sea. That street is too noisy for those who  
*agité 2 mer f. 1 rue f. bruyant*  
love retirement and study. (I have a glimpse of) some-  
*art. retraite f. art. entrevoir quelque*  
thing that shines through those trees. A ray of hope  
*chose au-travers de rayon m.*  
shone upon us in the midst of the misfortunes which over-  
*ind-4 \* à milieu malheur m. pl. ac-*  
whelmed us. Every thing is well rubbed in that house; every  
*cabler ind-2 frotté*  
thing shines, even the floor. Would he not have  
*y reluire jusque à plancher m. \**  
injured you in that affair? Jesus Christ was circumcised eight  
*cond-2*

\* *Redire*, to say again, conformably to its primitive, makes REDITES, but

contredire	to contradict	} make	vous contredisez
dédire	to unsay		vous dédisez
interdire	to forbid		vous interdisez
médire	to slander		vous médisez
prédire	to foretel		vous prédisez
maudire	to curse		vous maudissez

This last makes *part. pres.* *maudissant*, with two *ss*, and consequently nous maudissons, &c. je maudissais, &c.

ECRIRE, to write.

*Part. pres. écrivant.*

*Part. past, écrit.*

*IND. pres. écris, écris, écrit, écriv-ons, —ez, —ent.*

*Imperf. écrivais. Pret. écrivis. Fut. écrirai. COND. écrirais.*

*IMP. écris. SUBJ. pres. écrive. Imperf. écrivisse.*

Conjugate in the same manner

circonscrire	to circumscribe	proscrire	to proscribe
décrire	to describe	récrire	to write again
inscrire	to inscribe	souscrire	to subscribe
prescrire	to prescribe	transcrire	to transcribe

LIRE, to read.

*Part. pres. lisant.*

*Part. past. lu.*

*IND. pres. lis, lis, lit, lisons, lisez, lisent. Imperf. lisais.*

*Pres. lus. Fut. lirai. COND. lirais. IMPER. lis.*

*SUBJ. pres. lise. Imperf. lusse.*

In the same manner are conjugated,

élire	to elect	relire	to read over again.
-------	----------	--------	---------------------

days after his birth.	Will you preserve these peaches
<i>naissance f.</i>	<i>* confire</i>
with sugar,	with honey, or with brandy?
<i>à art. sucre m.</i>	<i>art. miel m. art. eau-de-vie f.</i>
Did you pickle	cucumbers,
	<i>de art. concombre m. pl. pr. art. pourpier m.</i>
and sea-fennel?	If he loses his lawsuit, all his
<i>pr. art. perce-pierre f.</i>	<i>procès, m.</i>
property will not suffice.	
<i>bien</i>	

### EXERCISE ON DIRE, &c.

Always speak	truth, but with discretion.	Never contra-
<i>dire art. f.</i>		
dict (any one) in public.	You thought	you were serving
<i>personne en</i>	<i>penser ind-4</i>	<i>* * inf-1</i>
me in speaking thus: well,	(let it be so;) you	shall not
<i>en parler ainsi: eh! bien,</i>	<i>soit</i>	<i>en</i>
be contradicted. What! would you forbid	him all commu-	
<i>dédire</i>	<i>Quoi! * interdire</i>	
nication with his friends?	That woman who slandered	
<i>f.</i>		<i>ind-2 de</i>
every one, soon lost all kind	of respect.	You had
<i>ind-3 espèce f.</i>	<i>considération</i>	
foretold that event. Let us curse no one;	let us remember	
	<i>ne personne</i>	<i>se rappeler</i>
that our law forbids	us to curse even those who persecute us.	
<i>défendre</i>	<i>* de</i>	<i>persécuter</i>

RIRE, *to laugh.*

*Part. pres.* riant. *Past. ri.* IND. *pres.* ris, ris, rit, rions, riez, rient.  
*Imperf.* riaais. *Pret.* ris. *Fut.* rirai. COND. rirais.  
 IMPER. ris. SUBJ. *pres.* rie. *Imperf.* risse.

*Sourire*, to smile, is conjugated as *rire*.

*Frire*, to fry, besides the present of the infinitive, has only the *part. past.* frit; INDIC. *pres.* je fris, tu fris, il frit; *fut.* je frirai, tu, &c.; COND, je frirais, tu, &c.; IMPER. sing, fris. But it has all the compound tenses. The forms that are deficient are fully supplied by *faire*, prefixed to *frire*, as *fesant frire*, *je fesais frire*, &c.

BOIRE, *to drink.*

*Part. pres.* buvant. *Past. bu.*  
 IND. *pres.* bois, bois, boit, buvons, buvez, boivent.  
*Imperf.* buvais. *Pret.* bus. *Fut.* boirai. COND. boirais.  
 IMPER. bois, boive, buvons, buvez, boivent.  
 SUBJ. *pres.* boiv-e, —es, —e, buvions, buviez, boivent.  
*Imperf.* busse.

Write every day the reflections which you make on the  
 art. pl.  
 books you read. Did he not read that interesting his-  
 ind-2 2 1  
 tory with (a great deal) of pleasure? God is an infinite being,  
 2 être m.  
 who is circumscribed neither by time nor place.  
 1 ne ni art. ni pr. art. lieu m. pl.  
 Will you not describe in that episode the dreadful tempest  
 —m. horrible 2 f. 1  
 which assailed your hero? Get those soles and whittings  
 ind-3 faire 1 — pron. merlan 3  
 fried. If you wish to form your taste, read over and over, un-  
 inf-1 2 vouloir \* \* relire  
 ceasingly, the ancients. He was elected by a great majority of  
 sans-cesse ind-4 à —f.  
 voices. We have laughed heartily, and have resolved  
 debon cœur nous résolu  
 to (go on.) He did not answer him (any thing;) but  
 de continuer répondre ind-3 lui rien  
 he smiled at him, as a sign of approbation, in the kindest  
 ind-3 \* lui en \* de gracieux 2  
 manner.  
 air m. 1

In the same manner are conjugated,

*reboire* to drink again *s'emboire* to imbibe, a technical term used in painting.

*Clore*, to close, has only the *part. past*, clos; *ind. pres.* je clos, tu clos, il clot; *fut.* je clorai, tu cloras, &c.; *cond.* je clorais, tu clorais, &c.; and the *IMP. sing.* clos.

*Déclore*, to uncloze, *enclore*, to enclose, are defective in the same tenses as *clore*; but *forclore*, to debar, a law term, is only used in the *inf.* and *part. past*, forclos.

*Éclore*, to be hatched, as birds, or to blow like a flower, has only these forms; *inf.* éclore; *part. past*, éclos; *ind. pres.* il éclot, ils éclosent; *fut.* il éclora, ils écloreont; *cond.* il écloreait, ils écloreaient; and the *subj. pres.* qu'il éclore, qu'ils éclosent. But its compound tenses, which are formed with *être*, are much used.

CONCLURE, to conclude.

*Part. pres.* concluant. *Past.* conclu.

*IND. pres.* conclus, conclus, conclut, conclu-ons, —ez, —ent.

*Imperf.* concluais. *Pret.* conclus. *Fut.* conclurai.

*COND.* conclurais. *IMPER.* conclus. *SUBJ. pres.* conclue.

*Imperf.* conclusse.

N. B. *Exclure*, to exclude, is conjugated like *conclure*, except that its participle past is either *exclu* or *exclus*.

### EXERCISE ON BOIRE, CLORE, &c.

Seated under the shade of palm-trees, they were milking  
*Assis* à art. *palmier* pl. \* ind-2  
 their goats and ewes, and merrily drinking  
*chèvre* f. pl. pron. *brebis* f. pl. avec joie 2 ind-2 1  
 that nectar, which (was renewed) every day. Should  
 m. se renouveler ind-2 art. pl. \*  
 they not have drunk with ice? This window does not  
 cond-2 à art. f. f.  
 shut well; when you have made some alterations (in it),  
 ind-8 réparation f. pl. y  
 it will shut better. He had scarcely closed his eyes, when  
 f. mieux. à peine ind-6 \* art. que  
 the noise which they made at his door, awoke him.  
 que on ind-3 à réveiller ind-3  
 Have they not enclosed the suburbs within the city?  
 on faubourg m. pl. ville f.



## CROIRE, to believe.

*Part. pres.* croyant. *Past, cru.*

*IND. pres.* crois, crois, croit, croyons, croyez, croient.

*Imperf.* croyais. *Pret. crus.* *Fut.* croirai. *COND.* croirais.

*IMPER.* crois, croie, croyons, croyez, croient.

*SUBJ. pres.* croie, croies, croie, croyions, croyiez, croient.

*Imperf.* crusse.

It has no derivative but *accroire*, which is only used with *faire*, as, *faire accroire*, or *en faire accroire*, to impose upon credulity; and *s'en faire accroire*, to be self-conceited.

*Poindre* (upon *joindre*,) v. a. to sting, and v. n. to shoot forth, to dawn, has, besides the *inf.* *poindre*, the *ind. pres.* *il point*, and the *fut.* *il poindra*.

---

Will you *enclose* your park with a wall, or a hedge?  
*parc de mur m. pr. haie f.*

Put the eggs of those silk-worms in the sun,  
*mettez œuf. m. pl. ver-à-soie m. pl. à soleil m.*

that they may hatch. Those flowers just blown,  
*sub-1 nouvellement*

spread the sweetest fragrance. When did they conclude this  
*répandre doux parfum m. ind-4*

treaty? His enemies managed so well, that he was unani-  
*traité in. faire ind-3 ind-3 unani-*

mously excluded from the company. Did you think me  
*mement compagnie f. croire ind-1*

capable of so black an act? He possesses some kind of  
*noir 2 trait m. 1. avoir espèce*

knowledge; but (not so much as he thinks.)  
*savoir il s'en faire trop accroire.*

---

## OBSERVATIONS

## UPON THE TWO FOLLOWING TABLES.

The following Tables, which exhibit at one view all the primitive tenses, both of the regular and irregular verbs, and most of the defective, with reference to the pages where the other tenses are to be found, will, it is presumed, prove useful to those who will consult them.

TABLE OF THE PRIMITIVE TENSES OF THE  
FOUR REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.		INDICATIVE.		
<i>Present.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Preter. Def.</i>	
Parler	Parlant.	Parlé.	Je parle.	Je parlai.	page 143

SECOND CONJUGATION.

Punir.	Punissant.	Puni.	Je punis.	Je punis.	153
Sentir.	Sentant.	Senti.	Je sens.	Je sentis.	153
Mentir.	Mentant.	Menti.	Je mens.	Je mentis.	
Se repentir.	Se repentant.	Repenti.	Je me repens.	Je me repentis.	169
Partir.	Partant.	Parti.	Je pars.	Je partis.	
Sortir.	Sortant.	Sorti.	Je sors.	Je sortis.	
Dormir.	Dormant.	Dormi.	Je dors.	Je dormis.	
Servir.	Servant.	Servi.	Je sers.	Je servis.	
Ouvrir.	Ouvrant.	Ouvert.	J' ouvre.	J' ouvreis.	153
Couvrir.	Couvrant.	Couvert.	Je couvre.	Je couvreis.	
Offrir.	Offrant.	Offert.	J' offre.	J' offris.	
Souffrir.	Souffrant.	Souffert.	Je souffre.	Je souffris.	
Tenir.	Tenant.	Tenu.	Je tiens.	Je tins.	153
Venir.	Venant.	Venu.	Je viens.	Je vins.	

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Recevoir.	Recevant.	Reçu.	Je reçois.	Je reçus.	153
Devoir.	Devant.	Dû.	Je dois.	Je dus.	

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

Répandre.	Répandant.	Répandu.	Je répands.	Je répandis.	
Rendre.	Rendant.	Rendu.	Je rends.	Je rendis.	162
Fondre.	Fondant.	Fondu.	Je fonds.	Je fondis.	
Répondre.	Répondant.	Répondu.	Je réponds.	Je répondis.	
Tondre.	Tondant.	Tondu.	Je tonds.	Je tondis.	
Perdre.	Perdant.	Perdu.	Je perds.	Je perdis.	
Mordre.	Mordant.	Mordu.	Je mords.	Je mordis.	
Tordre.	Tordant.	Tordu.	Je tords.	Je tordis.	
Plaire.	Plaisant.	Plu.	Je plais.	Je plus.	162
Taire.	Taisant.	Tu.	Je tais.	Je tus.	
Paraître.	Paraissant.	Paru.	Je paraïs.	Je parus.	162
Croître.	Croissant.	Cru.	Je crois.	Je crus.	
Connaître.	Connaissant.	Connu.	Je connais.	Je connus.	
Reparaître.	Reparaissant.	Répu.	Je repaïs.	Je repus.	
Réduire.	Réduisant.	Réduit.	Je réduis.	Je réduisis.	162
Instruire.	Instruisant.	Instruit	J' instruis.	J' instruisis.	
Craindre.	Craignant.	Craint.	Je crains.	Je craignis.	
Peindre.	Peignant.	Peint.	Je peins.	Je peignis.	
Joindre.	Joignant.	Joint.	Je joins.	Je joignis.	162

# PRIMITIVE TENSES OF THE IRREGULAR WITH SOME DEFECTIVE VERBS.

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.		INDICATIVE.	
<i>Present.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Preter. Def.</i>
Aller.	Allant.	Allé	Je vais.	J'allai.

pag.  
182

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

Fleurir.	Fleurissant.	} Fleuri.	Je fleuris.	Je fleuris.	184
Hair.	Haïssant.		Je hais.	Je haïs.	185
Gésir.*	Gisant.		Il gît.		185
Bouillir.	Bouillant.	Bouilli	Je bouis.	Je bouillis.	185
Ebouillir.		Ebouilli.			185
Courir.	Courant.	Couru.	Je cours.	Je courus.	185
Faillir.	Faillant.*	Failli.	Je faux.*	Je faillis.	186
Défaillir.		Défailli.	Nous défail'ons.	Je défailis.	186
Puir.	Fuyant.	Fui.	Je fuis.	Je fuis.	187
Mourir.	Mourant.	Mort.	Je meurs.	Je mourus.	187
Acquérir.	Acquérant.	Acquis.	J'acquiers.	J'acquies.	188
Conquérir.	Conquérant.	Conquis.	Je conquiers.	Je conquies.	188
Oùir.	Oyant.*	Oûi.		J'ouïs.	188
Vêtir.	Vêtant.	Vêtu.	Je vêts.	Je vêtis.	188
Revêtir.	Revêtant.	Revêtu.	Je revêts.	Je revêtis.	188
Cueillir.	Cueillant.	Cueilli.	Je cueille.	Je cueillis.	189
Saillir.	Saillant.	Sailli.	Il saille.	Il saillit.	189
Tressaillir.	Tressaillant.	Tressailli.	Je tressaille.	Je tressaillis.	190

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

Avoir.	Ayant.	Eu.	J'ai	J'eus.	130
Ravoir.					191
Choir.		Chu.			191
Déchoir.		Déchu.	Je déchois.	Je déchus.	191
Echoir.	Echéant.	Echu.	Il échoit.	Il échut.	191
Falloir.		Fallu.	Il faut.	Il fallut.	179
Mouvoir.	Mouvant.	Mu.	Je meus	Je mus.	192
Promouvoir.		Promu.		Je promus.*	192
Pleuvoir.	Pleuvant.	Plu.	Il pleut.	Il plut.	193
Pouvoir.	Pouvant.	Pu.	Je puis.	Je pus.	193
Savoir.	Sachant.	Su.	Je sais.	Je sus.	193
Seoir.*	Séyant.		Il sied.		193
Seoir.*	Séant.	Sis.			193
Asseoir.	Asseyant.	Assis.	J'assieds.	J'assis.	194
Surseoir.		Sursis.	Je sursois.	Je sursis.	195
Voir.	Voyant.	Vu.	Je vois.	Je vis.	194
Prévoir.	Prévoyant.	Prévu.	Je prévois.	Je prévis.	195
Pourvoir.	Pourvoyant.	Pourvu.	Je pourvois.	Je pourvus.	195
Valoir.	Valant.	Valu.	Je vaux.	Je valus.	195
Vouloir.	Voulant.	Voulu.	Je veux.	Je voulus.	195

N. B. The forms marked with an asterisk are obsolete.

INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLES.		INDICATIVE.	
<i>Present.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Preterit.</i>

## FOURTH CONJUGATION.

					page
Soudre.	Solvant.*	Résous, résolu.	Je résous.	Je résolus.	196
Résoudre.	Résolvant.	Absous.	J' absous.		196
Absoudre.	Absolvant.	Dissous	Je dissous.		197
Dissoudre.	Dissolvant.	Cousu.	Je couds.	Je cossis.	197
Coudre.	Cousant.		Il sourd.		197
Soudre.			Je mets.	Je mis.	197
Mettre.	Mettant.	Mis.	Je mouds.	Je moulus.	198
Moudre.	Moulant.	Moulu.	Je prends.	Je pris.	198
Prendre.	Prenant.	Pris.	Je romps.	Je rompis.	199
Rompre.	Rompant.	Rompu.	Je suis.	Je suivis.	200
Suivre.	Suivant.	Suivi.	Il s'ensuit.	Il s'ensuivit.	200
S'ensuivre.	S'ensuivant.	Ensuivi.	Je vaincs.*	Je vainquis.	200
Vaincre.	Vainquant.	Vaincu.	Je bats.	Je battis.	201
Battre.	Battant.	Battu.	Je suis.	Je fus.	136
Etre.	Etant.	Été.	Je vis.	Je vécus.	201
Vivre.	Vivant.	Vécu.	Il brait.		202
Braire.			Je fais.	Je fis.	202
Faire.	Fesant.	Fait.	Je trais.		203
Traire.	Trayant.	Trait.	Je nais.	Je naquis.	203
Naître.	Naissant.	Né.	Je renais.	Je renaquis.*	203
Renaitre.	Renaissant.		Je pais.		204
Paître.	Paissant.	Pû.			204
Bruire.	Bruyant.		Je luis.		204
Luire.	Luisant.	Lui.	Je nuis.	Je nuisis.	204
Nuire.	Nuisant.	Nui.	Je confis.	Je confis.	205
Confire.	Confisant.	Confit.	Je suffis.	Je suffis.	205
Suffire.	Suffisant.	Suffi.	Je circoncis.	Je circoncis.	205
Circoncire.	Circoncisant.	Circoncis.	Je dis.	Je dis.	205
Dire.	Disant.	Dit.	Je médis.	Je médis.	205
Médire.	Médisant.	Médit.	Je maudis.	Je maudis.	205
Maudire.	Maudissant.	Maudit.	J' écris.	J' écrivis.	206
Ecrire.	Ecrivant.	Ecrit.	Je lis.	Je lus.	206
Lire.	Lisant.	Lu.	Je ris.	Je ris.	207
Rire.	Riant.	Ri.	Je fris.		207
Frيره.		Frit.	Je bois.	Je bus.	207
Boire.	Buvant.	Bu.	Je clos.		208
Clôre, clorre.		Clos.	Je conclus.	Je conclus.	208
Conclure.	Concluant.	Conclu.	J' exclus.	J' exclus.	208
Exclure.	Excluant.	Exclu, or exclus.	Je crois.	Je crus.	209
Croire.	Croyant.	Cru.	Il point.		209
Poindre.					

N. B. The derivatives which are not in this Table, will be found with the primitives, to which we have given references.



From the Synoptical French Grammar, by Professor Moulis.

[This table is used with great advantage in schools, to write verbs.]

VERBS ending in FORM	THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.		THE PRETERIT DEFINITE.	
	BY CHANGING.	INTO.	INTO.	
Er. (a)	er.	e, es, e. ons, ez, ent.	ai, as, a. âmes, âtes, èrent.	
Aller.		je vais, vas, va. allons, allez, vont.	j'allai, &c.	
Yer.	yer.	je, ies, ie. yons, yez, ient.	yai, yas, &c.	
Ir. (b)	ir.	is, is, it. issons, issez, issent.	is, is, it. imes, ites, irent.	
Dormir.	mir.	s, s, t. mons, mezs, ment.	mis, &c.	
Servir. (c)	vir.	s, s, t. vons, vez, vent.	vis, &c.	
Sentir. (d)	tir.	ts, ts, t. tons, tez, tent.	tis, &c.	
Vêtir.	tir.	s, s, t. tons, tez, tent.	tis, &c.	
Frir, Frir	ir.	e, es, e. ons, ez, ent.	is, is, it. lmes, ltes, irent.	
Quellir.	ir.	do.	do.	
Saillir. (e)	ir.	is, is, it. issons, issez, issent.	do.	
Quillir. (f)		(obsolete.)	je faillis, &c.	
Bouillir.		je bous-bous, bout. bouillons-llez-lent.	je bouillis, &c.	
Tair.		je hais, hais, hait. haïssons, &c.	je hais, &c.	
Enir.	enir.	iens, iens, ient. êmons, ênez, iennent.	ins, ins, int. inmes, întes, [urent.	
Quérir.	érir.	iers, iers, iert. êrons, êrez, ièrent.	is, &c.	
Quir.		je puis, puis, fuit. fuyons, fuyez, fuient.	(caret.)	
Murir.	ir.	s, s, t. ons, ez, ent.	us, us, ut. ûmes, ûtes, urent.	
Mourir.		je meurs, eurs. eurt. ourons, ourez, eurent.	do.	
Voir.		je vois, vois, voit. voyons, voyez, voient.	je vis, &c.	
Voir.		j'ai, as, a. avons, avez, ont.	j'eus, &c.	
Voir.		ais, ais, ait. avons, avez, avent.	us, &c.	
Voir.		ois, ois, oit. êvons, êvez, oivent.	do.	
Voir.		il pleut.	il plut.	
Voir.		eux, eux, eut. ouvons, ouvez, eurent.	us, &c.	
Voir.		ux, ux, ut. lons, lez, lent.	lus, &c.	
Voir.		il faut.	il fallut.	
Voir.		eux, eux, eut. oulons, oulez, eulent.	oulus, &c.	
Voir. (h)	oir.	ois, ois, oit. oyons, oyez, oient.	us, us, &c.	
Voir. (i)	oir.	ieds, ieds, ied. éyons, éyez, éyent.	is, is, it. imes, ites, irent.	
Voir.		je surseois-ois-oit-oyons-oyez-oient.	is, sursis, &c.	
Voir.		ds, ds, d. dons, dez, dent.	dis, &c.	
Voir.		ds, ds, d. dons, dez, dent.	dis, dis, &c.	
Voir.		ds, ds, d. ons, ez, nent.	je pris, &c.	
Voir.		ins, ins, int. ignons, ignez, ignent.	ignis, &c.	
Voir.		ais, ais, ait. aïssons, aïssiez, aïssent.	us, &c.	
Voir.		cs, cs, c. quons, quez, quent.	quis, &c.	
Voir.		ts, ts, t. ttons, ttez, ttent.	tis, &c.	
Voir.		ts, ts, t. ttons. ttez, ttent.	je mis, &c.	
Voir.		je suis, es. est. sommes, êtes, sont.	je fus, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. ssons, ssez, ssent.	je crus, &c.	
Voir.		ais, ais, ait. aïssons, aïssiez, aïssent.	us, &c.	
Voir.		je trais, trais, trait. trayons, trayez, ent.	(caret.)	
Voir.		is, is, it. isons, isez, isent.	is, &c.	
Voir.		is, &c.	us, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. vons, vez, vent.	vis, &c.	
Voir.		is, is, it.	is, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. ons, ez, ent.	s, s, t. mes, tes, rent.	
Voir.		ois. ois, oit. oyons, oyez, oient.	je crus, &c.	
Voir.		do.	us, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. ons, ez, ent.	is, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. (caret.) sent.	(caret.)	
Voir.		us, us, ut. lvons, lvez, lvent.	lus, &c.	
Voir.		ds, ds, d. sons, sez, sent.	sis, &c.	
Voir.		ds, ds, d. lons, lez, moultent.	lus, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. ons, ez, ent.	s, s, t. mes, tes, rent.	
Voir.		s, s, t. vons, vez, vent.	vis, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. sons, sez, sent.	sis, &c.	
Voir.		s, s, t. vons, vez, vent.	je vécus, &c.	

N. B. No change is to be made in the tenses preceded by *je* or *il*.

(a) Verbs in *ger* retain *e* before *a* or *o*, as *je songeais, songeons*. Verbs in *cer* change *c* into *ç*, before *a* or *o*, as *effaçant, effaçons*. Verbs in *eler, éter*, double *l* or *t* before *e* mute, as *j'appelle, il jette*. (b) *Sir, to lie*, *il gît, ils gisent*.—*Quir, jois, ois, oit. oyons, oyez, oient*, pret. def. *j'ouïs*, past part. *ouï*. *Selm* used except in the participle. *Fleurir* makes *florissant* in the present participle; and in the perfect *je florissais*, when used metaphorically, as, *empire florissant, Rome florissait*: but *fleurir, blossom*, is regular. (c) *Asservir* makes in the present, *j'asservis, asservis, asservit, asservissons*, &c. (d) Neuter verbs in *tir*, change *tir* into *s, s, t. tons, tez, tent, se repentir, démentir, are conjugated in the same manner, but active verbs change tir into is, is, it. issons, &c. compter, retentir, enough neuter, follow this rule*. (e) *Assaillir*, and *saillir* to *project*, are conjugated like verbs ending *cueillir*; *saillir* has only the third person and the gerunds. (f) *Défaillir*, to *decay* or *to faint*, has *ly* (in the present) *défaillais, défailliez*. (g) *Pouvoir, to be able*, *je peux* or *je puis* and *puis-je* only in the interrogations. (h) *Choir* is used only in the infinitive. *Déchoir*, to *decay*, has no imperfect indic. *Echoir, to fall, to expire*, no imperfect indicative, (used only in the third person.) (i) *Se-*, to *become*, present indicative, *il sied, ils siéent*. (j) *Paitre, to graze*, no preterit definite, but

repâitre, *to feed*, is regular. Naitre, *to be born*, renaitre, *to be born again*, make in the preterit, *naquit, renaquis*. (k) Faire (and its deriv.) je fais, fais, fait, fêsons, faites, font. *pret-def* fis. (l) Dire, *to say*, jadis, dis, dit, disons, dites, disent. *Redire*, as dire. Maudire, je maudis, maudis, maudit, maudissons, maudissez, maudissent. (m) Frir, *to fry*, no imperfect. Preterit definite like the present. (Future and cond. regular) imperative, *fris*, it may be conjugated throughout with faire, viz. Je fais frir, etc. (n) Clore or clore, *to close*, je clos, tu clos, il clot. Fut. and cond. regular imperative clos. *Diclore*, like clore. (o) Lire and returne. Preterit definite not used.

Y is generally changed into *i* before *e* mute, as envoyer *j'envoie*. Croire, ils *croient*, &c. The imperfect of the indicative is formed from the first plural person of the present, by changing *ons* into *ais, ais, ait, ions, iez, aient*. J'étais, *I was*, is the only exception to this rule.

The future absolute is formed from the present of the infinitive by changing

<i>er</i> into <i>erai</i> .	<i>ir</i> into <i>irai</i> .	<i>voir</i> into <i>verrai</i> .	<i>re</i> into <i>rai</i> .
<i>yer</i> into <i>ierai</i> .	<i>ourir</i> into <i>ourrai</i> .	<i>avoir</i> into <i>aurai</i> .	
	<i>enir</i> into <i>tendrai</i> .	<i>cevoir, devoir</i> , into <i>cevrai, devrai</i> .	
	<i>querir</i> into <i>guerrai</i> ,	<i>aloir</i> into <i>audrai</i> .	
	<i>cueillir</i> into }	<i>choir</i> into <i>cherrai</i> .	
	<i>cueillera</i> .	<i>seoir</i> into <i>sicrai</i> .	

EXCEPTIONS. aller, *future*. *j'irai*. envoyer, *j'enverrai*. saillir, (*to project*.) *il saillera*. falloir, *il faudra*. prévoir, *je prévoirai*. pouvoir, *je pourrai*. pleuvoir, *il pleuvra*. mouvoir, *je mouvrai*. surseoir, *je surseoirai*. vouloir, *je voudrai*. être, *je serai*. faire, *je ferai*.

The second person, third, &c. are to be formed from the first by changing *rai* into *ras, ra, rons, rez, ront*.

The CONDITIONAL is formed from the first person of the future by changing *rai* into *rais, rais, rait, rions, riez, raient*.

The IMPERATIVE has no first person in the singular. The 2d person of the singular, the 1st and 2d of the plural, are alike with the corresponding per. of the pres. ind. except in the imperative of verbs ending in *er, vrir, frir, cueillir*, which drop the *s* in the imperative—viz. *tu parles*, imp. *parle*; *tu couvres*, imp. *couvre*; *tu souffres*, imp. *souffre*; *tu cueilles*, imp. *cueille*; the third person like the corresponding of the present of the subjunctive.

EXCEPTIONS. (See Avoir and Etre.)

Imperative,	aller,	savoir,	vouloir,
Plural,	aïlle-	sache,	veuille-
	allons-ez-	sachons-ez-ent.	veuillons-ez-ent.
	aillent.		

The PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed from the 3d plural person of the present of the indicative, by changing *ent* into *e, es, e*, for the singular. The 1st and 2d person of the plural like the corresponding of the imperfect, and the 3d like the 3d of the present.

EXCEPTIONS. (See Avoir and Etre.)

Subj.	aller.	faire.	valoir.
	que j'aïlle-es-e.	fasse-es-e.	vaïlle-es-e.
	allions-iez-aillent.	fassions-iez-assent.	valions-iez-ent.
	prévaloir.	pouvoir.	savoir.
Subj.	prévale-es-e.	puisse-es-e.	sache-es-e.
	prévalions-iez-ent.	puissions-iez-ent.	sachions-iez-ent.
	seoir, <i>to best</i> .	vouloir.	falloir.
Subj.	qu'il siée.	veuille-es-e.	qu'il faïlle.
		voullions-iez-veullent.	

The IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed from the preterit def. by changing *ai* into *asse, asses, at, assions, assiez, essent*. *s* into *sse, sses, t, ssions, ssiez, ssent*.

The PRESENT PARTICIPLE will be formed from the first plural person of the present of the indicative, by changing *ons* into *ant*.

EXCEPTIONS.

être.	avoir.	savoir.	seoir. ( <i>to sit</i> .)	échoir.
étant.	ayant.	sachant.	séant.	échéant.

The PAST PARTICIPLE may be formed from the preterit def. by changing *ai* into *é, is* into *i, frit* into *frit*, *pris* into *vert*, *ins* into *cru*, *dis* into *du*, *isis* into *it*, *gnis* into *nt*, *us* into *u*. No change is to be made in the preterits ending in *pris, quis*.

EXCEPTIONS.

(The feminine of the participle is formed by adding *e*.)

	Bénir	mourir.	vêir.	seoir.	voir.
Past part.	Béni or bénit.†	mort.	vêtu.	sés.	vu.
	Battre.	circoncire.	confire.	croître.	clore.
Past part.	Battu.	circoncis.	confit.	crus.	clos.
	Coudre.	être.	écire.	dire.	frir.
Past part.	Cousu.	été.	écrit.	diu.	frit.
	Faire.	inclure.‡	mettre.	naître.	nuire.
Past part.	Fait.	inclus.	mis.	né.	nui.
	Mettre.	rompre.	résoudre.	traire.	vaincre.
	Mis.	rompu.	résolu.§	trait.	vaincu.

The derivatives have the same exceptions.

\* Only in the verbs ending in *dre*, like répandre.

† Bénit is used only for things, as, eau bénite, pain bénit.

‡ Conclude makes conclu. Exclure past part. *exclus* or *exclu*.

§ Résoudre makes also *résous, résoute*, in the sense of resolved into. Dissoudre and absoudre past part. *dissous, dissoute, absous, absoute*.

## CHAP. VI.

## OF THE PREPOSITIONS.

*Prepositions*, which are so called, from being *prefixed* to the nouns which they govern, serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them. Thus, in this phrase, *le fruit de l'arbre*, the fruit of the tree, *de* expresses the relation between *fruit* and *arbre*. Likewise in this, *utile à l'homme*, useful to man; *à* forms the relation between the noun *homme* and the adjective *utile*. *De* and *à* are *prepositions*, and the word to which they are *prefixed*, is called their *regimen*.

There are different kinds of prepositions.

Some are used—to denote *place*, as:

CHEZ. *Il est chez lui*, he is *at* home.

DANS. *Il se promène dans le jardin*, he is walking *in* the garden.

DEVANT. *Il est toujours devant mes yeux*, he is always *before* my eyes.

DERRIÈRE. *Il ne regarde jamais derrière lui*, he never looks *behind* him.

PARMI. *Que de fous parmi les hommes!* how many fools *among* men!

SOUS. *La taupe vit sous terre*, the mole lives *under* ground.

SUR. *Il a le chapeau sur la tête*, he has his hat *on* (his head.)

VERS. *L'aimant se tourne vers le nord*, the loadstone points *towards* the north.

## EXERCISE ON THESE PREPOSITIONS.

We find less real happiness *in* an elevated condition than *in*  
*On de 2 bonheur 1 2 f. 1*  
 a middling state. One is never truly peaceful but *at*  
*moyen 2 1 véritablement tranquille que*  
 home. He walked *before* me to serve me as a guide.  
*soi marcher pour de \**  
 There was a delightful grove *behind* his house. Among  
*ind-2 2 bosquet m. 1.*

Some—to mark *order*, as:

AVANT. *La nouvelle est arrivée avant le courrier*, the news is come *before* the courier.

APRÈS. *Il est trop vain pour marcher après les autres*, he is too proud to walk *after* other people.

ENTRE. *Elle a son enfant entre les bras*, she holds her child *in* (for *between*) her arms.

DEPUIS. *Depuis la création jusqu'à nous*, from the creation to the present time.

DÈS. *Dès son enfance*, from his infancy; *dès sa source*, from its source.†

Some—to denote *union*, as:

AVEC. *Il faut savoir avec qui on se lie*, we ought to know *with* whom we associate.

(so many) different nations, there is not one that has not a  
*tant de 2 1 y en avoir subj-1*  
 religious worship. Nature displays her riches with mag-  
*2 culte m. 1 art. déployer*  
 nificence *under* the torrid zone. Eternal snows  
*torride 3 f. 1 de art. 3 5 f. pl. 4 on 1*  
 (are to be seen) *on* the summit of the Alps. *Towards* the north,  
*voir ind-1 2 sommet*  
 nature assumes a gloomy and wild aspect.  
 art. *triste 2 sauvage 3 aspect m. 1.*

#### † EXERCISE.

We (were up) *before* day-light, (in order to) enjoy  
*se lever ind-6 art. \* pour de*  
 the magnificent spectacle of the rising sun. *After* such great  
*magnifique 2—m. 1 levant 2 1 de si*  
 faults, it only remained for us to repair them (as  
*faute f. pl. ne rester ind-2 \* que réparer*  
 well as we could.) *Between* those two mountains runs a deep  
*de notre mieux est profond 3*  
 hollow road. Many very astonishing events  
*et creux 2 chemin m. 1 \* de art. 2 4 3*  
 (have taken place) within these ten years. *From* my earliest  
*il se passer ind-4 1 depuis \* art. tendre*  
 infancy I have had an abhorrence of lying.  
*\* horreur art. mensonge m.*



**DURANT.** *Durant la guerre, during the war: durant l'été, during the summer.*

**PENDANT.** *Pendant l'hiver, in winter; pendant la paix, in time of peace. This preposition denotes a duration more limited than durant.*

**OUTRE.** *Outre des qualités aimables, il faut encore, &c. besides amiable qualities, there ought still, &c.*

**SUIVANT.** *Je me déciderai suivant les circonstances, I shall determine according to circumstances.*

**SELON.** *Le sage se conduit selon les maximes de la raison, a wise man acts according to the dictates of reason.†*

Some—to express *opposition*, as :

**CONTRE.** *Je plaide contre lui, I plead against him.*

**MALGRÉ.** *Il l'a fait malgré moi, he has done it in spite of me.*

**NONOBTANT.** *Nonobstant ce qu'on lui a dit, notwithstanding what has been said to him.¶*

#### † EXERCISE.

*With* wit, politeness, and some (readiness to  
*de art.* *pr. art.* *peu de prévenance*  
 oblige), one generally succeeds in the world. We are fit  
*réussir* *on* *propre*  
 for meditation *during* winter. (*In the course of*) that siege,  
*à art.* *f.* *pendant* *siège m.*  
 the commandant of the city made some very successful  
*ind-3* *de art.* *heureux 2*  
 sallies. *Besides* the exterior advantages of figure and  
*sortie f. pl. 1.* *2* *1* *art.*  
 the graces of deportment, she possesses an excellent heart, a  
*art. maintien m.* *avoir* *2* *1*  
 correct judgment, and a sensible soul. Always act  
*sain 2 jugement 1* *2* *1* *se conduire*  
 according to the maxims which I have given you.  
*\* f. pl. inculquer f. pl.*

#### ¶ EXERCISE.

We cannot long act (*contrary to*) our own character :  
*savoir cond-1* *agir* *contre* *\**  
*notwithstanding* all the pains we take to disguise it, it  
*que* *pour*  
 shows itself, and betrays us on many occasions. In  
*se montrer* *trahir* *en bien* *de art.* *\**



Others—to mark the *cause* and means, as:

PAR. *Il l'a fléchi par ses prières*, he has softened him by his entreaties.

MOYENNANT. *Il réussira moyennant vos avis*, he will succeed by means of your counsels.

ATTENDU. *Il ne peut partir, attendu les vents contraires*, he cannot sail on account of contrary winds.‡

The use of the prepositions, —à, —de, —en, is very extensive.

A is generally used to express several relations, as *destination, tendency, place, time, situation, &c.* being often a substitute for various other prepositions; EX.:—destination -to: *aller à Londres*, to go to London.—Tendency -to, toward: *courir à sa perte*, to hasten to one's ruin.—Aim -at, for: *aspirer à la gloire*, to aspire to glory.—Residence -at, in: *être à Rome*, to be at Rome.—Time -at: *à midi*, at twelve o'clock.—Concern -on: *à ce sujet*, on this subject.—Manner -with: *supplier à mains jointes*, to entreat earnestly.—Means -with: *peindre à l'huile*, to paint in, or with oil; -with: *bas à-trois fils*, three thread-stockings, that is, with three threads.—Situation -at,

that you (will carefully attend) (to it,) (not so much) for the  
*ne donner tous vos soins* subj-1 y moins  
 satisfaction of obliging me, as for the pleasure of justifying  
 inf-1 justifier inf-1  
 innocence and confounding calumny.  
 art. pr. confondre art. f.

### ‡ EXERCISE.

Is there any man that has never been softened by tears  
*aucun* subj-1 *fléchir* art.  
 or disarmed by submission? Through the precautions  
*ni désarmer* art.  
 which we took, we avoided the rocks of that dangerous  
*que* ind-3 ind-3 *écueil* m. pl. 2  
 coast. Owing to the bad state of my father's health, I shall  
*côte* f. 1 2 1  
 not travel this year.  
*voyager* *année* f.

*with* : être à son aise, to be at ease.—Purpose *for* : une table à manger, a dining table.—Suitableness *for, to* : homme à réussir, a man likely to succeed :—Desert : crime à ne pas pardonner, a crime not to be forgiven, &c.

DE is generally used to express *separation, extraction, possession, appertenance, cause, shift, result, &c.*, and supplies the place of several prepositions, as—*from* : je viens de France, I come from France; d'un bout à l'autre, from one end to the other.—*Of* : le palais du roi, the palace of the king; les facultés de l'âme, the faculties of the soul; un homme d'esprit, a man of wit. In a partitive sense—*of* : moitié de, quart de, &c., the half of, the fourth of, &c. : it is used for PAR—*by* : il est aimé de tout le monde, he is beloved by every body; *for*—*through, or by, &c.*; mourir de faim, de soif, to die of hunger, of thirst :—*on, upon, with* : vivre de fruits, to live upon fruit.—*On account of, or for* : sauter de joie, to leap for joy. ¶

#### † EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION à.

Fathers! give good counsels, and still better  
 de encore 3 pr. meilleur 1  
 examples to your children. A good minister only aims  
 2 ne aspirer  
 at the glory of serving his country well. When we were  
 que à inf-1 2 pays 3 1 ind-2  
 in the country, we devoted the morning to  
 à campagne f. consacrer ind-2 matinée f. art.  
 study, we walked at noon, and at three or four  
 se promener ind-2 midi  
 o'clock we went a hunting, or fishing. Michael  
 heure pl. ind-2 art. chasse f. pr. art. pêche f. Michel-  
 Angelo has painted (a great deal) in fresco. It is a bed with  
 — Ange beaucoup art. fresque f. ce lit m.  
 ivory posts and mahogany feet. That man, with his  
 colonne d'ivoire pr. pied d'acajou \* art.  
 gloomy looks and surly behaviour, seems  
 sombre 2 regard m. 1 pr. art. brusque 2 maintien m. 1 ne semble  
 fit only to serve as a scarecrow.  
 propre que de \* épouvantail.



EN serves to mark the relations of time, place, situation, &c. and is variously expressed, as, *c'était en hiver*, it was *during* winter; *être en Angleterre*, to be *in* England; *aller en Italie*, to go *into* Italy; *elle est en bonne santé*, she is *in* good health; *il vaut mieux être en paix, qu'en guerre*, it is better to be *at* peace than *at* war; *il l'a fait en haine de lui*, he did it out of hatred to him, &c.†

---

¶ EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *de*.

I come *from* London, where I have spent a week very agreeably. *From* one end <sup>où</sup> of the horizon <sup>passé huit jours</sup> to the other, the sky was covered *with* thick <sup>bout m.</sup> black clouds. <sup>ciel m.</sup> *épais* 2 *et noir* 3 *nuage* m. pl. 1  
The marble *of* Paros is not finer than that which we get <sup>qui nous vient</sup> from Carrara. Montaigne, Mad. de Sévigné, and La Fontaine, *Carrare*.  
were writers *of* truly original genius. One half <sup>ind-2 de art. écrivain un</sup> 2 3 1 *moitié* f. <sup>of the terrestrial globe</sup> is covered *with* water, and above a <sup>terrestre 2 globe m. 1</sup> *plus de* (third part) *of* the rest is uninhabited, either through extreme <sup>tiers m.</sup> *inhabité* *ou* *par* <sup>un 2</sup> heat, or through excessive cold. In that happy <sup>chaleur f. 1</sup> *un = 2* <sup>un = 2</sup> *froid* m. 1 retreat, we lived *on* the milk *of* our flocks, and the delicious <sup>asile m.</sup> *ind-2* <sup>brebis</sup> *pr.* 2 fruits *of* our orchards. 1 *verger* m. pl.

---

‡ EXERCISE ON THE PREPOSITION *en*.

He had *for* a (long while) lived *in* France; the 3 \* *depuis* 1 \* *long-temps* 2 *visse* *ind-2* troubles which agitated that fine kingdom obliged him to *ind-4* *royaume* m. *ind-4* *de* retire *to* Switzerland, whence he soon after (set off) *se retirer* *Suisse* *d'où* 3 1 2 *se rendre* *ind-4* *for* Italy. We were *at* peace, and enjoyed all *ind-2* *pron. en goûter* *ind-2* *art.* its blessings, when ambition rekindled the flames *of* \* *charme* m. *art.* *rallumer* *ind-3* *feu* s. war, and forced us *to* put our frontiers *in* a state *art.* *ind-3* *de mettre* *frontière* f. pl.

## CHAP. VII.

## OF THE ADVERB.

The *adverb* is a word which accompanies verbs, adjectives, or even other adverbs, to express their manner, or circumstances.

REMARK. There are adjectives which are sometimes used as adverbs, as, *il chante juste*, he sings well; *elle chante faux*, she sings out of tune; *ils ne voient pas clair*, they do not see clear; *cette fleur sent bon*, this flower has a good smell, &c. The adjectives, *juste*, *faux*, *clair*, and *bon*, here supply the place of adverbs.

Adverbs are of different kinds.

The most numerous are those which express manner, and are formed from adjectives by the following method:

RULE I. When the adjective ends, in the masculine, with a vowel, the adverb is formed by adding *ment*; as, *modeste-ment*, modestly; *poli-ment*, politely; *ingénn-ment*, ingenuously, &c.

EXCEPTIONS. *Impuni* makes *impunément*, and *traître*, *traîtreusement*.

The following six take *é* close before *-ment*, instead of the *e* mute in the adjective.

aveuglement	<i>blindly</i>	conformément	<i>conformably</i>
commodément	<i>commodiously</i>	énormément	<i>enormously</i>
incommodément	<i>incommodiously</i>	opiniâtrément	<i>obstinately</i>

Observe that the adverbs,

follement	<i>foolishly</i>	bellement	<i>softly</i>
mollement	<i>effeminately</i>	nouvellement	<i>newly</i>

are to be considered as coming from the adjectives, *fol*, *mol*, *bel*, *nouvel*, and accordingly belong to the following rule.

RULE II. When the adjective ends with a consonant, in the masculine, the adverb is formed from the feminine termination, by adding *ment*; as, *grand*

of defence. The savage is almost continually *at war*: he can-  
*presque toujours*  
 not remain *at rest*. He has acted, on this occasion, like  
*en repos* *dans* *en*  
 a great man.

*grandement*, greatly; *franc*, *franchement*, frankly; *naïf*, *naïvement*, artlessly, &c.

EXCEPTIONS. 1st. *Gentil*, makes *gentiment*, prettily.

2nd. The following eight adverbs,

<i>communément</i>	<i>commonly</i>	<i>importunément</i>	<i>importunately</i>
<i>confusément</i>	<i>confusedly</i>	<i>obscurément</i>	<i>obscurely</i>
<i>diffusément</i>	<i>diffusedly</i>	<i>précisément</i>	<i>precisely</i>
<i>expressément</i>	<i>expressly</i>	<i>profondément</i>	<i>deeply</i>

take before *ment* the *é* close instead of the *e* mute, in the feminine of the adjectives from which they are derived:

REM. The six following adverbs are not derived from adjectives.

<i>comment</i>	<i>how</i>	<i>profusément</i>	<i>lavishly</i>
<i>incessamment</i>	<i>presently</i>	<i>nuitamment</i>	<i>by night</i>
<i>notamment</i>	<i>especially</i>	<i>sciemment</i>	<i>knowingly</i>

3rd. Adjectives ending in *-nt*, form their adverbs by changing *-nt* into *-mment*, as *consta-nt*, *consta-mment*, constantly; *éloque-nt*, *éloque-mment*. Except *lent* and *présent*, the only two of this class, that follow the second general rule, making *lentement* and *présentement*.

REM. Most adverbs denoting manner, and a few others, have the three degrees of comparison, as, *profondément*, *aussi*, *plus*, or *moins profondément*, *fort*, *bien*, or *très-profondément*, and *le plus profondément*.

The following degrees of comparison are irregular.

POSITIVE.		COMPARATIVE.		SUPERLATIVE.	
<i>bien</i>	<i>well</i>	<i>mieux</i>	<i>better</i>	<i>le mieux</i>	<i>the best</i>
<i>mal</i>	<i>bad</i>	<i>pis</i>	<i>worse</i>	<i>le pis</i>	<i>the worst</i>
<i>peu</i>	<i>little</i>	<i>moins</i> †	<i>less</i>	<i>le moins</i>	<i>the least</i>

### EXERCISE ON THESE ADVERBS.

Bourdaloue and Masillon have both *spoken very eloquently on* *evangelical truths*; but the former has *principally* (proposed to himself) to convince the mind; the latter has *generally* had in view to touch the heart. Several of la Bruyère's characters are as *finely* drawn as they are *deli-*

2                      1                      \*

20\*

There are likewise various other sorts of adverbs:

OF	{	Affirmation,	as	Certes, certainly: <i>oui</i> , yes.
		Consent,	—	<i>Soit</i> , be it so; <i>volontiers</i> , willingly.
		Doubt,	—	<i>Peut-être</i> , perhaps.
		Denial,	—	<i>non, ne, ne pas, ne point</i> , no, not.†
OF	{	Order, or	{	<i>Premièrement</i> , first; <i>secondement</i> , 2dly, &c.
		Rank,		<i>D'abord</i> , at first; <i>ensuite, après</i> , afterwards;
				<i>auparavant</i> , before.
		Place, or		<i>Où</i> , where; <i>ici</i> , here; <i>là</i> , there; <i>de-ça</i> , on this
		Distance,		side; <i>de là</i> , on that side; <i>par-tout</i> , every
				where; <i>près, proche</i> , near, nigh; <i>loin</i> , far,
				&c.†

cately expressed. Buffon is one of the best writers of the last <sup>2</sup> century: he thinks *deeply*, describes *forcibly*, and expresses *siècle m. 1* *peindre fortement* himself (with dignity.) Corneille and Racine are the two best *noblement* French tragic poets; the pieces of the former are *strongly*, <sup>3</sup> *tragique* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>f.</sup> <sup>2</sup> but *incorrectly* written; those of the latter are more *regularly* <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> beautiful, more *purely* expressed, and more *delicately* conceived. *beau* *pensé.*

### EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION, &c.

*Certainly*, either I mistake, or the business passed (in *ou se tromper se passer ind-4* that manner.) Do you think that he listens *willingly* to this *ainsi écouter* proposal? Have you ever read in Racine the famous scene of *f.* Phædra's delirium? Yes, I have, and I own it is one *Phèdre* <sup>2</sup> art. *délire m. 1* *la lue avouer que ce* of the finest of the French theatre. *Perhaps* you will discover, <sup>2</sup> <sup>m. 1</sup> on a second perusal of la Fontaine's fables, beauties *dans lecture f. 2 art. 1 de art. f. pl.* which you did not perceive at first. Will you have some? *que avoir aperçues à art. f. \* en* No. Will you not have some? The man who (is willing) to *do* good is not stopped by any obstacle. I will pay him *\* art. arrêté aucun lui* what I owe, but not all at once. *ce que lui non pas à art. fois f.*



Of time	{	Present.	{	as {	Maintenant, now: à présent, at present; actuellement, this moment, &c.
		Past.		— {	Hier, yesterday; avant-hier, the day before yesterday; autrefois, formerly, &c.
		Future.		— {	Demain, to-morrow; après-demain, the day after to-morrow, &c.
		Indeterminate.		— {	Souvent, often; d'ordinaire, generally; quelquefois, sometimes; matin, early; tôt, soon; tard, late, &c. ¶

## ‡ EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF ORDER, &amp;c.

We ought *first* to avoid doing evil; *afterwards* we  
 \* *falloir* ind-1 \* *de* inf-1 art. \*  
 ought to do good. Read books of instruction *first*, and  
 \* art. 1 art. 3 4 2  
 then you may proceed to those of entertainment. If  
 \* *passer* ind-7 *agrément*  
 you will go, settle *first* what is to be done.  
*vouloir s'en aller régler auparavant falloir* \* \* inf-1  
 The painter had (brought together) in the same picture several  
*rassembler un tableau*  
 different objects: *here*, a troop of Bacchantes; *there*, a troop of  
 2 1 *Bacchante*  
 young people; *here*, a sacrifice; *there*, a disputation of philoso-  
*gens dispute*  
 phers. Sesostris carried his conquests *farther* than Alexander  
*pousser conquête ne*  
 did *afterwards*. Call upon your cousin; he lives *near here*.  
 ind-4 *depuis Passerchez loger* 2 *ici* 1  
 I cannot see that, if I be not *near* it. When he knew  
 ind-1 *auprès* \* *Quand savoir* ind-3  
 where he was, he began to fear the consequence of his  
 ind-2 *commencer* ind-3 *suite*  
 imprudence. Contemplate (*at a distance*) lofty mountains, if  
*de loin art. haut f.*  
 you wish to behold prospects ever varied and ever new.  
*vouloir \* découvrir de art. site m.*

## ¶ EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF TIME.

I have finished the work you prescribed me; what do  
*achever que ordonner* ind-6 *que*

OF {	Quantity.	as {	<i>Peu</i> , little; <i>assez</i> , enough; <i>trop</i> , too much; <i>beaucoup</i> , much, very much; <i>tant</i> , so much, &c.
	Comparison.	as {	<i>Plus</i> , more; <i>moins</i> , less; <i>aussi</i> , so; <i>autant</i> , as much, &c.†

you wish me to do now? Formerly, education  
*vouloir* 1 *que je* \* subj-13 2  
 was neglected; it is now (very much) attended to; it is (to  
*on* 3 *beaucoup* 2 *s'occuper en* 1 *falloir*  
 be hoped) that new views will soon (be adopted.) They  
*espérer* *on* 4 2 *adopter* ind-7 1 *de* 3. *On*  
 grieved (at it) yesterday; now, they laugh (at it;)  
*s'affliger* ind-2 *en* *aujourd'hui* *rire* *en*  
 to-morrow, it will no longer (be thought) of. It is one of  
*on* *plus* *penser* ind-7 *y*  
 those accidents which it is sometimes impossible to avoid. The  
*de*  
 dew incommoded me (very much;) I shall not (in future)  
*serein* m. ind-4 *désormais*  
 walk so late. Rude and coarse criticism  
*se promener* *Malhonnête* 2 *grossier* 3 *un* f. 1  
 generally (does greater injury) to the person who indulges  
*nuire plus* *se permettre*  
 himself in it, than to him who is the object (of it.)  
 \* *celle* *en*

### † EXERCISE ON THE ADVERBS OF QUANTITY, &c.

There are many people who have pretensions; but very  
*beaucoup de* \* \* \* *à*  
 few who have such as are well founded. To embellish a  
*en* sub-1 \* \* \* *de* fondé f. pl. \* 2  
 subject too much, frequently betrays a want of judgment and  
 3 1 *souvent être faite*  
 taste. One very often experiences disgust in the midst of  
*trouver* art. *ennui à*  
 the most riotous pleasures. She is a giddy and thoughtless  
*bruyant* 2 1 *Ce léger* 2 *inconséquent* 2  
 woman, who speaks much and reflects little. She has so much  
 1 *réfléchir*  
 kindness, that it is impossible not to love her. These stuffs  
*de* *de* *étouffe* f.  
 are beautiful; consequently they are dear. This book has  
*aussi* *coûter cher*.

## CHAP. VIII.

## OF CONJUNCTIONS.

The conjunction is a word which serves to connect words, or sentences, as, *Il pleure et rit en même temps*, he cries and laughs at the same time; the word *et* unites the first sentence, *il pleure*, with the second, *il rit*. Likewise in *Pierre et Paul rient*, Peter and Paul laugh; the word *et* unites these two sentences into one, *Pierre rit* and *Paul rit*.

There are different kinds of conjunctions.

To unite two words under the same affirmation, or under the same negation, *et* is used for the affirmation, and *ni*, neither, nor, for the negation.

To denote an alternative, or distinction, *ou*, either, or; *soit, que*, whether, or; *tantôt*, sometimes, &c.

To restrict an idea; *sinon*, but, except; *quoique, encore que*, though, although; *à moins que*, unless, till.†

merit; but there are others *as* good. If he has done that,  
*du en \* de*  
 I can do (as much.) What I say to you (about it) is meant  
*en autant en \**  
 less to give you pain, than to apprise you of the lan-  
*pour faire de art. avertir pro-*  
 guage that is used. She is six years younger than her bro-  
*pos pl. on tenir avoir de moins*  
 ther. Nobody is more interested than you are (in the  
*ne \* à ce que réussir*  
 success) of the affair. You do not offer enough for this garden:  
*subj-1 2 \* 1 offrir de*  
 give something more. The more ignorant we are, the less we  
*de \* 1 4 on 2 3 \**  
 (believe ourselves so.)  
*croire l'être.*

## † EXERCISE ON THESE CONJUNCTIONS.

Gold *and* silver are metals less useful than iron.  
*art. art. de art. art.*

To express opposition, *mais*, but; *cependant*, yet, nevertheless; *néanmoins*, for all that, however; *pourtant*, however, though; *toutefois*, *bien que*, although.

To express a condition; *si*, if; *sinon que*, except that; *pourvu que*, provided that; *à condition que*, on condition that.

To express consent; *à la vérité*, indeed; *à la bonne heure*, very well.

For explanation; *savoir*, *c'est-à-dire*, viz. that is to say; *comme*, as.†

To listen with joy to a slanderer, and to applaud him, is to  
 cherish the serpent who stings, that he may sting more  
*réchauffer* *piquer afin que* *plus*  
 effectually. I like neither flatterers nor the wicked. Those  
*sûrement* *flatteur* *pl.*  
 who have never suffered, know nothing; they know neither  
*savoir* *connaître*  
 good nor evil. You may choose either a happy  
 art. *bien* pl. art. *mal* pl. *avoir à choisir* *de*  
 mediocrity, or a sphere more elevated, but exposed to many  
*f.* *de f.* *bien de*  
 dangers. He is an inconsistent man; he is sometimes of  
 art. *Ce* *inconséquent* 2 1 *tantôt*  
 one opinion, and sometimes of another. I have (nothing more)  
*avis* *ne* *autre chose*  
 to say to you, only that I will have it so. I shall not yet  
*sinon que* *vouloir* \* \* *encore*  
 proceed to the perusal of the authors of the second class, unless  
*lecture f.* *ordre m.*  
 you advise me to do so.  
*ne conseiller* subj-1 \* \* *le*

#### † EXERCISE.

The serpent bites; it is only a bite; but from this bite  
*ce ne que morsure*  
 the venom communicates itself to the whole body; the slanderer  
*venin*  
 speaks; it is but a word; but this word resounds every  
*ne que parole f.* *retentir*  
 where. (That is) certainly a superb picture; nevertheless, there  
*Voilà* *tableau*



To express relation, or parity; *comme*, as, *ainsi*, thus, so; *de même*, as, just as; *ainsi que*, as; *autant que*, as much as; *si que*, as, &c.

To express augmentation, *d'ailleurs*, besides, moreover; *outré que*, besides that; *de plus*, *au surplus*, besides, furthermore.

For diminution, *au moins*, *du moins*, *pour le moins*, at least.

To express the cause, or the reason of a thing; *car*, for; *comme*, as; *parce que*, because; *puisque*, since; *pour que*, that, in order that, &c.‡

is some incorrectness in the design. Although Homer, according to Horace, slumbers (at times,) he is nevertheless the first of all poets. You will succeed, provided you act with vigour. We have within us two faculties that are seldom united, viz. imagination and judgment.

\* \* art.

### ‡ EXERCISE.

The most beautiful flowers last but a moment: thus human life passes away. The (greatest part) of mankind have, like plants, hidden qualities that chance discovers. Mad. de Sévigné's letters are models of elegance, simplicity, and taste; besides, they are replete with interesting anecdotes. Nothing is more entertaining than history; besides, nothing is more instructive.

Circumstances show us to others, and still more to ourselves. I shall always advise you to take the

\* de

To draw a conclusion; *or*, now; *donc*, then; *par conséquent*, consequently; *c'est pourquoi*, therefore.

To express a circumstance; *quand*, *lorsque*, when; *pendant que*, *tandis que*, &c. whilst, while; *tant que*, as long as; *depuis que*, ever since; *avant que*, before; *dès que*, *aussi-tôt que*, *d'abord que*, as soon as; *à-peine*, hardly, scarcely; *après que*, after that; *enfin*, in fine, finally, to conclude, &c.

To express a transition; *car*, for; *en effet*, indeed, in effect; *au reste*, besides. otherwise; *à propos*, now I think of it; *après tout*, after all.†

ancients as your guides; *at least*, quit but seldom  
*pour* \* pr. *s'écarter de ne que*  
 the way which they have traced for you. We must, at  
*route f. que* *tracée* \* *falloir*  
*least*, know the general principles of a language, before (we  
 2 1 *langue f. de*  
 take upon ourselves) to teach it. Certain people hate  
*se mêler de* \* *enseigner* f. *gens* art.  
*grandeur*, because it lowers and humiliates them, and  
 —f. pron. *rabaisser* pron.  
 makes them feel the privation of the advantages which  
*que elle leur* *bien pl.*  
 they covet.  
*aimer.*

#### † EXERCISE.

We ought to love what is amiable: *now*, virtue is  
 \* *falloir* ind-1 \* art.  
 amiable; *therefore* we ought to love virtue. We ought to  
 \* \* \* *falloir* \*  
 practise what the Gospel commands us; *now* it commands  
*évangile m.*  
 us, not only to forgive our enemies, but also to love  
 non *de pardonner à* encore *de*  
 them. Despréaux was extremely particular in not  
*de la plus grand exactitude à*  
 coming late, *when* he was invited to dinner; he said that  
 inf-1 *trop* ind-2 ind-2  
 all the faults of those who (are waited for) present themselves  
*défaut se faire attendre*  
 to those who wait for them. The pride which possesses us,  
*attendre* \* *posséder*

The conjunction *que* is always placed between two ideas, both necessary to complete the sense, as, *Il est très-important que tout le monde soit instruit*, it is of great importance that every body should be well instructed. It differs from the relative pronoun *que*, as it can never be converted into *lequel*, *laquelle*. The conjunction *que* is generally repeated before every member of a period. ¶

visible as it is, escapes our eyes, *while* it manifests itself  
*tout que à*  
 to the eyes of the public, and displeases every one.

*After* we had examined that singular effect, we (inquired into)  
*choquer art. esprit pl.*  
*ind-5 2 1 rechercher ind-3*

its causes. We had *hardly* done, when he came in. Pride

*en ind-2 finir que entrer*

counterbalances all our imperfections; *for*, whether it hides

*contre-peser misère pl. ou cacher*

them, or whether it discovers them, it glories in knowing them.

*si se glorifier de inf-1.*

None but an Englishman can (be a judge) of Shak-

*Il n'y a que qui subj-1 juger*

spere; *for*, what foreigner is sufficiently versed in the English

language to discover the sublime beauties of that author?

*langue f. pour 2 1*

### ¶ EXERCISE.

(As long as I live,) this image will be before my eyes;  
*tout ma vie —f. peint*

and, if ever the gods permit me to reign, I shall not forget,

*faire*

after so terrible an example, *that* a king is not

worthy to govern nor happy in his power, (*pas not expressed*)

*de commander et n'est puissance f. qu'*

proportion as) he subjects it to reason. I am very glad to

*autant que soumettre art. de*

see that you do not love flattery, and *that* one (runs no risk)

*ne hasarder rien*

in speaking to you with sincerity.

*à inf-1*

## CHAP. IX.

## OF INTERJECTIONS.

Interjections are words, which serve to express the sudden emotions of the soul. The only point to be attended to, is not to place them between words which custom has made inseparable. There are interjections for every feeling, viz.

Of {	pain	ahi, aïe! ouf! ah!
	grief	hélas! mon Dieu, &c.
	fear	ha! hé!
	joy	ah! bon, bon! o!
	aversion	fi! fi donc! oh, oh!
	disgust	pouah, pouah!
	indignation	foin de.
	imprecation	peste de, la peste de.
	disbelief	chansons, tarare.
	surprise	ouais!
	astonishment	oh! bon Dieu! miséricorde! peste!
	warning	gare! hem! holà, ho!
	checking	tout beau! holà.
	encouraging	alerte! allons! ça, courage!
	applauding	bravo, vivat!
	encoring	bis, bis.
	calling	hola! ho! hem, hem!
	derision	oh! eh! zest! oh! oh! oh!
	silence	chut! paix! st!



## PART II.

### THE SYNTAX,

OR

WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION.

#### CHAP. I.

##### § I.

##### OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

THERE are some substantives which are never used in the plural; such are—1. The names of metals, considered in their original state; as, *l'or*, gold, *le platine*, platina. 2. The names of virtues and vice; as, *la chasteté*, chastity, *l'ivrognerie*, drunkenness. 4. Some words of a physical or moral nature; as, *l'ouïe*, hearing, *l'odorat*, smelling, *le sang*, blood, *le sommeil*, sleep, *la pauvreté*, poverty. 4. The infinitive of verbs and adjectives used substantively, together with some other words, which cannot be reduced to any particular class.

Others, on the contrary, which likewise cannot be reduced to any particular class, are never used in the singular; as, *annales*, annals; *ancêtres*, ancestors, *mouchettes*, snuffers, &c.

---

##### § II.

##### OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

##### *Of the formation of their plural.*

1. When a noun is compounded of a substantive and an adjective, they both take the sign of the plural; as, *un gentilhomme*, a nobleman; *des gentilshommes*, noblemen.

2. When a noun is compounded of two substantives, united by a preposition, the first only takes the sign of the plural; as, *arc-en-ciel*, a rainbow; *des arcs-en-ciel*, rainbows.

3. When a noun is compounded of a preposition, or verb, and a substantive, the substantive alone is put in the plural; as, *un entre-sol*, (a low room between two floors,) *des entre-sols*; *un garde-fou* (rails on bridges,) *des garde-fous*.

REMARK. There is a small number of substantives composed of a verb and an adverb; as, *un passe-partout*, a master or general key; or of a verb repeated; as, *passe-passe*, sleight of hand: they never take the sign of the plural.

### EXERCISE ON SUBSTANTIVE AND COMPOUND NOUNS.

*Gold* is the most pure, the most precious, the most ductile, art. *parfait*  
 and, after platina, the heaviest of all metals. *Chastity* is an obligation of all times, all ages, and all conditions. *pesant* art.  
 \* art. pr, art. pr. art. *état* m. pl. art.  
*Intoxication*, which proceeds from beer, is of longer duration *ivresse* *venir* art. \* \*  
 than that which proceeds from wine. It is the sense of art. *Ce* art.  
*feeling*, which teaches to guard against the errors of *sight*. *toucher* *apprendre se garantir de* art.  
*Sleep* is the image of death. Early learn art. art. *de bonne-heure* 2 *apprendre* 1  
 to distinguish *truth* from *falsehood*. That is more bitter — *guer* art. *vrai* art. *faux* *amer*  
 than *wormwood*. Dignity of mind was *de art. absinthe* art. *Élévation* art. *sentiment* m. pl. ind-2  
 formerly the (distinguishing mark of) *noblemen*. One of *ce qui* \* *distinguer* ind-2 art.  
 the *buttresses* of the vault has fallen. He is always *arc-boutant* m. pl. *tomber*  
 making (cock and bull stories.) The Tartars always form *fait* *de art. coq-à-l'âne* m. pl. *Tartare* *être*  
 the scouts of an army. The fish-carriers did *avant-courier* m. pl. *chasse-marée* m. pl.  
 not arrive in time. This door is only fastened with a ind-3 à *ne que fermer* à \* art.  
 latch; and all (the persons) in the house have each their *loquet* m. \* *ceux* *de*  
 key.  
*passe-partout* m.

OF THE ARTICLE.

§ 1.

3. The French do not use the article before substantives, expressing the quality of a preceding noun. though, in cases of this kind, the English usually employ the article *the*, and still more frequently *a*, or *an*; as, *Télémaque, fils d'Ulysse, roi d'Itaque*, Telemachus, *the son of Ulysses, king of Ithaca*; *le Duc d'York*, *prince du sang*, the Duke of York, *a prince of the blood*.

I am *a* Frenchman and *a* merchant; after having (been at)  
the most famous (trading towns) in the Levant, my commercial  
concerns = *échelle f. pl. de — m. les affaires*  
*de mon commerce conduire* have brought me here. I am *an* unhappy  
Frenchman, who, a striking example of the vicissitudes of  
fortune, seek \* *mémorable 2 1 —* an asylum where I may end my days  
art. *chercher asile m. puisse finir*

21\*

## § 2.

Without entering more minutely into this subject, the following comparative table, in which the same words are exhibited, according to circumstances, both with and without the article, in conjunction with the phrases which have been inserted at the end of this grammar, will, it is presumed, be considered as a sufficient illustration of custom. ¶

---

in peace. He was *a* man of uncommon probity and of  
*Ce un rare 2 f. 1 un*  
 tried virtue: (as a) reward for the services he had  
*éprouvé 2 1 pour le récompenser de que*  
 rendered to the church and state, the king has made him *a*  
*m. pl. église pr. art.*  
 bishop. Neoptolemus had hardly told me that he was *a* Greek,  
*évêque. Néoptolème eut à peine dit*  
 when I (cried out :) O enchanting words, after so many  
*que s'écrier ind-3 doux parole f. pl. de*  
 years of silence and unceasing pain ! O my son, what  
*sans consolation 2 pr. 1*  
 misfortune, what storm, or rather what propitious wind has  
*malheur m. tempête f. plutôt favorable 2 1*  
 brought you hither to end my woes ? He replied,  
*conduire pour mal ? m. pl. répondre ind-3*  
 I am of the island of Scyros, I am returning thither ; (I am  
*île retourner y on*  
 said) (to be) *the* son of Achilles.  
*dit que ind-1.*

---

## ¶ COMPARATIVE TABLE.

WITH THE ARTICLE.	WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.
The writings of Cicero are full <i>of the soundest 2 ideas 1.</i>	The writings of Cicero are full <i>of sound 2 ideas 1.</i>
Divest yourself <i>of the pre- se défaire préjugé</i> <i>dices</i> of childhood.	Have no <i>prejudice</i> (with regard to) this question. <i>sur</i>
The different kinds <i>of animals</i> that are upon the earth.	There are different kinds <i>of</i> <i>animals</i> upon the earth.
He enters into a detail <i>of the</i> <i>rules</i> of a good grammar.	He enters into a long detail <i>of</i> <i>frivolous 2 rules 1.</i>
He affects <i>circumlocutions.</i> <i>chercher de détour.</i>	He affects long <i>1 circumlocu- tions 2</i> in order to explain the simplest <i>2 things 1.</i>



## WITH THE ARTICLE.

He loads his memory with *the*  
verses of Virgil and the  
phrases of Cicero.

Essays supported by *strong* 2  
*discours soutenu*.  
expressions 1

He has collected *precepts* of  
*recueillir* *sur*  
morality.  
*mœurs* pl.

Make use of *the* tokens we  
*se servir* *signe* (*dont*)  
agreed upon.\*  
*être convenu*.

The choice of *studies*, proper,  
&c.

Knowledge has always been  
*Connaissance* pl.  
the object of *the* esteem, *the*  
praise, and *the* admiration of  
*éloge* pl.  
*men*.

*The riches of the mind* can only  
(be acquired) by study.  
*ne que s'acquérir*.

The gifts of *fortune* are un-  
certain.  
*fragiles*.

The connexion *of proofs*  
*enchaînement* *preuve*  
makes them please and  
*qu'elles*  
persuade.

It is by meditation upon what  
we read, that we acquire  
*fresh* 2 knowledge 1.  
*connaissance* pl.

The advantages of *memory*.

The memory of *facts* is the  
most showy.  
*brillant*.

The aim of *good masters*  
should be to cultivate *the*  
*devoir* ind-1 *de*

## WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.

He loads his memory *with in-*  
*sipid* 3 *verses* 1 *and phrases* 2.

Essays supported by *lively* 1  
*vive*  
expressions 2.

A \* collection of *precepts* in  
*recueil* *sur*  
morals.

We are obliged to use *some ex-*  
*terior* 2 *signs* 1, in order to  
make ourselves understood.  
*nous entendre*

He has made a choice of *books*  
which are, &c.

It is an object of esteem, of  
*Ce*  
praise, and admiration.

There is in Peru a prodigious  
*le Pérou*  
abundance of *useless* 2 *riches* 1.

Gifts of *fortune*.  
*Bien*

There is in this book an admi-  
rable connexion of solid 2  
proofs 1.

It is by meditation that we ac-  
quire fresh 1 knowledge 2.  
*nouveau*.

There are different *kinds of*  
*memory*.

He has only a memory of  
*facts*.

He has an air of pedantry  
*ton m. maître*

## WITH THE ARTICLE.

## WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.

<i>mind and reason</i> of their pupils.	that shocks you at first sight.
<i>The taste of mankind</i> is liable to great changes.	Society of chosen 2 men 1.
<i>France, Spain, England, &amp;c.</i>	Kingdom of France, of Spain, of England, &c.
The isle of <i>Japan</i> .	Island of <i>Candia</i> .
He comes from <i>China</i> .	He comes from <i>Poland</i> .
He arrives from <i>America</i> .	He arrives from <i>Italy</i> .
The extent of <i>Persia</i> .	He is gone to <i>Persia</i> .
He is returned from the <i>East Indies, from Asia, &amp;c.</i>	He is returned from <i>Spain, from Persia, &amp;c.</i>
He lives in <i>Peru, in Japan, in the Indies, in Jamaica, &amp;c.</i>	He lives in <i>Italy, in France, in London, in Avignon, &amp;c.</i>
The politeness of <i>France, &amp;c.</i>	The fashions of <i>France</i> .
The circumference of <i>England</i> .	The horses of <i>England</i> .
The interest of <i>Spain</i> .	The wines of <i>Spain</i> .
The invention of printing is attributed to <i>Germany</i> .	The empire of <i>Germany</i> is divided into a great number of states.
He comes from <i>French Flanders</i> .	He comes from <i>Flanders</i> .

## § III.

## ON MEASURE, WEIGHT, &amp;c.

1. The English make use of *a*, or *an*, before nouns of measure, weight, and purchase; as, *wheat is sold for a crown a bushel; butter sells for sixpence a pound; wine sold yesterday for forty crowns a hogshead, 'tis more than a groat a bottle.* But the French make use of the article *le*, *la*, as, *le blé se vend un écu le boisseau; le beurre se vend six sous la livre; le vin se vendit hier quarante écus le muid, c'est plus de quatre sous la bouteille.*

2. When speaking of *time*, *a* or *an* is expressed in French by the preposition *par*, as, *so much a week, tant par semaine.*

3. In English, *a* is sometimes put between the pronoun which expresses admiration, and the substantive that accompanies it, as, *what a beauty!* but, in French, the *un* is never expressed in similar cases, as, *quelle beauté!*

4. In English, when the adverbs *more* and *less* are repeated to express a comparison, they must be preceded by the article, as, the more *difficult a thing is*, the more *honourable it is*. But, in French, the article is omitted, as *plus une chose est difficile, plus elle est honorable.*†

---

### CHAP. III.

#### OF THE ADJECTIVE.

It has been said (p. 97), that an adjective *agrees* in gender and number with the substantive which it qualifies; from this rule, however, must be excepted *nu*, bare, and *demi*, half, when placed *before* a substantive, and *feu*, late, when *before* the article or a pronominal

---

#### + EXERCISE ON MEASURE, &c.

Corn sells for eight shillings *a* bushel. Veal and  
 art. blé m. *se vendre* \* schelling boisseau art. veau  
 mutton cost ten pence *a* pound. This lace is sold at  
 art. coûter sou livre f. f. *se vendre* \*  
 half a guinea *an* ell. The best French wines are sold at  
*demi* 2 1 f. aune de France 2 1 ind-1  
 from twelve to fifteen shillings *a* bottle. My father goes to  
 bouteille f. va en  
 Ireland four or five times *a* year. He gives his son seven  
 Irlande fois an  
 shillings *a* day. It (is necessary,) if you desire to  
 falloir  
 (improve fast) that you should take *a* lesson three times *a*  
*faire des progrès rapides* prenez \*  
 week. The more I contemplate those precious remains of anti-  
 = reste m. pl. art.  
 quity, the more I am struck with wonder. What *a* beautiful  
 = frappé de étonnement  
 morning! come, let us go and walk in the fields.  
*matinée* f. se promener champ m. pl.

adjective, as, *il va nu-pieds*, he goes barefoot; *je suis à vous dans une demi-heure*, I will be with you in half an hour; *feu la reine*, the late queen; *feu ma mère*, my late mother. But the agreement takes place, if *nu* and *demi* be placed *after* the substantive, and *feu* between the article or pronominal adjective and the substantive, as, *il a les pieds nus*, his feet are bare; *je suis à vous dans une heure et demie*, I will be with you in an hour and a half; *la feue reine*, *ma feue mère*.

2. An adjective frequently serves to qualify two or more substantives, expressing either persons, or things of different genders.

If it be used to qualify more than two substantives, it must agree with them; for, either these substantives perform the office of subject, as, *la grammaire, la logique, et la rhétorique, méthodiquement enseignées, ne s'oublent guère*, grammar, logic, and rhetoric, when taught with method, are seldom forgotten; or they constitute the regimen, as, *c'est un homme d'une valeur, d'une vertu, et d'une fidélité, éprouvées*, he is a man of tried courage, virtue, and fidelity.

If it be used to qualify only two substantives, the substantive of persons must be distinguished from the substantive of things; with the first, the rules of agreement are to be observed in all cases: with the second, custom allows, when the substantives form the regimen, to make the adjective agree with the last only; as, *elle avoit les yeux et la bouche ouverte*. Nevertheless, modern grammarians prefer the agreement, even in this case.

3. With respect to phrases like the following, *les langues Anglaise et Française sont fort cultivées*, though they are in opposition to the rules of grammar, yet, it is allowable to use them. However, in strict propriety, it seems better to say, *la langue Française et l'Anglaise sont très-cultivées*.†

---

† EXERCISE ON THE ADJECTIVE.

He ran through the streets like a madman, bare-foot and  
ind-2 \*                      rue f. pl.



## II.

DIFFERENCE OF CONSTRUCTION BETWEEN THE ENGLISH  
AND FRENCH LANGUAGES.

1. In English, the substantive of *measure* is placed before the substantive, or adjective expressing the dimensions, as, *a tower two hundred feet high*, or *in height*. In French, the word which expresses dimension, is placed first, if it be an adjective, and the preposition *de* be added to it as a regimen, as *une tour haute de deux cents pieds*. But, if it be a substantive, or an adjective used substantively, it is placed after, with the preposition *de*, either before the noun of measure, or of dimension, as: *une tour de deux cents pieds de haut*, or *de hauteur*. This last mode is the most elegant.

---

*bare-headed.* His legs were *bare.* Give me  
*tête il \* art. jambe, f. 2 avoir 1*  
*half a guinea, and then you (will only owe) me a guinea*  
*ne devoir plus que*  
*and a half.* I shall be at home in *half* an hour. Come  
*chez-moi dans*  
*before half past one.* The *late* queen was idolized. The  
*2 une heure et 1 2 1 ind-2 adoré*  
*late queen was universally regretted.* His impetuosity and  
*ind-3*  
*courage, long restrained, soon surmounted all obsta-*  
*pron. enchaîné ind-3 art.*  
*cles.* The imagination and genius of Ariosto, although *ir-*  
*art. l'Arioste quoique*  
*regular in their course, yet interest, (hurry along,) and*  
*marche néanmoins attacher entraîner*  
*captivate the reader, who can never be tired of admiring them.*  
*lecteur se laisser inf-1*  
*There are in Gessner's idylls sentiments and a*  
*2 art. idylle 1 de art.*  
*grace altogether affecting.* The good taste of the Egyptians,  
*tout-à-fait touchant*  
*(from that time) made them love solidity and unadorned*  
*dès-lors ind-3 leur art. = tout nu 2*  
*regularity.* In those climates, the *dry* and the *rainy* mon-  
*=1 sec pluvieux mous-*  
*soons divide the year.*  
*son f. pl. se diviser année.*



## EXAMPLES.

<i>Digne de récompense,</i>	Worthy of reward.
<i>Utile à l'homme,</i>	Useful to man.
<i>Digne de régner,</i>	Worthy of reigning.
<i>Content de son sort, de vivre, &amp;c.</i>	Satisfied with his lot, with living
<i>Beau à voir, bon à manger,</i>	Fine to the sight, good for eating.
<i>Apré au gain, avide d'honneur,</i>	Eager after gain, greedy of honour.
<i>Propre à la guerre,</i>	Fit for war.

*Récompense* is the government of the adjective *digne*, as it is joined to that adjective by the word *de*: *l'homme* is the government of the adjective *utile*, because it is joined to that adjective by the word *à*, and so of the rest.

## EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF THE ADJECTIVES.

Virtuous men are always worthy of esteem. A weak  
 art. *Vertueux* 2 1 *toujours* *estime* f. *faible* 2  
 mind is liable to many contradictions. A heart free from  
 1 m. *sujet bien des* — f. pl. *cœur m. libre de*  
*cares* enjoys the greatest possible felicity. Voltaire was  
*soin* m. pl. *jouit de* 1 — 3 = f. 2 — *fut*  
 always greedy of praise, and insatiable of glory. Rousseau,  
*avide louange* f. pl. — = —  
 endowed with a strong and fiery imagination, was all his  
*doué de fort* 2 *bouillant* 3 — f. 1  
 (life-time) subject to frequent fits of misanthropy, and  
*vie* f. *enclin à de* — *accès* m. pl. =  
 liable to all the variations attendant upon it.  
*sujet* — f. pl. *qui en sont la suite.*

## PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE ARTICLE AND THE ADJECTIVES.

THE FAULTS OF INFANCY.  
*défaut* m. pl. art. *enfance.*

The amiable Louisa and her young brother Charles were  
*Louise* — ind 2  
 gentle, humane, and sensible. To the most interesting  
*doux sensible spirituel* *intéressant* 2 art.  
 person, Louisa joined all the modesty, the pleasing ingenu-  
*figure* f. 1 ind-2 = f. *heureux ingé-*  
 ousness and artless graces of her sex; and Charles, the  
*nuité* f. *naïf* 9 art. — f. *sexe* m.

vivacity, the fire, and the manly gracefulness of his.  
 = f. feu m. mâle agrément m. pl.  
 But these advantages, the precious gifts of nature,  
 avantage m. pl. \* = 3 don m. pl. art. — f.  
 were obscured by great defects. They were both  
 ind-2 un peu obscurci de défaut m. pl. ind-2 l'un et  
 inclined to idleness, and liable to fits of sullenness  
 l'autre enclin art. paresse f. sujets des accès bouderie f.  
 and ill humour when they were contradicted. Faults are  
 de \* h m. lorsque contredit art. Défaut  
 diseases of the soul, the cure (of which) is the work  
 des maladies guérison f. 2 dont 1 ouvrage  
 of time.  
 art. m.

In good dispositions, it is generally the fruit of the deve-  
 les âmes bien nées elle d'ordinaire — m. déve-  
 lopment of reason, and the desire of pleasing. Though  
 loppement m. art. de m. inf-1 Quoique  
 their parents were persuaded (of this,) they employed,  
 — sub-2 — dé 3 en 1 employer ind-3  
 to hasten it, an expedient, which succeeded. If they  
 pour hâter 2 la 1 moyen m. leur réussir ind-3 \* 2  
 were satisfied with them, contentment and joy were  
 ind-2 1 content de art. satisfaction f. art. f.  
 painted in their countenances; if dissatisfied, they  
 peint sur figure f. pl. \* en étaient-ils mécontent  
 did not scold. but they received them with a sorrow-  
 \* les gronder ind-2 ind-2 triste 2  
 ful air, a dejected countenance, and every sign of  
 regard 1 abattu 2 maintien 1 tous art. signe m. pl.  
 chagrin and trouble. Louisa and Charles were natu-  
 art. — m. de art. douleur natu-  
 rally kind and feeling; they could not long support  
 rellement bon sensible ne pouvaient long-temps résister à  
 the idea of having afflicted such tender parents. They felt  
 idée inf-1 affligé des si tendre 2 — 1 ind-2  
 their error, burst into tears and asked pardon. All was  
 faute f. fondre en larme 1. pl. — m. 2 3  
 immediately forgotten, and satisfaction again smiled  
 aussi-tôt 1 oublié art. contentement m. renaître ind-2  
 around. It was by this means that these amiable  
 autour d'eux Ce fut moyen sing. que  
 children soon became models of docility, com-  
 bientôt 2 devenir 1 des modèle m. pl. de  
 plaisance and application.  
 — de —



## CHAP. IV.

## OF THE PRONOUNS.

## § I.

## OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

*Of the Place of Personal Pronouns.*—See p. 102.

There is no difficulty in placing personal pronouns, when they act as subjects: the person who speaks always names himself last, and the person addressed is generally named first.

## EXAMPLES.

*Vous et moi, nous irons à la campagne,* You and I will go into the country.  
*Nous irons ce soir à la promenade, vous, votre frère, et moi, ¶* Will you take a walk this evening, you, your brother, and I.

**RULE.** The pronouns *il* and *ils* always represent a substantive masculine, *il*, if it be singular; and *ils*, if it be plural; and *elle* and *elles*, on the contrary, repre-

## ¶ EXERCISE.

My sister and I were walking by the last rays of  
*nous \* ind-2 à rayons m. pl.*  
 the setting sun, and we were saying, what a mild splendour  
*couchant 2 1 \* disions éclat m.*  
 does it still spread over all nature! In the long  
*\* 2 pas 3 5 ne répand 1 art.*  
 winter evenings, my father, my brothers, and I, used  
*de 2 soirée f. pl. 1 nous pas-*  
 (to spend) two hours in the library, and to read there,  
*ser ind-2 bibliothèque f. nous lisons y*  
 (in order to) (unbend our minds) from the serious studies of the  
*pour se délasser = 2 1*  
 day, those amiable poets who interest most the heart, by the  
*2 1 le plus*  
 charms of a lively imagination, and make us love truth, by  
*riant 2 1 art. en*  
 disguising it under the mask of an ingenious fiction.  
*déguiser inf-3 trait m. pl. = 2 f. 1*  
 You and your friend shall accompany me to the museum,  
*— pager musée m.*  
 where we shall study nature in her three kingdoms.  
*où règne m. pl.*

sent a substantive feminine, *elle*, if it be singular; *elles*, if plural.

Thus in speaking of the *rose*; we should say, *elle a un parfum exquis, aussi est-elle la fleur la plus recherchée*, it has an exquisite fragrance, and is indeed the choicest of flowers; because *rose* is feminine and singular; and in speaking of several ladies: *elles ont autant de modestie que de beauté, d'esprit et de grâce*, they have as much modesty as they have beauty, wit, and accomplishments; because *dames* is feminine and plural.†

With respect to pronouns, when used as a regimen, custom has established the following rules:

RULE I. The pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, *leur*, *le*, *la*, *les*, *y*, and *en*, are generally placed before verbs, as are *nous*, *vous*, and *lui*, when without a preposition.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>Il me dit</i>	he tells me	<i>Je lui parle</i>	I speak to him
<i>Je le vois</i>	I see him	<i>J'y songerai</i>	I will think of it
<i>Je les écoute</i>	I listen to them†	<i>J'en suis ravi</i>	I am delighted at it

#### † EXERCISE.

(Look at) that magnificent building;	<i>it</i>	unites	grace to
<i>Regarder</i>	—	<i>figue bâtiment m. réunir</i>	art. <i>grâce f.</i>
beauty, and	elegance to	simplicity.	Ignorance is
art. =f.	art. —f.	art. =f.	—f.
jealous, presumptuous, and vain:	<i>it</i>	sees	difficulties in
<i>présomptueux</i>	—	<i>ne</i>	<i>de</i> =f. pl. <i>à</i>
nothing, (is surprised) at nothing, and	stops	at nothing.	
<i>rien ne s'étonner de</i>	<i>ne s'arrêter à</i>		
Let us gather these roses; Heavens! what a sweet fragrance			
<i>cueillir</i>	<i>Ciel!</i>	<i>quel *</i>	<i>parfum</i>
they exhale! Never judge from	appearances; they are often		
— <i>ler</i>	<i>sur</i> art.	<i>f.</i>	
deceitful; the wise man examines them, and does not	decide		
	*	*	<i>se décider</i>
upon them	till	he has had	time to fix his judgment.
<i>d'après f.</i>	<i>que lorsque</i>	art. m.	<i>de fixer</i>

#### ‡ EXERCISE.

(As soon as) he had explained	to us the maxims of So-	
<i>Dès que</i>	<i>expliquer ind-5 *</i>	<i>So-</i>
crates, he said: you see that it is not without reason	he	
<i>crate ind-3</i>	<i>ce</i>	<i>que on le</i>

**RULE II.** The pronouns *moi, toi, soi, nous, vous, lui, eux, elle, and elles*, are placed after verbs, when they are preceded by a preposition.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Cela dépend de moi,</i>	That depends on me.
<i>Je pense à toi,</i>	I think of thee.
<i>On s'occupe trop de soi,</i>	We are too attentive to ourselves.
<i>Que dites-vous d'eux ?</i>	What do you say of them ?

**RULE III.** In imperative phrases, when affirmative, *moi, toi, nous, vous, lui, leur, eux, elle, elles, le, la, les, y, and en*, are placed after verbs; but, with a negation,

(is looked upon) as truly wise. He was continually saying to  
*regarde un vrai* ind-2 \*  
*me*: yet a little patience, and you will disarm even envy  
*de désarmer* \* art.  
 itself. You have, no doubt, (some foundation) for reproaching  
*être sans doute fondé à* inf-1  
*him* with his faults: but is there (any man) on earth that  
*lui* \* *quelqu'un* art. *qui*  
 is exempt (from them?) To please *her*, you must never  
 subj-1 *en* *Pour lui* \*  
 flatter *her*. To abandon *one's self* to metaphysical abstrac-  
*des métaphysique* 2—  
 tions, is to plunge into an unfathomable abyss.  
 1 *ce* \* *se jeter* *sans fond* 2 *abîme* m. 1.

## ¶ EXERCISE.

My father loved me so tenderly, that he thought of none  
*ind-2 penser ind-2 à ne*  
 but *me*, (was wholly taken up) with *me*, and saw none but *me*  
*que ne s'occuper ind-2 que de* ind-2  
 in the universe. If you wish to obtain that favour, you must  
*de* \*  
 speak to *him himself*. It depended on *you* to excel  
*ind-2 de de l'emporter sur*  
 your rivals, but you would not. Philip, father of  
*le vouloir ind-4 Philippe* 2  
 Alexander, being advised to expel from his dominions  
*comme on conseillait à l de chasser* état m. pl.  
 a man, who (had been speaking) ill of *him*; I shall take care not  
*parler ind-6 se garder bien* \*  
 to do that, said he, he would go and slander *me* every where.  
 \* \* *en* ind-3 \* *médirc de*





## CONSTRUCTION OF THE PRONOUNS,

*From the Syntactical French Grammar, by Professor Foult.*

The Pronoun, Verb and Negative will preserve in the speech the Order marked by the Number placed over them in this Table.

*In affirmative sentences.**In negative, do.**In interrogative, do. In neg. and inter. do.*

The subject 1st, (when it is a pronoun.)

Subject 1st.

Subject 4th.

Subject 5th.

If there be in the same sentence two of these pronouns they will be classed as follows :

Me, te, se, nous, vous,	2d 2d 2d 2d 2d
3d 3d 3d (used as objects.)	

me, te, etc.	3d 3d
4th 4th	

me, te, etc.	1st 1st
4th 4th	

me, te, etc.	2d 2d
3d	

If, etc. do

Je, la, les,	2d 2d 2d
3d 3d	

Je, la, les,	3d 3d 3d
4th 4th	

Je, la, les,	1st 1st 1st
2d 2d	

Je, la, les,	2d 2d 2d
3d	

If, etc. do.

Lui, leur,	2d 2d
en.	

Lui, leur,	3d 3d
4th	

Lui, leur,	1st 1st
2d	

Lui, leur,	2d 2d
3d	

If, etc. do.

Y, en,	2d
3d	

Y, en.	3d
4th	

Y, en.	1st
2d	

Y, en.	2d
3d	

**EX.** Y, en, are placed after me, te, &c.  
*Aucun, personne, jamais, rien*, when preceded by me, supply the place of pas, point.

ne, 6th	5th Verb.
pas, point,	2d

ne, 6th	4th Verb.
pas, point.	1st

## EXAMPLES.

1st 2d 3d 4th 1st 2d 3d 4th 5th 6th 1st 2d 3d 4th 5th 6th  
*tu me le donnes. tu le lui apportes. ils ne te les envoient pas. nous l'apportez lui? ne nous les apportez-vois pas.* In these instances, and others which may be found in the following table, we see that the order of the words agrees with the foregoing rules. Should teachers, by sentences of this description, show to their scholars the place that the pronoun, verb, and negative occupy in the speech, one of the greatest difficulties would soon be removed.

In these sentences : *Vous ne l'y envoyez pas. tu nous en donnes. y* and *en* are placed after the other pronouns, as it has been observed.

# CONSTRUCTION OF THE PRONOUNS.

ME, TE, SE NOUS, VOUS, LE, LA, LES, LUI, LEUR, Y, EN.

	TO ME.	TO THEE.	TO HIM, TO HER.	TO US.	TO YOU.	TO THEM.	THREE.
I give this pine apple Thou givest it He, she gives a prune. We give it.	Tu me le donnes. Il, elle me donne une prune.	Je te donne cet ananas. Il, elle te donne, etc. Nous te la donnons.	Je lui don- ne, etc. Tu le lui donnes. Il, elle lui donne, etc.	Tu nous le donnes. Il, elle nous donne, etc.	Je vous donne, etc. Il, elle vous- donne, etc. Nous vous la donnons.	Je leur don- ne, etc. Tu le leur donnes. Il, elle leur donne, etc.	
You give them. They give some. <i>With a com- pound tense.</i> I have brought some pie This lady has brought it. We have brought some. Do I bring any oil? Doest thou bring it? Does she bring some? Does he bring it? Does this gentleman bring any? I shall not send the broth. He will not send it.	Vous me les donnez. Ils m'en donnent.  Cette dame me l'a ap- porté.  Me l'appor- tes-tu? M'en ap- porte-t-elle? Me l'ap- porte-t-il? Ce mons. m'en ap- porte-t-il.	Il s t'en donnent.  Je t'ai ap- porté du pâté Cette dame te l'a, etc. Nous t'en avons ap- porté. T'en porté-je de l'huile?	Ils lui en donnent.  Je lui ai ap- porté, etc. Cette dame le lui, etc. Nous lui en avons, etc. <i>Interrogatively.</i> Lui porté-je de, etc. La lui ap- portes-tu. Lui en, etc.	Ils nous en donnent.  Vous nous les donnez. Ils nous en donnent.  Cette dame nous l'a, etc. Nous l'ap- portes-tu? Nous en, etc. Nous l'ap- porte-t-il? Ce mons. nous en etc. <i>Negatively.</i>	Ils vous en donnent.  Je vous ai, etc. Cette dame vous l'a, etc. Nous vous en avons, etc. Vous porté- je de, etc.	Il leur en, etc. Je leur ai, etc. Cette dame le leur a, etc. Nous leur en avons, etc. Leur porté- je, etc. La leur, etc. Leur en, etc. Le leur, etc. Ce mons. leur en, etc. Je ne leur, etc.	
I shall not send the broth. He will not send it. We will not send the rhubarb. You will not send it.  They will not send them. Shall I not send the boiled meat? Will he not send it?  Will she not bring some?  <i>With a com- pound tense.</i> Shall I not have given it? Shall I not have given some? Bring the sorrel. Bring it. Do not bring it. Bring some. Do not bring any.	Il ne me l'enverra pas. Vous ne me l'enverrez pas. Ils ne me les enver- ront pas? Ne me l'en- verra-t-il pas? Ne m'en ap- portera-t- elle pas?  Apporte- moi l'oscille Apporte-la- moi. Ne me l'ap- porte pas. Apporte- m'en. Ne m'en ap- porte pas.	Il ne te l', etc. Nous ne t'en- verrons pas la rhu- barbe. Ils ne te les, etc. Ne t'en ver- rai-je pas le bouilli? Ne te, etc. Ne t'en, etc.  Ne te l'au- rai-je pas donné? Ne t'en au- rai-je pas donné?	Il ne lui, etc. Nous ne lui, etc. Vous ne la lui, etc. Ils ne les lui, etc. <i>Negatively</i> Ne lui en- verrai-je, etc. Ne le lui, etc. Ne nous en, etc.  Apporte-lui etc. Apporte-la- lui. Ne la lui, etc. Apporte-lui en. Ne lui en, etc.	Il ne nous, etc. Nous ne nous, etc. Vous ne la nous, etc. Il ne nous les, etc. <i>Negatively &amp; Interrog.</i> Ne nous l'enverra, etc. Ne nous en, etc.  Apporte- nous, etc. Apporte-la- nous. Ne nous l'a- pporte, etc. Apporte- nous en. Ne nous en, etc.	Il ne vous, etc. Nous ne vous, etc. Ils ne vous les, etc. Ne vous, etc. Ne vous, etc. Ne vous en, etc.  Ne vous, etc. Ne vous en, etc.	Il ne le leur, etc. Nous ne leur, etc. Vous ne la leur, etc. Ils ne les leur, etc. N'y, etc. Ne l'y, etc. N'y en, etc.  Apporte- leur, etc. Apporte-la- leur. Ne la leur, etc. Apporte- leur en. Ne leur en, etc.	

**RULE IV.** When several pronouns accompany a verb, *me, te, se, nous, vous*, must be placed first; *le, la, les*, before *lui, leur*; and *y* before *en*, which is always the last.

**EXAMPLES.**

<i>Prêtez-moi ce livre ; je vous le</i>	Lend me that book ; I will re-
<i>rendrai demain ; si vous me</i>	turn it to you to-morrow ; if
<i>le refusez, je saurai m'en pas-</i>	you refuse me, I can make
<i>ser,</i>	shift without it.
<i>Aurez-vous la force de le leur</i>	Will you have resolution
<i>dire ?</i>	enough to mention it to them ?
<i>Il n'a pas voulu vous y mener,</i>	He would not take you there.
<i>Je vous y en porterai,</i>	I will bring you some there.

**EXCEPTION.** In an imperative sentence, when affirmative, *le, la, les*, are always placed first, as, *donnez-le-moi*, give it me, *offrez-la-lui*, offer it to him; *conduisez-les-y*, conduct them thither; and *moi* is placed after *y*, as, *menez-y-moi*, carry me thither; but *nous* will precede *y*, as, *menez-nous-y*, take us thither.‡

Repeat *to them* continually, that, without honesty, one can never succeed in the world. Do not repeat *to them* continually the same things. Acknowledge *him* as your master, and obey

	<i>reconnaître</i>	<i>pour</i>
<i>him.</i>	Tread upon that spider	and kill it.
<i>lui</i>	<i>marcher</i>	<i>araigné f. écraser</i>

‡ **EXERCISE.**

You wish to make a present to your sister. (There is) a  
*vouloir \** *Voilà*  
 beautiful fan; you should present *her* with it.  
*éventail m. devoir cond-2 offrir lui \**  
 (How many) people are there (destitute of) merit and without oc-  
*que de gens \* \* sans*  
 cupation, (who would be mere nothings) in society, did not  
*ne tenir à rien cond-1 art. si art.*  
 gaming introduce *them (into it.)* I shall speak *to them*  
*jeu m. introduire ind-2 y*  
 (about it,) and give *you* a faithful account *of it.* It  
*en je rendre ind-7 exact 2 compte m. 1*  
 is certain that old G ronte has refused his daughter to Va-  
*art.*  
 lere; but because he does not give *her to him*, it does not fol-  
*s'en*  
 low that he will give *her to you.*  
*suivre*

REMARK. The word *même* is sometimes added to the pronouns *moi, toi, soi, nous, vous, eux, lui, elle, elles*, to specify the person, or thing spoken of.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Ils se sont perdus eux-mêmes,</i>	They have ruined themselves.
<i>Le monde estime bien des choses</i>	The world prizes many things
<i>qui, en elles-mêmes, sont fort</i>	which, in themselves, are
<i>méprisables,</i>	worthless.

## II.

## OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS. — P. 113.

The relative pronouns are *qui, que, dont, le quel, &c.* see p. 113.

RULE I. *Qui*, when a relative, is always of the number, gender, and person of its antecedent.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Moi qui suis son fils,</i>	I who am his son.
<i>Toi qui es si jeune,</i>	Thou who art so young.
<i>L'enfant qui joue,</i>	The child who plays.
<i>Nous qui étudions,</i>	We who study.
<i>Vous qui riez,</i>	You who laugh.
<i>Les livres qui instruisent,</i>	The books which instruct.

In the first example, *qui* is singular, and of the first person, because the pronoun *moi* is in the singular, and of the first person. In the second, it is singular, and of the second person, for a similar reason, &c. ¶

## ¶ EXERCISE.

I who did not suspect (so much) falsehood, cunning, and perfidy, in a man whom I loved, blindly followed his counsels. Thou who art candour and innocence wert not too lightly. The great empire of the Egyptians, which was (as it were) detached from all others, was not of long duration. We who know the value of time

*\* soupçonner ind-2 tant de fausseté f. pr. ruse*  
*f. pr. = f. ind-2 aveuglément je suis*  
*vre ind-3 conseil m. art. = f. art. — f.*  
*même te confie légèrement — m. —*  
*tien ind-3 comme détaché art.*  
*durée f. connaître prix m. art.*



**RULE II.** *Que*, when a relative, is of the number and gender of its antecedent.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>C'est moi que l'on demande,</i>	It is I whom they ask for.
<i>C'est toi qu'on appelle,</i>	It is thou whom they call.
<i>La femme que je vois si bien parée,</i>	The woman whom I see so well dressed.
<i>C'est nous que vous offensez,</i>	It is we whom you offend.
<i>C'est vous que je cherche,</i>	It is you I am seeking.
<i>Les dames que vous voyez,</i>	The ladies whom you see.†

*Dont* sometimes represents *dequi*, *duquel*, *de laquelle*, *desquels*, *desquelles*, and even *de quoi*.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>L'homme dont vous parlez est parti,</i>	The man of whom you are speaking is gone.
--	---

ought to make a good use (of it,) instead of wasting  
*nous devoir ind-1 \** *emploi m. au lieu perdre*  
 it in idleness and frivolity. What! is it you, my  
*dans art. oisiveté f. art. inutilité f. Quoi ce*  
 daughter, *who* (would wish) that I (should love) you less? The  
*vouloir con-1 que sub-2*  
 greatest men, *who* were the ornament and glory of Greece,  
*ind-4 ornement art. = f. art. Grèce f.*  
 Homer, Pythagoras, Plato, even Lycurgus and Solon, went  
*Homère —gore Platon, même —gue — ind-3*  
 to learn wisdom in Egypt.  
*\* apprendre art. sagesse f. en Egypte.*

## † EXERCISE.

*I whom* temptation surrounded on every side  
*art. séduction f. environner ind-2 de tout part f. pl.*  
 fell into the snare. It is thou *whom* the public voice  
*je tombai dans piège m. Ce 2 f. 1*  
 calls to that employ. A power *which* terror and  
*appeler place f. puissance f. art. = f. art.*  
 force have founded, cannot be of long duration. It is we *whom*  
*—f. fondé f. ne peut durée f.*  
 they persecute with unexampled rage. You *whom*  
*l'on poursuivre avec une sans exemple 2 fureur f. 1*  
 every body respects, hasten to (come forward.) (Every  
*tout le monde respecter se hâter de paraître Tout*  
 thing) in the universe alters and perishes; but the writings  
*dans univers m. s'altérer périr écrit m. pl.*  
*which* genius has dictated, shall be immortal.  
*art. génie m. dicté m. pl. —tel.*

*La tour dont nous apercevons les créneaux doit être très-élevée,* The tower whose battlements, we perceive must be very high.  
*Ce dont je vous ai parlé l'autre jour n'a pas réussi,* What I was speaking to you of the other day did not succeed.

OBSERVE 1.—That *qui*, *que*, and *dont*, may equally apply to persons and things; but *qui*, preceded by a preposition, can never apply to things; in this case, *lequel*, *duquel*, *auquel*, &c. must be used.

2.—*Lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. apply both to persons and things; but—*quoi* applies only to things.

The adverb *où* is likewise employed as a relative pronoun, for *dans lequel*, *auquel*, *dans laquelle*, &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*Voilà le but où il tend,* That is the object he has in view.  
*Ce sont des affaires, où je suis embarrassé,* Those are affairs with which I am perplexed.

REMARK. *Où* admits the prepositions *de* and *par*.

## EXAMPLES.

*Voilà une chose d'où dépend le bonheur public,* That is an affair on which the public happiness depends.  
*Tels sont les lieux par où il a passé,†* These are the places through which he passed.

## † EXERCISE.

Persons of ordinary condition have not the same  
 art. *personne* f. pl. , *cōmmun* 2 —f. 1 *même*  
 need of being cautioned against the dangers to which  
*besoin* m. inf-1 *précautionné* f. pl. *contre* *écueil* m. pl.  
 elevation and authority expose those who are des-  
 art. —f. art. *autorité* f. *exposer* *ceux* *des-*  
 tined to govern mankind. The protection on which  
*tiné* m. pl. *gouverner* art. *homme* pl. —f. *sur* —  
 he relied has been too weak. That after which a true  
*compter* ind-2 *faible* *Ce* *après* *vrai*  
 philosopher sighs most ardently, is to spread that  
 — *phe* m. *soupirer* art. *ardemment* *de répandre*  
 sentiment of universal benevolence which should unite and  
 — m. — *sel* 2 *bienveillance* f. 1 *devrait unir*  
 (bring together) all men. These are conditions without  
*rapprocher* art. *Ce* *sont des* *sans*  
 which the thing would not have been concluded. Nature,  
*fait* f. art. —f.  
 of whose secrets we (are ignorant,) will be always a  
 1 art. —m. pl. 4 2 *ignorer* 3

## § III.

## OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.—p. 114.

See p. 114, the pronouns absolute, *qui*, *que*, *quoi*, *quel*, *lequel*.

*Qui* signifies *quel homme*, what man; *quelle personne*, what person.

## EXAMPLES.

*Qui vous a dit cela ?* Who told you that ?

*J'ignore qui a fait cela,* I don't know who did that.

*Que* signifies *quelle chose*, what thing.

## EXAMPLES.

*Que dit-on ?* What do they say ?

*Je ne sais qu'en penser,* I don't know what to think of it.

*Quoi* has the signification of *que*.

## EXAMPLES.

*A quoi s'occupe-t-on ?* What are they engaged in ?

*Dites-moi en quoi je puis vous servir,* Tell me how I can serve you.

REM. If *que*, or *quoi*, be followed by an adjective, it requires the preposition *de* before that adjective.

## EXAMPLES.

*Que dit-on de nouveau ?* What news is there ?

*Quoi de plus instructif et de plus amusant ?* What is more instructive and amusing ?

source of conjecture to mankind. That of which we  
—f. 3 —f. pl. 4 pour 1 art. homme 2 Ce

complain most bitterly is not always what affects us  
*se plaindre* amèrement *ce qui affecter*

the most. The only moments in which his soul still  
*seul* —m. pl. *encore* 2

expands to pleasure, are those which he devotes to  
*s'ouvrir* 1 art. *ceux* consacrer art.

study. The mountains from whence gold (is extracted)  
*étude* f. f. pl. *où* 1 art. or 3 *tire* 2

are not in general fruitful. The different countries through  
\* *en* — *infertile* pl. — *pays* m. pl. *par*

which he has passed have furnished his pencil with ro-  
*passé* *fourni à* *pinceau* m. de art.

mantic and picturesque scenes.

—*tique* 2 *pittoresque* 3 —1.

## † EXERCISE.

Who will not agree that life has few real pleasures  
*convenir* art. f. *peu de vrai*

In interrogations, or after a verb, *quel* is used to ask the name, or qualities of a person, or thing.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Quel homme est-ce ?</i>	What man is it ?
<i>Quel temps fait-il ?</i>	What weather is it ?
<i>Je ne sais quel homme c'est,</i>	I don't know what man it is.
<i>Il sait quel parti prendre,</i>	He knows what steps to pursue.

The adverb *où*, it has been already seen, is employed as a relative pronoun ; it is likewise used as a kind of absolute pronoun.

*Où* represents *en quel endroit*, in what place, or *à quoi*, to what.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Où allez-vous ?</i>	Where are you going ?
<i>Où cela nous mènera-t-il ?</i>	Where will that take us ?
<i>J'ignore où l'on me conduit,</i>	I don't know where they are taking me.
<i>Il n'a pas prévu où cette conduite le menerait,</i>	He did not foresee where such conduct would lead him.

REMARK I. When *où* is preceded by the preposition *de*, it marks the place, or cause, spoken of.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>D'où vient-il ?</i>	Where does he come from ?
<i>D'où sa haine procède-t-elle ?</i>	Whence proceeds his hatred ?

---

and many dreadful pains? (Some one) entered secretly ; guess who it was. *On entra secrètement deviner \* \** What have you read in that book that can have excited in your soul emotion and m. *qui puisse porté art. —f.* enthusiasm? I know not *what* to think (of it.) At *what* art. *enthousiasme m. savoir \** did you find them occupied? There is in that *avez trouvés occupé m. pl. dis-* course I know not *what* which appears to me designing. *What cours m. savoir sembler \* insidieux.* have you remarked good, beautiful, and sublime in Homer? *remarqué pr. pr. pr.* What more brilliant, and, at the same time, more false, than pr. *brillant en \* même pr.* the expressions of a man, who has (a great deal) of wit, but *beaucoup esprit qui* wants judgment? *manque de jugement ?*



*Voilà d'où il vient,  
Le mal me vient d'où j'attendais mon remède,*

It was there he came from.  
The evil proceeds from that quarter whence I had expected a remedy.

REMARK II. *Où* preceded by the preposition *par*, signifies through what place, or by what means.

## EXAMPLES.

*Par où avez-vous passé?* Which way did you come?  
*Par où me tirerai-je d'affaire?* Which way shall I extricate myself?  
*Voilà par où j'ai passé,* This is the way I came.  
*Je ne sais par où je me tirerai d'affaire,* I don't know which way I shall extricate myself.

By the manner in which these pronouns are employed, it will be seen they are only *interrogative*, when at the beginning of a sentence, and, consequently, the most proper name for them is that of *pronouns absolute*.†

## † EXERCISE.

*What grace*      *what delicacy,*      *what harmony, what colouring,*  
grâce f.      délicatesse f.      = f.      co-  
louring, *what beautiful lines*      in Racine!      *What then*  
l'oris m.      vers m.      —      1      donc 3  
must have been that extraordinary man, to whom seven cities  
doit 2      = 2      —  
contested the glory of having given birth? He does  
se sont disputé —f.      avoir donné art. jour m.      \*  
not know what model      to follow. I have told you *what*  
savoir      modèle m.      \* suivre  
man it is.      Which of those ladies do you think      the  
ce      f.      dames f. \* 2 trouver 1  
most amiable? Choose *which* of those two pictures  
f.      Choisir m.      4      5      6      tableau m. 7.  
you like      best.      Where am I? He knows not  
1 aimer 2 art.      mieux 3      en      savoir  
whence he is. He is gone I don't know *where*. *Where*  
en      allé      ne      savoir      De  
does he get that pride? (It is) from *there* he derives his  
lui vient orgueil m. Voilà de      tirer  
origin. (Which way) did you come? (That is) (the  
origine. Par      êtes-vous arrivé Voilà par  
road) I came.  
où venir ind-4.

## § IV.

## OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.—P. 115.

*Ce, cette, ces*, are often joined to the adverbs of place, *ci*, here, and *là*, there, in order to point out in a more precise manner the thing spoken of, the demonstrative pronoun is then placed before the substantive, and *ci* and *là* after it.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Ce livre-ci</i>	this book	<i>Cet homme-là</i>	that man
<i>Cette fleur-ci</i>	this flower	<i>Ces femmes-là</i>	those women

*Celui, celle, ceux, celles*; are followed by the preposition *de*, when placed before a substantive, and by a pronoun relative, when placed before a verb.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Les maladies de l'âme sont plus dangereuses que celles du corps,</i>	The disorders of the mind are more dangerous than those of the body.
<i>L'homme dont je vous ai parlé, est celui que vous voyez,</i>	The man of whom I spoke to you is he whom you see.
<i>De toutes les choses du monde, c'est celle que j'aime le moins,</i>	Of all the things in the world, it is that which I like least.

REMARK. The pronouns *celui, celle, ceux, celles*, when followed by a pronoun relative, are expressed in English, by the personal pronouns, *he, she, they*, or by *that which, those which, such as*, &c. ¶

## ¶ EXERCISE.

The pleasures of the wise resemble in nothing those of  
*ressembler* 2 3 1 4 à  
 a dissipated man. He that suffers himself to (be ruled) by  
*dissipé* 2 1 *se laisse* \* *dominer*  
 his passions, must renounce happiness. This stuff  
*doit renoncer à* art. *bonheur* m. *étouffe-ci* f.  
 will become you wonderfully. That action is worthy of  
 \* *siéra* à *merveille* —f. —*là*  
 blame. This scene is calculated to interest all men,  
*blâme* —f. —*ci* *faite pour intéresser* art.  
 But that cannot succeed.  
 —*là* ne saurait réussir.

*Celui-ci* and *celui-là* adopt the gender and number of the substantives whose place they supply. When opposed to each other, *celui-ci* marks the nearest object, and *celui-là* the remotest.

## EXAMPLE.

*Celui-ci* plaît, mais *celui-là* cap- This pleases, but that capti-  
tive, vates.

*Ci* and *là* coalesce with *ce*, and form two other demonstrative pronouns, *ceci* and *cela*, the first of which signifies *cette chose-ci*, this object; the second, *cette chose-là*, that object.

They may be used singly; but when they are opposed to each other, *ceci* expresses the nearest object, and *cela* the remotest.

## EXAMPLE.

*Je n'aime point ceci, donnez-* I don't like this, give me that.  
*moi cela,*

REMARK. When *cela* is alone, and not opposed to the pronoun *ceci*, it refers, like this last, to an object pointed to.

## EXAMPLES.

*Que dites-vous de cela?* What do you say of that?  
*Cela est fort beau,* † That is very handsome.

## + EXERCISE.

(Here are) certainly two charming prospects; *this*  
*Voilà certainement beau perspective* f. pl.  
has something more cheerful, but many people  
*quelque chose de riant bien de art. personne*  
think that more striking and more majestic. The body  
f. pl. *trouver imposant majestueux* m.  
perishes, the soul is immortal; yet all our cares are for  
*périr* f. —*tel cependant soin*  
that, while we neglect *this*. What means *this*? That  
*tandis que négliger veut dire*  
is true. It is not *that*. *This* is low and mean, but *that* is  
*Ce bas rampant*  
grand and sublime.

## § V.

## OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

## FIRST CLASS.

*Of those that are never joined to a Substantive.*—p. 116.

*Quelqu'un* means *un, une, one*.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Nous attendons des hommes, il en viendra quelqu'un,</i>	We expect men, some one will come.
<i>Plusieurs femmes m'ont promis de venir, il en viendra quelqu'une,</i>	Several ladies have promised me to come, some one of them will come.

*Quelqu'un*, taken absolutely and substantively, is of both genders, and means *une personne*, a person.

## EXAMPLE.

*J'attends ici quelqu'un,* I wait here for somebody.

*Quelques-uns* signifies *plusieurs dans un plus grand nombre*, several out of a great number.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Quelques-uns assurent,</i>	Some people affirm.
<i>Entre les nouvelles qu'il a débütées, il y en a quelques-unes de vraies,</i>	Among the reports he has circulated, several are true.

*Quiconque*, whoever, signifies *quelque personne que ce soit, qui que ce soit*, any person whatever. It takes no plural, and is never used but of persons.

## EXAMPLE.

<i>Ce discours s'adresse à quiconque est coupable,</i>	This speech is addressed to whoever is guilty.
--	--

*Chacun*, each, every one, is used either distributively, or collectively. It has no plural.

Distributively, it means *chaque personne, chaque chose*, each person, or thing. It is then used likewise in the feminine, and requires the preposition *de* after it.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Chacun de nous vit à sa mode,</i>	Each of us lives as he pleases.
<i>Voyez séparément chacune de ces médailles.</i>	Look at each of these medals separately.



Collectively, it signifies *toute personne*, every person.

## EXAMPLE.

*Chacun a ses défauts,*† Every body has his faults.

*Autrui*, means *les autres personnes*, other people: it only applies to persons, is never accompanied by an adjective, has no plural, and is never used in a sentence without being preceded by a preposition.

## EXAMPLE.

*La charité se réjouit du bonheur d'autrui,* Charity rejoices in the happiness of others.

*Personne*, which is always masculine and singular, means *nul, qui que ce soit*, nobody, whosoever. In this sense, it is preceded or followed by the negative *ne*, which is placed after *personne*, when this word stands before the verb; and before the verb, when *personne* stands after. The same observation applies to *rien*.

## +EXERCISE ON THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Can any one (be still ignorant) that it is from the  
*Pourrait-il 2 1 ignorer encore ce dès*  
 earliest infancy we ought to form the mind, the heart, and the  
*tendre enfance f. on doit \* former*  
 taste? Will not some one of these ladies be of the party? Some  
*\* f. partie f.*  
 people like to read (every thing new.) (These are) beautiful  
*aimer toutes les nouveautés Voilà de superbe*  
 pictures; I could wish to buy some. Whoever has stu-  
*tableau m. vouloir en \* acheter*  
 died the principles of an art, knows that it (is only) (by length  
*—pes —m. savoir ce n'est que à la*  
 of time) and by deep reflections, that he can succeed in  
*longue de profond réflexion f. réussir à*  
 making it his own. All the ladies at the ball were  
*se 2 rendre 4 le 3 \* propre 5. bal m. ind-2*  
 very finely dressed, and each differently.  
*\* superbement paré avait une parure différente.*  
 Every one should, for (the sake of) his own happiness, listen  
*devrait pour \* propre m. n'écou-*  
 only to the voice of reason and of truth. What is the  
*ter que \* voix f. art. raison f. art. vérité f.*  
 price of each of these medals?  
*prix m. f. médaille f.*

## EXAMPLES.

*Il ne faut nuire à personne,* We must injure nobody.  
*Personne n'est assuré de vivre jusqu'au lendemain,* Nobody is certain of living till to-morrow.

REM. I. The negative is sometimes understood, as, *y a-t-il quelqu'un ici?* is there any body here? *personne*, nobody. *Personne* stands for *il n'y a personne*, there is nobody here.

REM. II. In interrogative phrases without negation, or in those expressing doubt, *personne* signifies *quelqu'un*, any body.

## EXAMPLES.

*Personne oserait-il nier?* Would any body dare deny?  
*Je doute que personne soit assez hardi,* I doubt whether any body be bold enough.

REM. III. When *personne* is placed in the second member of a comparison, it means *any body*.

## EXAMPLE.

*Cette place lui convient mieux qu'à personne,* That place suits him better than any body.

*Rien*, nothing, which is masculine and singular, is used with, or without, a negation. When with a negation, it means *nette chose*, nothing.

## EXAMPLE.

*Il ne s'attache à rien de solide,* He applies himself to nothing fixed.

When used without a negation, it means *quelque chose*, something.

## EXAMPLE.

*Je doute que rien soit plus propre à faire impression que, &c.* I doubt whether any thing be more suited to make an impression than, &c.

The negation is sometimes understood, *que vous a coûté cela? rien*, how much did you pay for it? nothing.

It always requires the preposition *de* before the adjective, or participle, that follows it, and then the verb is understood, as is likewise the negation, as, *rien de beau que le vrai*, nothing is noble but truth. ¶

## SECOND CLASS.

*Of those which are always joined to a Substantive.*—p. 118.

*Quelque*, some, signifies *un, une, entre plusieurs*, one out of several; it is of both genders, and takes the number of the substantive.

## EXAMPLE.

*Adressez-vous à quelque autre personne,* Apply to somebody else.

*Chaque*, each, every, which is of both genders, has no plural.

## EXAMPLE.

*Chaque pays a ses coutumes,* Each country has its customs.

*Quelconque, aucun*, any, *quel que ce soit*, whatever it be; *quel qu'il soit*, whoever he be, is of both genders,

## ¶ EXERCISE.

To most men the misfortunes of others are but  
*Pour la plupart de art. mal m. ne que*  
 a dream. Do not to others what you would not wish (to be  
 \* *songe m. vouloir qu'on*  
 done to you.) No one knows whether he deserves love or  
*vous fit savoir si est digne de de*  
 hatred. An egotist loves nobody, not even his own children;  
*égoïste pas même propre*  
 in the whole universe he sees no one but himself. He is more  
*dans \* univers ne voit \* que lui seul.*  
 than (anybody) worthy of the confidence (with which) the king  
*digne confiance f. dont*  
 honours him. I doubt whether any one ever painted  
*honorer que ait jamais peint art.*  
 nature in its amiable simplicity, better than the sentimental  
 —f. =f. sensible  
 Gessner. Has any body called on me this morning?  
 — \* 2 *est-il venu 1 chez matin m.*  
 Nobody There was nothing but what was great in the de-  
*ind-2 que \* de \* grand dans des-*  
 signs and works of the Egyptians. I doubt  
*sein m. pl. art. ouvrage m. pl. —tiens*  
 whether there is any thing better calculated to exalt the  
*que subj-1 2 1 plus propre*  
 soul, than the contemplation of the wonders of nature.  
 —f. merveille f. art. —f.

and always is placed after a substantive; when used with a negative it is always singular.

## EXAMPLE.

*Il ne veut se soumettre à aucune* He will submit to no authority  
*autorité quelconque,* whatever.

*Certain*, signifies *quelque*, certain, some. In this sense it is used alike of persons and things; but it is always placed before the substantive.

## EXAMPLE.

*J'ai ouï dire à certain homme,* I have heard some man say.  
*à un certain homme,*

*Un, une, a, or an*, when used indeterminately for *quelque, certain*, some person, or some thing, takes the gender of the substantive to which it is joined.

## EXAMPLES.

*J'ai vu un homme qui courait,* I saw a man who was running.  
*Je me suis promené dans une* I walked in a large fine meadow.  
*grande et belle prairie,‡*

## ‡ EXERCISE ON THE SECOND CLASS.

Some enlightened people among the Egyptians preserved the idea of a first being, whose attributes they represented under various symbols; this (is 1 *représenter* ind-2 2 *différent* symbole m. *c'est ce que* proved) by the following inscription upon a temple, "I am *prouve* \* \* *cette* \* —f. *de* —m. all that has been, is, and shall be: no mortal ever removed *ce qui* 3 *mortel* 2 1 *lever* ind-4 the veil that covers me." Every nation has (in its turn) *voile* m. f. *à son tour* 2 shone on the theatre of the world. There is no reason *whatever* *brillé* 1 m. *raison* f. that can bring him to it. Some figures appear monstrous *puisse déterminer* —f. —trueux and deformed, considered separately, or too near; but, if they *difforme* f. pl. *séparément* de *près* on are put in their proper light and place, the true point of *les met* \* *jour* à *leur* — —m. view restores their beauty and grace. Yesterday I *vue* f. *leur rendre* \* art. = f. art. —f. 2 saw a lady remarkably beautiful.

1 *d'une rare* 2 *beauté* 1.



## THIRD CLASS.

*Of those which are sometimes joined to a Substantive, and sometimes not.—page 119.*

*Nul*, and *pas un*, not any, not one, are employed either alone, or in conjunction with a substantive. They are accompanied by the negation, assume the feminine, but have no plural, and may be followed by the preposition *de*.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Nul de tous ceux qui y ont été</i>	Not one of those who went
<i>n'en est revenu,</i>	there has returned.
<i>Pas un ne croit cette nouvelle,</i>	Not one believes that intelligence.
<i>Je n'en ai nulle connaissance,</i>	I have no knowledge of it.
<i>Il n'y a pas une seule personne</i>	There is not a single person that
<i>qui le croie.</i>	believes it.

*Aucun* signifies *nul*, no, not any, when accompanied by a negation, and may be followed by the preposition *de*.

## EXAMPLE.

<i>Vous n'avez aucun moyen de</i>	You have no means of succeeding
<i>réussir dans cette affaire,</i>	in that affair.

This pronoun is seldom employed in the plural, except before substantives, which, in some particular sense, are better employed in the plural.

## EXAMPLE.

<i>Il n'a fait aucunes dispositions,</i>	He has made no dispositions.
--	------------------------------

REM. *Aucun* may be employed without a negation in interrogative sentences, or those which express doubt, or exclusion.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Aucun homme fut-il jamais plus</i>	Was ever any man more suc-
<i>heureux?</i>	cessful?
<i>On doute qu'aucune de ces affaires</i>	They doubt whether any of
<i>réussisse,</i>	those affairs will succeed.
<i>Le plus beau morceau d'éloquence</i>	The finest piece of eloquence
<i>qu'il y ait dans aucune langue,</i>	that exists in any language,
<i>&amp;c.¶</i>	&c.

*Autre*. other, expresses a difference between two

objects, or between one and several; as, *quelle autre chose souhaitez-vous de moi?* what else do you wish of me?

REM. *Autre* is sometimes used to express a person but indeterminate; as, *j'aime mieux que vous l'appreniez de tout autre que de moi*, I had rather you learn it of any other person than me.

*Un* is sometimes opposed to *autre*; in which case, these two words are preceded by the article, supply the place of the substantives to which they relate, adopt their gender and number, and form the pronouns *l'un l'autre*, *l'un et l'autre*, and *ni l'un ni l'autre*.

*L'un l'autre*, each other, one another, applies both to persons and things: it takes both gender and number, and requires the article before the two words of which it is composed. If there be any preposition, it must be placed before the last. When these two words are used in conjunction, they express a reciprocal relation between several persons or things.

#### EXAMPLE.

*Il faut se secourir l'un l'autre,* We ought to assist each other.

#### ¶ EXERCISE ON THE THIRD CLASS.

*No one* likes (to see himself) as he is. *No expression, no*  
*se voir* *tel que* — f.  
 truth of design and colouring, *no* strokes of genius in that  
 f. *dessein* *de coloris* *trait*  
 great work. He is as learned as *any one*. *Not one* of these  
*ouvrage* *savant*  
 engravings announces any great skill. *None* of his works  
*gravure* f. pl. *annoncer un* *talent* m.  
 will descend to posterity. He is so ignorant, and at the same  
*passer* art. = f. — *en \* même*  
 time so obstinate, that he will not (be convinced) by *any* reason-  
*temps - obstiné* \* *se rendre à* *raison-*  
 ing. Did *any* man ever attain to such a pitch of  
*nement* m. *jamais* 2 *parvenir* 1 *ce* \* *comble* m.  
 glory! I doubt whether there be *in any* science a more evi-  
 = *que* subj-1 — f. *plus lu-*  
 dent principle.  
*mineux* 2 — *pe* m. 1.

When used separately, they denote a difference.

## EXAMPLE.

*Les passions s'entendent les unes avec les autres ; si l'on se laisse aller aux unes, on attire bientôt les autres,* Our passions have a relation with each other: if we indulge some, the others will soon follow.

REM. In the latter case *l'un* is used for the person or thing first mentioned, and *l'autre* for the person or thing last spoken of.

*L'un et l'autre*, both; these two words mark union. They require the verb to be in the plural.

## EXAMPLE.

*L'une et l'autre sont bonnes,* Both are good.

*Ni l'un ni l'autre*, neither; these two words on the contrary mark separation. The verb must be in the plural.

## EXAMPLE.

*Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont fait leur devoir,†* Neither has done his duty.

## † EXERCISE.

Ask another. Would any other have been so  
*Demander à* \* *aurait-il eu* \* *assez*  
 self-conceited as to think that his private opinion could  
*d'amour propre* \* *pour penser* *particulier* 2 —f. 1 *pût*  
 counterbalance the public sentiment? Reason and faith  
*balancer* 2 *opinion?* f. 1 art. *Raison* f. art. *foi* f.  
 equally demonstrate that we were created for another life.  
 2 *démontrer* 1 *créer* ind-4 f.  
 They speak ill of one another. The happiness of the people  
*mal* m.  
 constitutes that of the prince; their true interests are connected  
*faire* —m. *intérêt* m. *lié*  
 with each other. Presumption and pride easily insinuate  
*à* pl. pl. art. *Présomption* f. art. *orgueil* 2 *se glisser*  
 themselves into the heart; if we allow one the entrance,  
 1 m. *l'on y donne à* 2 f. 3 \* *entrée* 1  
 it is much to (be feared) that we shall soon (abandon our-  
*bien* *craindre* *on* \* *bientôt* 2 *ne se livre* 1  
 selves) to the other. Both relate the same story, though  
*rapporter* *fait* m.  
 neither believes it to be true.  
*ne penser que* \* *soit*

*Même* signifies *qui n'est pas autre*, which is not different. It is of both genders, and takes the plural.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>C'est le même homme,</i>	It is the same man.
<i>La même personne,</i>	The same person.
<i>Ce sont les mêmes raisons,</i>	They are the same reasons.
<i>Ce poème est le même que celui dont je vous ai parlé,</i>	This poem is the same that I was mentioning to you.

*Tel* means *pareil, semblable, de même*, such, like, similar. It takes both genders and both numbers.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Un tel projet ne saurait réussir,</i>	Such a scheme cannot succeed.
<i>Il n'y a pas de tels animaux, de telles coutumes,</i>	There are no such animals, no such customs.

When used alone, it either preserves its proper signification, or it expresses a person indeterminately.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Vous ne sauriez me persuader rien de tel,</i>	You cannot persuade me of any such thing.
<i>Tel fait des libéralités, qui ne paie pas ses dettes,</i>	The same man is liberal in giving, who does not pay his debts.

*Plusieurs*, several, which is plural and of both genders, is used alike of persons and of things. When united to a substantive, or relating to it, it signifies an indeterminate number, without relation to another.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Plusieurs motifs l'ont déterminé,</i>	Several reasons determined him.
<i>Je crois cela pour plusieurs raisons,</i>	I believe that for several reasons.

But it is likewise used as a part of a greater number.

## EXAMPLE.

<i>Parmi un si grand nombre de gens, il y en eut plusieurs qui s'y opposèrent,</i>	Out of so great a number of persons, several objected to it.
--	--

When *plusieurs* is employed absolutely as a substantive, it always means *plusieurs personnes*, several persons.

## EXAMPLE.

<i>Plusieurs aiment mieux mourir que de perdre leur réputation,</i>	Many would rather die than forfeit their character.
---	--



*Tout* is used either alone, or with a substantive.

When employed alone, it signifies *toutes choses*, all things; *toute sorte de choses*, every kind of things.

## EXAMPLE.

*Tout nous abandonne au moment de la mort ; il ne nous reste que nos bonnes œuvres,* Every thing forsakes us at the moment of death ; we retain nothing but our good works.

When united to a substantive, it is used either collectively, or distributively.

Considered collectively, *tout* signifies the totality of a thing, and is then followed by the article.

## EXAMPLES.

*Tout l'univers,* The whole universe.  
*Tous les corps célestes,* All the celestial bodies.

Considered distributively, *tout* signifies *chaque*, each; in this case, it is not accompanied by the article.

## EXAMPLE.

*Tout bien est désirable,†* Every good is desirable.

## † EXERCISE.

Does he always maintain the *same* principles ? Yes, they are  
\* *soutenir* —pe *Oui ce*  
absolutely the *same*. That general is the *same* that commanded  
—ment pl. — —der  
last year. Such a conduct is inexplicable. There  
art. *dernier* 2 *année* f. 1 2 1 *conduite* f. —  
are no such customs in this country. I never heard  
de *coutumes* f. *pays* m. *ai entendu dire*  
(any thing) similar. The same man sows who often reaps  
*rien* de \* \* *semer* *recueillir*  
nothing. I this morning received several letters. Among those  
1 3 *matin* 4 ind-4 2 *lettre* f. pl.  
manuscripts, there are several much esteemed. Many  
—crits *qu'on beaucoup* 2 *estime* 1  
by endeavouring to injure others, injure themselves more  
*en s'efforcer* de *nuire* à art. *se nuire* à  
than they think. All is in God and God is in all. The whole  
*ne penser* en  
course of his life has been distinguished by generous actions.  
*cours* m. f. *marqué* des = 2 f. 1.  
Every vice is odious.  
—m.

## FOURTH CLASS.

Of those which are followed by *QUE*.—P. 120.

*Qui, que*, whoever, is only said of persons, and signifies *quelque personne que*, whatever person; it requires the verb following to be in the subjunctive.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Qui que ce soit qui ait fait cela,</i>	Whoever has done that, is a
<i>c'est un habile homme,</i>	man of talent.
<i>Qui que je sois,</i>	Whoever I may be.
<i>Qui que s'ait été,</i>	Whoever it may have been.
<i>Qui que c'eût été,</i>	Whoever it might have been.
<i>Qui que ce puisse être,</i>	Whoever it may be.

When *qui que*, followed by *ce soit*, is used with a negative, it signifies *aucune personne*, nobody; as, *je n'y trouve qui que ce soit*, I find nobody there.

*Quoi que*, whatever it be, is only used of things, and signifies *quelque chose que*, whatever thing; it requires also the verb following to be in the subjunctive.

## EXAMPLES

<i>Quoi que ce soit qu'il fasse, ou</i>	Whatever he does or says, he
<i>qu'il dise, on se défie de lui,</i>	is distrusted.
<i>Quoi que vous disiez, je le ferai,</i>	Whatever you may say, I will
	do it.

REM. When *quoi que*, followed by *ce soit*, is used with a negation, it signifies *aucune chose*, not any thing.

## EXAMPLE.

<i>Sans application, on ne peut réussir en quoi que ce soit,†</i>	Without application, it is impossible to succeed in any thing whatever.
---	---

## + EXERCISE ON THE FOURTH CLASS.

Whoever	has told you so, he is mistaken.	Pas-
<i>ce soit qui</i>	<i>le se tromper</i>	ind-4 Pas-
senger, whoever thou be,	contemplate with	religious veneration
<i>sant</i>	<i>contempler</i>	<i>un = 2 respect</i> m. 1.
this monument erected by	gratitude;	it is the tomb
—m. <i>élevé</i>	art. <i>reconnaissance</i> f. <i>ce</i>	<i>tombeau</i> m.
of a just and benevolent man.	How	can he hope to be
2 <i>bienfaisant</i> 3 1	<i>Comment</i>	<i>espérer de</i>

*Quel que* signifies *de quelque sorte, de quelque espèce que ce soit*, of whatever sort, or kind it may be, when relating to things; or, *qui que ce soit*, whoever it may be, when relating to persons. It takes both gender and number according to the person, or thing, it relates to, and requires the subjunctive.

## EXAMPLES.

*Quelles que soient vos affaires,* Whatever business you may  
*venez,* have, come.  
*Je n'en excepte personne, quel qu'il soit,* I except nobody, whoever he may be.

REM. *Lequel que*, whosoever, whichever, is also used; as, *lequel des trois que vous choisissiez, peu m'importe*, whichever of the three you choose, I care little.

*Quelque—que*, of both genders, when united to a substantive, signifies *quel que soit le, quelle que soit la, &c.*, whatever be the, &c. It has both numbers, and requires the subjunctive.

## EXAMPLES.

*Quelque raison qu'on lui apporte,* Whatever reason is adduced,  
*il n'en croit rien,* he believes nothing about it.  
*Quelques efforts que vous fassiez, vous ne réussirez point,* Whatever attempts you may make, you will never succeed.

When united to an adjective, it operates as an adverb, and signifies *à quelque point que*, however great a degree; it then neither takes gender, nor number.

## EXAMPLES.

*Quelque belle qu'elle puisse être* However beautiful she may be,  
*elle ne doit pas être vaine,* she ought not to be vain.

beloved    who    has regard    for no one?    *Whatever* he may do  
*lui    ne    d'égards*  
or    say, he (will find it) very difficult    to destroy    pre-  
*qu'il    aura    bien de la peine    détruire des pré-*  
judices so deeply    rooted.    A mind vain, presumptuous,  
*jugé m. si profondément enraciné    —    présomptueux,*  
and inconsistent,    will never succeed in any thing whatever.  
*sans consistance    \*    réussir*  
*Whatever* a frivolous world    may think of you, never swerve  
*frivole 2 monde 1 puisse    se détourner*  
from the path    of    virtue.  
*chemin m.    art.    f.*

*Quelque puissans qu'ils soient,* However powerful they may  
*je ne les crains point,* be, I am not afraid of them.

*Tel que,* such as, serves to mark a parity between objects by comparison.

## EXAMPLE.

*C'est un homme tel qu'il vous le faut,* He is just such a man as you want.

*Tout—que* signifies *quoique, encore que,* though, *quelque,* however. On this occasion, *tout* is considered as an adverb, and is employed with adjectives of every kind, and even with some substantives.

## EXAMPLES.

*Tout artificieux qu'ils sont, je doute que le public soit longtemps leur dupe,* Artful as they are, I doubt whether the public will be long their dupe.  
*Toute femme qu'elle est,†* Woman as she is.

## † EXERCISE.

*Let the laws be (what they may,) we must always*  
*Que 2 loi f. 4 subj-1 3 quel 1 il*  
 respect them. *Whatever efforts you make, I doubt whether*  
*respecter — m. subj-1 que*  
 you will succeed. All men, however opposite they may  
*\* réussir subj-1 art. opposé \**  
 be, agree on that point. The man who descends into  
*subj-1 s'accorder — m. ne rentrer en*  
 himself only to discover his defects, and correct them, likes  
*que pour y démêler — m. se corriger en*  
 to see himself as he is. *However surprising that phenomenon*  
*surprenant 2 phénomène m. 3*  
 may be, it is not against the order of nature. *Children as*  
*1 contre ordre m. art.*  
 they are, they behaved remarkably well.  
*se sont conduits fort bien.*

## A GENERAL EXERCISE ON THE PRONOUNS.

*The Evening Walk.*

*du 2 soir 3 promenade f. 1.*

On a fine summer evening, my brother, my sister, and  
*Dans de 2 soirée f. 1*  
 myself. (were walking) (by the side) of a wood  
*moi nous nous promenions le long bois m. qui n'est*



not far distant from the castle which we inhabit. We  
*pas bien éloigné* *château m.* *habiter*  
 (were contemplating) with rapture the majestic scenery  
*contempler ind-2* *transport* — *tieux 2* *scène f. 1.*  
 which nature exhibits at the approach of night, when we  
*art.* *déployer* *approche f.* *art. nuit f. quand*  
 perceived at the foot of an ancient oak, a boy of a most  
*apercevoir ind-3* *à pied m.* *vieux chêne m. enfant art. 2.*  
 interesting countenance. His beauty, his air of ingenu-  
*intéressant 3 art. figure f. 1* = *f.* — *m.* *ingénu-*  
 ousness and candour, his gracefulness, struck us, and we  
*ité* *de =* *grâce pl.* *frapper ind-3* *nous*  
 approached him. What! alone here, my boy? said we;  
*approcher ind-3 en* *seul ici* *enfant lui dîmes*  
 whence art thou? Whence comest thou? What art thou  
*D'où* \* 2  
 doing here alone? I am not alone, answered he smiling,  
*fais 1 4 3* *répondre ind-3 d'un air riant*  
 I am not alone; but I was fatigued, and I (have seated myself)  
*ind-2 fatigué* *s'asseoir ind-4*  
 under the shade of this tree, while my mother is busy  
*à ombre f.* *arbre m. tandis que* *occupé*  
 in gathering simples to give some relief to the  
*à cueillir des —* *pour apporter* *soulagement m.*  
 pains which her aged father suffers. Ah! (how many)  
*douleur f. pl. 2* *vieux 3 4* *souffrir 1* *que*  
 troubles my good mamma has! How many troubles!  
*de peine f. pl. 2 3* *maman 4 1* *si*  
 Did you know them, there is not one of you that would not  
 \* *connaître ind-2* *qui* \*  
 be touched with pity, and who could refuse the tribute  
*subj-2* *de pitié* \* *lui subj-2 un tribut*  
 of your tears. We said to him, lovely child, thy ingenu-  
 \* *larme f. pl. ind-3* \* *aimable*  
 ousness, candour, innocence, (every thing,) interest us  
*pro. = f.* *pro. — f.* *intéresser*  
 in thy misfortunes and those of thy mother. Relate them to  
*à malheur m. pl. à* *Raconter 2* \*  
 us; whatever they be, fear not to afflict us. (Wo be) to  
 1 *subj-1* *de affliger* *malheur*  
 whoever cannot feel for the misfortunes of others!  
*ne sait pas s'attendrir sur* *mal m. pl.*  
 He immediately related the history of his mother, with an ex-  
 2 *aussitôt 1* *ind-3* =  
 pression, an artlessness, a grace, altogether affecting. Our  
 — *f.* *naïveté f.* = *f.* *tout-à-fait touchant f. s.*

## CHAP. V.

## OF THE VERB.

*Agreement of the Verb with the Subject.*

The subject is that of which something is affirmed, and may always be known by the answer to this question, *qui est-ce qui?* who, or what is it? as, *Pierre vit*, Peter lives; *l'oiseau vole*, the bird flies; if it be asked, *qui est-ce qui vit?* who is it that lives? *qui est-ce qui vole?* what is it that flies? The answers *Pierre* and *l'oiseau*, shew that *Pierre* and *l'oiseau* are the subjects of the verbs *vit* and *vole*.

**RULE.** The verb must be of the same number and person as its subject.

---

hearts felt                      the liveliest emotions; tears (trickled down  
*éprouver* ind-3    *vif*                      — f.    *nos*                      *couler*  
our cheeks) and we gave him what    little    money    we  
ind-3                      *lui* \*    art. *peu de argent que*  
had about us.    (In the mean time) the mother returned.  
ind-2 *sur*                      *cependant*                      *revenir* ind-3  
(As soon as) he saw                      her, he exclaimed, (make haste,)  
*Dès-que*                      *apercevoir*                      *s'écrier*                      *accourir* s.  
mamma, make haste; see what these good little folks    have  
   s.    *ce que*                      *gens* f. pl.  
given me; I have related to them thy misfortunes; they have  
   m.  
been affected    (by them,) and their sensibility (has not been  
*touché* m. pl.    *en*                      = f.    *ne s'est pas*  
satisfied) with shedding    tears.    See mamma, see what they  
*borné*    à    \*    *des*                      s.  
have given me.    The mother was moved; she thanked us,  
   ind-3 *attendri* f.    *remercier*  
and    said: generous feeling souls,    the good action  
*nous*                      = 2    *et sensible* 3 *âme* f. pl. 1                      --f.  
which you (have just been doing) will not be lost.    He who  
   *venez de faire*                      *perdu* f.  
sees (every thing) and judges (every thing) will not let    it go  
   *juger*                      *laisser* \*  
unrewarded.  
*sans récompense.*

## EXAMPLES.

Je ris,	<i>I laugh.</i>	Nous parlons,	<i>We speak.</i>
Tu joues,	<i>Thou playest.</i>	Vous plaisantez,	<i>You jest.</i>
Il aime,	<i>He loves.</i>	Ils sont fous,	<i>They are mad.</i>

La vertu est aimable, *virtue is amiable.*

*Ris* is in the singular number, and the first person, because *je*, its subject, is in the singular, and the first person. *Joues* is in the singular, and the second person, as *tu* is in the singular, and the second person, &c. ¶

REM. I. When a verb has two subjects both singular, it is put in the plural.

## EXAMPLE.

*Mon père et ma mère m'aiment tendrement,*† *My father and mother love me tenderly.*

REM. II. When a verb relates to subjects of different persons, it agrees with the first, in preference to the other two, and with the second in preference to the

## ¶ EXERCISE ON THE VERB.

The most free of all men is he who can be free even in  
*libre* art. *celui* même  
 slavery. Are we not often blind to our defects?  
 art. *esclavage* m. \* *s'aveugler* ind-1 *sur défaut*  
 All men (are inclined) to idleness, but the savages of  
 art. *tendre* ind-1 art. *sauvage* art.  
 hot countries are the laziest of all men. Do you think of  
*chaud* 2 *pays* 1 \*  
 imposing long on the credulity of the public? Thou  
*en imposer* long-temps à = f. m.  
 canst not deny that he is a great man.  
*pouvoir nier ne* sub-1.

## † EXERCISE.

His uprightness and honesty, make him courted by  
*droiture* f. pron. *honnêteté* *faire* *rechercher* de  
 every body. Strength of body and of mind  
 art. f. art. *celle* art. *se*  
 meet not always together. A good heart and a noble soul  
*rencontrer* ensemble. m. *beau* f.  
 are precious gifts of nature.  
*de* art. = 2 *don* m. pl. 1 art. —f.

third. The person addressed is named *first*, and the person addressing *last*. On this occasion, the pronoun plural *nous*, is generally placed before the verb, if the first person has been mentioned before, or the pronoun plural *vous*, if no first person has been mentioned.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Vous, votre frère, et moi, nous lisons ensemble la brochure nouvelle,</i>	You, your brother, and I, read together the new pamphlet.
<i>Vous et votre ami, vous viendrez avec moi,†</i>	You and your friend will come with me.

REM. III. When a verb has the relative pronoun *qui* for its subject, it is put in the same number and person as the noun, or pronoun, to which *qui* relates.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Est-ce moi qui ai dit cette nouvelle?</i>	Is it I who told this news?
<i>Est-ce nous qui l'avons voulu?</i>	Is it we who desired it?
<i>Ceux qui aiment sincèrement la vertu sont heureux,‡</i>	Those who sincerely love virtue are happy.

## ‡ EXERCISE.

You, your friend, and I, have each	a different opinion.	In
	<i>chacun</i>	2 f. 1
our childhood, you and I (were pleased) with playing together.		
<i>enfance f.</i>	<i>se plaire ind-2 à inf-1</i>	
Neither I, nor (any one else,) has been able	to understand	
<i>ni ni d'autres ne pouvoir ind-4</i>	<i>* comprendre 2</i>	
(any thing) in that sentence. (Take good care) you and your brother, not to (give way) to the impetuosity of your character.		
<i>* de s'abandonner</i>	=	<i>caractère m.</i>

## ¶ EXERCISE.

He that complains most of mankind, is not always he	
<i>Celui se plaindre le plus art. homme pl.</i>	
that (has most reason) to complain (of them.)	You that wish
<i>être le plus fondé en vouloir</i>	
to enrich your mind with thoughts vigorously conceived and	
<i>* enrichir esprit de f. pl. fortement conçu f. pl.</i>	
nobly expressed, read the works of Homer and Plato.	
<i>noblement exprimé ouvrage.</i>	

N.B. See the exercises. (Page 252.)



## OF THE REGIMEN OF VERBS.

A verb is active, when it will admit after it *quelqu'un*, or *quelque chose*; and, the word, which is put after the verb, is called the regimen of that verb. Observe that this regimen may be known by asking the question, *qu'est-ce que?* It is called *direct*, and may be either a noun, or a pronoun.

**RULE.** When the regimen of the active verb is a noun, it is always placed after the verb; when it is a pronoun, it is generally placed before it.

## EXAMPLE.

*Ma mère aime tous ses enfans,* My mother loves all her children.

*Je vous aime,* and not in English, *J'aime vous*, I love you,

*Il m'aime,* and not *Il aime moi*, he loves me.†

Besides this regimen *direct*, some active verbs may have a second, which is called *indirect*, and is marked by the words *à* or *de*.

## EXAMPLES.

*Il a fait un présent à sa sœur,* He has made a present to his sister.

## † EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF VERBS.

He has discovered to all other nations his ambitious  
*montrer* art \* *peuple* m. pl. = 2  
 design of enslaving them, and has left us  
*dessein* m. 1 *mettre dans l'esclavage* inf-1 *ne laisser*  
 no means of defending our liberty, but by endeavouring to  
*aucun moyen* inf-1 *que en tâcher* inf-3 *de*  
 overturn his new kingdom. Homer represents Nestor as him  
*renverser* *royaume* m. *celui*  
 that restrained the ungovernable wrath of Achilles, the  
*modérer* ind-2 *bouillant* *courroux* m.  
 pride of Agamemnon, the haughtiness of Ajax, and the impetuous  
*fierté* f. = 2  
 courage of Diomed. He dared not (lift up) his eyes, lest  
 — m. 1 *Diomède.* *oser* ind-2 *lever* \* art. *de*  
 they should meet those of his friend, whose  
*peur* de \* \* *rencontrer* inf-1  
 very silence condemned him. He caresses them, because  
 art. *même* 2 m. 1 ind-2  
 he loves them.

*Il accuse son ami d'imprudence,*‡ He accuses his friend of imprudence.

The second regimen is known by the answer to these questions; *à qui?* to whom? *à quoi?* to what? *de qui?* of whom? *de quoi?* of what?

## EXAMPLES.

<i>A qui a-t-il fait un présent?</i>	To whom did he make a present?
<i>A sa sœur,</i>	To his sister.
<i>De quoi accuse-t-il son ami?</i>	Of what does he accuse his friend?
<i>D'imprudence,</i>	Of imprudence.

Passive verbs require *de*, or *par*, before the noun, or pronoun, that follows them.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>La souris est mangée par le chat,</i>	The mouse is eaten by the cat.
<i>Un enfant sage est aimé de tout le monde,</i>	A good child is loved by every body.

REM. The French never use the word *par*, before Dieu, God; they say, *les méchants seront punis de Dieu*,

## ‡ EXERCISE.

In submitting to the yoke of Asia, Greece would have  
*En subir* inf-2\* *joug* m. art. art.  
 thought virtue subjected to voluptuousness, the mind  
*croire* art. 2 *assujettir* inf-11 art. *volupté* f.  
 to the body, and courage to a senseless force, which consisted  
 art. *insensé* 2 — f. 1 ind-2  
 only in numbers. Three hundred Lacedemonians hast-  
*ne que* art. *multitude* f. s. — *niens, courir*  
 ened to Thermopylæ to certain death, content in dying, to  
 ind-3 art. — *piles* pl. *un assuré* 2 f. 1 *en de*  
 have sacrificed to their country, an infinite number of barbarians,  
*immoler* *pays* m. 2 1 *barbare*  
 and to have left to their countrymen the example of an unheard  
*de laisser compatriote inouï* 2  
 of bravery. You knew the importance which your parents  
 \* *hardiesse* f. 1 *savoir* ind-2 — f. *que* —  
 attached to the success of that affair: why have you not  
 ind-2 *réussite* f. f. *pourquoi*  
 hastened to announce it (to them?)  
*s'empreser* ind-4 *de* f.

which, in order to avoid making use of *by*, may be thus Englished; God will punish the wicked. ¶

Some few neuter verbs have no regimen; as, *dormir*, to sleep; but many of them have a government.

RULE. Some neuter verbs require *à*, others *de*, before their regimen.

## EXAMPLES.

*Tout genre d'excès nuit à la santé,* Every kind of excess is hurtful to health.  
*Il médit de tout le monde,†* He slanders every body.

## ¶ EXERCISE.

The city of Troy was taken, plundered, and destroyed by the confederate Greeks, 1148 years before the Christian æra: this event has been celebrated by the two greatest poets of Greece and Italy. You will only be beloved, esteemed, and courted by men, (in proportion as) you join the qualities of the heart to those of the mind. God punished the Jews every time when, deaf to the voice of the prophets, they fell into idolatry and impiety.

*Troie pris f. saccagé détruit*  
*confédéré 2 1 avant 2 ère f. 1*  
*pr. art.*  
*rechercher de que autant que joindre ind-7*  
*= f. pl. pr. 3 pu-*  
*nir (passive voice ind-3 2) peuple Juif 1 toutes les fois que*  
*sourd f. prophète sing. tomber ind-3 dans*  
*art. = art. =*

## † EXERCISE.

This sentiment has pleased the king and all the nation.

In his retirement, he (has the full enjoyment) of the faculties of his soul. To slander (any one) is to assassinate him in cold blood. The honest man seldom (permits himself) to jest, because he knows the most innocent jests may sometimes hurt the reputation. It is only in retirement that one truly enjoys one's self.

*dans retraite f. jouir tout*  
*= f. pl. \* médire de quelqu'un c'est \**  
*de 2 sang 1 rarement 2 se permettre 1*  
*de \* art. plaisanterie f. pl. parce que savoir que*  
*f. pl. \* pouvoir quelquefois nuire à f. ce*  
*ve que art. on véritablement 2 jouir 1 de soi.*

Reflected verbs have for their regimen the personal pronouns *me, te, se, nous, and vous*, and this regimen is sometimes direct, and sometimes indirect.

#### OF THE NATURE AND USE OF MOODS AND TENSES.

##### *Of the Indicative.*

The indicative is that mood which simply declares and affirms a thing. It contains eight tenses, viz. the *present*, the *imperfect*, the *preterit definite*, the *preterit indefinite*, the *preterit anterior*, the *pluperfect*, the *future simple*, and the *future anterior*.

The *present* marks that a thing is *now* passing, that is, either existing, or doing.

##### EXAMPLES.

*J'aime,* I love. - *Ils jouent,* They play.

The *imperfect* expresses a present with respect to something past.

##### EXAMPLE.

*J'entrais au moment où vous sortiez,* I came in at the moment you were going out.

Or it expresses something past, but habitual, without fixing the time of its duration.

##### EXAMPLE.

*César était un habile général,* Cæsar was an able general.

The *preterit definite* marks that a thing took place at a time completely past.

##### EXAMPLE.

*J'écrivis hier à Rome,* I wrote yesterday to Rome.

The *preterit indefinite* expresses a thing as having taken place at a time which is neither precise, nor determinate.

His work	has pleased	every	one,	because it unites
<i>ouvrage m.</i>		<i>à</i>	art. <i>monde</i>	<i>joindre</i>
to real utility, the charms		of	style, and the beau-	
<i>un 2 = f. 1</i>	<i>agrément m. pl.</i>	art. <i>m.</i>		sing.
ties of sentiment.				
art. <i>pl.</i>				



## EXAMPLE.

*Il m'a fait un vrai plaisir en venant me voir,* He has given me real pleasure by coming to see me.

Or at a time which is not absolutely past.

## EXAMPLE.

*J'ai vu cette semaine beaucoup de monde,‡* I have seen many people this week.

## ‡ EXERCISE ON THE INDICATIVE..

My sister is in her chamber, where she (is occupied) in reading  
 ancient history, the study (of which) pleases her extremely.  
 art. 2 1 2 dont 1 lui infiniment  
 Benefits bestowed are (so many) trophies  
 art. *Bienfait que on répandre* ind-1 de art. *trophée que on*  
 erected in the heart of those whose felicity (has been  
*s'ériger* ind-1 1 art. = f. 4 on 2 *faire*  
 promoted) (by them.) The great Corneille was busy in his  
 ind-1 3 \* — occupé  
 study tracing the plan of one of his tragedies, when a ser-  
*cabinet à* inf-1 — m. = do-  
 vant, terrified, came to tell him that his house was  
*mestique* m. tout effrayé ind-3 \* lui \* art. 3 *prendre*  
 on fire: go and find my wife, replied he: I do  
 à ind-6 2 \* art. 1 \* *trouver* *répondre* ind-3  
 not understand household concerns. Some Hunga-  
*entendre rien à* art. *affaire pl. du ménage* m. de art. *Hon-*  
 rian noblemen revolted from the Emperor Sigismund;  
*grois* 2 *seigneur* 1 *se révolter* ind-3 contre = — mond  
 this prince heard it, and marched boldly against  
*apprendre* ind-3 *fièrement au-devant de*  
 them: which, among you, said he (to them,) will lay hands  
*d'entre* ind-3 *mettre* 1 art. f.  
 upon his king first? If there be one bold enough  
 sing. 3 4 art. 2 *en un hardi* 2 1  
 let him advance. This noble firmness struck the rebels  
*en imposer à* *séditieux*  
 (with awe,) who returned immediately to their duty. I have  
 \* *rentrer aussi-tôt dans le devoir*  
 travelled through almost all Europe, and I have visited the  
*voyager dans* art. — f.  
 most celebrated places in Asia and Africa; if, on the one  
 —bre 2 lieu 1 de art. *Asie* pr. art. *Afrique* de \*  
 hand, I admired the master-pieces of art, of every kind, which  
*côté* m. ind-4 *chefs-de-œuvre* art. *en tout genre*

The *preterit anterior* expresses that a thing had taken place immediately before a time which is passed, and this tense is either definite, or indefinite. There is the same difference between its two forms, as between the two preterits, definite and indefinite.

## EXAMPLES.

*J'eus diné hier à midi,* I had dined yesterday at twelve.  
*Quand j'eus diné hier, midi sonna,* When I had dined yesterday, it struck twelve.  
*J'ai eu déjeûné ce matin à dix heures,* I had done breakfast this morning at ten o'clock.

The *pluperfect* is that past tense which expresses a thing as having taken place at any period antecedent to the time when another thing happened; or it expresses a thing habitually done before another.

## EXAMPLES.

*J'avais soupé quand il entra,* I had supped when he came in.  
*Lorsque j'étais à la campagne,* When I was in the country, as  
*dès que j'avais déjeûné, j'allais,* soon as I had breakfasted, I  
*à la chasse,* used to go a hunting.

The *future absolute*, is that tense which expresses that an action or event will take place at a time which does not yet exist.

## EXAMPLE.

*J'irai demain à la campagne,* I shall go to-morrow into the country.

The *future anterior* is the tense which expresses that at a time when a thing will take place, another thing will have already taken place.

## EXAMPLE.

*Quand j'aurai fini, je sortirai,* When I have done, I shall go out.

the protection of enlightened governments has produced, on  
 the other, I shed tears, (on seeing) the ravages of ig-  
 norance and barbarism.  
 pr. art. barbarie f.

art. 2 1 faire naître  
 ind-4 de art. sur — art.

## OF THE CONDITIONAL.

The *conditional* is the mood which affirms on conditions; it has two tenses, the *present* and the *past*.

The *present of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would take place on certain conditions.

## EXAMPLE.

*Je ferais votre affaire avant peu,* I would settle your business before long, if it only depended upon me.  
*si elle dépendait uniquement de moi,*

The *past of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would have taken place at a time which no longer exists, dependant on certain conditions.

## EXAMPLE.

*J'aurais, ou j'eusse fait votre* I would have settled your business, if you had mentioned it to me.  
*affaire, si vous m'en aviez, ou m'en eussiez parlé,†*

## † EXERCISE ON THE PRETERIT ANTERIOR, &amp;c.

I had done yesterday, at noon. I (went out) (as soon as) I  
*finir midi sortir ind-4 dès-que*  
had dined. As soon as Cæsar had crossed the Rubicon, he had  
*passer* —  
no longer to deliberate; he (was obliged) to conquer or to die.  
*plus devoir ind-2 \* vaincre \**  
I had finished the task that you had imposed upon me, when  
*tâche f. imposer f. \**  
you came in. Those who had contributed most to his elevation  
— *buer le plus*  
to the throne of his ancestors, were those who laboured with  
*sur travailler*  
the most eagerness to precipitate him (from it.) I shall  
*de acharnement en ne point*  
shortly go into the country, where I intend to (collect  
*larder à à campagne se proposer de herbo-*  
plants,) (in order to) (make myself perfect) in the knowledge  
*riser inf-1 pour se perfectionner*  
of botany. When I have done reading the di-  
*art. botanique f. achever ind-8 de inf-1*  
vine writings of Homer and Virgil, and my mind has imbibed  
*2 écrit m. 1 pr. que se pé-*  
their beauties, I shall read the other epic poets.  
*nétrer ind-8 de ind-7 2 1*

## OF THE IMPERATIVE.

The *imperative* is that mood which commands, exhorts, entreats, or reproves. It is a present with respect to the injunction, and a future with respect to the thing enjoined.

In many verbs a compound of the imperative may be used to express an injunction to have a thing done previously to another, as, *ayez dîné avant que je revienne*, have dined before I return.†

## † EXERCISE ON THE CONDITIONAL.

What would not be the felicity of man, if he always sought  
*Quel* \* — f. *chercher* ind-2  
 his happiness in himself? I shall be glad to see you harmo-  
*uni* pl.  
 nious, happy, and comfortable. A dupe to my imagination, I  
*tranquille* \* *de*  
 should have (been bewildered) (but for) you in my search  
*s'égarer* *sans* \* art. *recherche* f.  
 after truth. Inquire whether he would have consented to  
*de* art. *s'informer si* *consentir*  
 those conditions, in case he had thought himself able  
*dans* art. *que* *se croire* subj-4 *capable*  
 to fulfil them.  
*de remplir.*

## ‡ EXERCISE ON THE IMPERATIVE.

Be not fond of praise; but seek virtue, which  
 sing. *passionné pour* art. *louange* f. art.  
 procures it. Let us remember that unless virtue guide  
*attirer* *se souvenir* *à moins que* art. *ne*  
 us, our choice must be wrong. Let us not be deceived by  
*devoir* ind-1 *mauvais.* *se laisser prendre à*  
 the first appearances of things; but let us take time to  
 art. *se donner* art. *de*  
 fix our judgment. Arbiters of the destinies of men, do  
*Arbitre* — *née* art. art.  
 good if you wish to be happy; do good, if you wish that your  
*bien* *vouloir* \*  
 memory should be honoured; do good, if you wish that  
 subj-1 art.



The *subjunctive*, is that mood which expresses a subordination to what precedes. With this dependance it forms a sense, and none without. *Je voudrais qu'il lût*, forms sense, but *qu'il lût*, alone and unconnected, does not.

The *present* and the *future* of the subjunctive can only be distinguished by the sense; in this phrase, *il faut que je vous sois bien attaché pour venir vous voir par le temps qu'il fait*, I must have a great esteem for you to come and see you in such weather as this; *je sois*, expresses a present time; but in this, *je ne crois pas que vous obteniez cela de lui*, I do not think you will obtain that of him, *vous obteniez* expresses a future, and stands for *vous obtiendrez*.

The *imperfect*, the *preterit*, and the *pluperfect* of the subjunctive express also a past, or future, according to circumstances: in this phrase, *soupçonnez-vous qu'il ne le fit pas*, did you suspect he would not do it, *fît* expresses a past; but in this, *je désirerais qu'il vît du monde*, I wish him to see company, *vît* marks a future. ¶

heaven should open to you its eternal gates. Never forget that  
 sub-1 2 *porte f. 1*  
 the truly free man is he, who, superior to all fears, and  
*véritablement* 2 3 1 *dégagé de* f-s.  
 all desires, is subject only to the gods and to reason.  
 pr. in-s. *soumis ne que* art. f.

Men must be (very much) blinded by their pas-  
 art. 3 *il* 1 *que* 2 subj-1 *bien* *aveuglé* by their pas-  
 sions, not to acknowledge that they ought to (love  
 2 *pour* 1 *devoir* ind-1 \*  
 one another) as parts of a whole; and as (the members  
*s'entraimer* art. *tout* 2

## OF THE INFINITIVE.

The *infinitive* is that mood which affirms indeterminately without either number, or person.

It denotes of itself, neither *present*, *past*, nor *future*, except when it follows other verbs. The *present* always expresses a present, relative to the preceding verb; as, *je le vois*, *je le vis*, *je le verrai venir*, I see, I saw, I shall see him come. The *past* always expresses a past, relative to the verb that precedes it, *je crois*, *je croyais l'avoir vu venir*, I think, I thought that I had seen him coming. To express a *future*, the

of our body) (would do) if (every one) had a particular vitality.

You asked <sup>1</sup> him to come with us; but I doubt whether he <sup>chacun ind-2 sa 2 vie 1</sup>  
<sup>prier ind-4 de que</sup>  
 will have that complaisance. I could not persuade myself that  
 -subj-1 ind-2

he was so vain as to aspire to that place. Though every  
 subj-2 assez \* pour —f.

body says so, I do not believe that he is gone to Rome.  
 subj-1 le subj-3

(Is it possible) that he should let slip so good an oppor-  
 se pouvoir laisser subj-3 échapper beau occasi-  
 tunity of acquiring immortal glory? I could have wished  
 on f. un 2 1

that he had availed himself of his abode in the country, to  
 profiter subj-4 séjour à campagne pour  
 perfect himself in the study of philosophy.  
 se perfectionner art. = f.

## † EXERCISE ON THE INFINITIVE.

We only shut our eyes to truth, because we fear to  
 ne \* art. art. que parce que de  
 see ourselves as we are. We were yet far from the castle,  
 2 nous 1 tel que ind-2 encore  
 when one of our friends came to join us. I did not think I  
 ind-3 \* ind-2 \*  
 was to set out so soon. He promises every day that he  
 devoir \* art. pl. de \*  
 will amend, but I do not rely upon his promises.  
 \* se corriger compter promesse f. pl.

infinitive must be preceded by the infinitive of the verb *devoir*; as, *je croyais devoir y aller*, I thought I was to go there.

REMARK. The infinitive also expresses a future after the verbs *permettre*, *espérer*, *compter*, *s'attendre*, and *menacer*; as, *il promet de venir (qu'il viendra)*, he promises to come (that he will come;) *il menace de s'y rendre (qu'il s'y rendra)*, he threatens to go (that he will go) there.†

## OF THE PARTICIPLE.

The *participle* is a part of the verb which partakes of the properties both of a verb and an adjective; of a verb, as it has its signification and regimen, of an adjective, as it expresses the quality of a person, or thing.

There are two participles, the *participle present*, and the *participle past*.

## OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

The *participle present* always terminates in *ant*; as, *aimant*, *finissant*, *recevant*, *rendant*.

They talk of a secret expedition; he hopes to be (in it.)	He
<i>on</i> 2 — f. 1 *	<i>en</i>
relies upon seeing you very soon,	to terminate
<i>compter</i> * inf-1 <i>au premier jour</i> <i>pour</i>	
amicably his affair with you. You expected	to take a
<i>à l'amiable</i>	<i>s'attendre</i> ind-2 <i>faire</i>
journey this year; but your father has changed	his mind.
<i>voyage</i> m. <i>de</i> *	<i>avis</i>
He threatens to punish us severely, if we (fall again) into the	
<i>de</i> <i>sévèrement</i> <i>retomber</i>	
same error.	
<i>faute.</i>	

## EXERCISE ON THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

That mountain being very high, and thus commanding a  
*élevé* *ainsi dominer sur*  
 vast extent of country, was very well calculated for our  
*grande étendue* *pays* ind-2 \* *propre* *à*

**RULE.** The participle present remains unchanged, and takes neither gender nor number when it expresses an action, as, *une montagne*, or *des montagnes dominant sur des plaines immenses*, a mountain, or mountains commanding immense plains; *un homme*, *des hommes*, *une femme*, *des femmes lisant, parlant, marchant*, a man, men, a woman, women reading, speaking, walking. But when, like an adjective, it expresses simply a quality, it takes both the gender and number of its substantive; as, *un homme obligeant*, an obliging man; *une femme obligeante*, an obliging woman; *des tableaux parlans*, speaking portraits; *la religion dominante*, the established religion; *à la nuit tombante*, at night fall.

What grammarians call *gerund*, is nothing but the participle present, to which the word *en* is prefixed; *on se forme l'esprit en lisant de bons livres*, we form our minds by reading good books.

observations. This woman is of good disposition, obliging  
*caractère m.*

every one, whenever she (has it in her power.) They go  
*tout le monde quand le pouvoir*

cringing before the great, that they may be insolent to their  
*ramper devant pl. afin de \* \* inf-1 pl. avec*  
 equals. The state of pure nature is that of the savage living in the  
*égal*

desert, but living in his family, knowing his children, loving them,  
*famille f connaître*

(making use) of speech, and (making himself understood.)  
*user art. parole se faire entendre*

An agreeable languor imperceptibly (laying hold) of my  
 2 *languueur f. 1 insensiblement s'emparer*

senses, suspended the activity of my soul, and I fell (asleep.)  
*sens suspendre ind-3 s'endormir*

Time is a real blunderer, placing, replacing, ordering,  
 ind-3 art. *vrai brouillon mettre remettre ranger*

disordering, impressing, erasing, approaching, removing, and  
*déranger imprimer effacer approcher éloigner*

making all things, good and bad; and almost always (impossi-  
*rendre f. pl. presque*

ble to be known again.)  
*méconnaissable.*



## OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

The participle past has various terminations; as, *aimé, fini, reçu, ouvert, dissous, &c.*

This participle may either agree with its subject, or its regimen.

AGREEMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST WITH  
ITS SUBJECT.

**RULE I.** The participle past, when accompanied by the auxiliary verb *être*, agrees with its subject in gender and number.

EXAMPLE.

<i>Mon frère est tombé,</i>	My brother is fallen.
<i>Mes frères sont tombés,</i>	My brothers are fallen.
<i>Ma sœur est tombée,</i>	My sister is fallen.
<i>Mes sœurs sont tombées,</i>	My sisters are fallen.
<i>La nuit sera bientôt passée,</i>	The night will soon be over.
<i>Les spectacles sont fréquentés,</i>	The theatres are frequented.
<i>Cette fleur est fort recherchée,</i>	This flower is much sought after.
<i>Ils sont fort estimés,</i>	They are very much esteemed.

EXERCISE ON THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

Fire-arms were not known to the ancients. Ishmael,  
 art. *arme-à-feu* f. pl. ind-5 *connu de* *Ismaël*  
 the son of Abraham, is known among the Arabs, as (the man)  
 \* — *parmi* *Arabe* *celui*  
 from whence they sprung, and circumcision has remained  
*être sorti* art. f. *être demeuré*  
 (among them) as the mark of their origin. Heaven is that  
*leur* f. art.  
 permanent city, (into which) the just are to be received after  
 —2 *cité* f. 1 *où* pl. *devoir* \* *après*  
 this life. In Abraham's time, the threatenings of the true  
*de* 2 art. 1 *menace* f. pl.  
 God was dreaded by Pharaoh, king of Egypt; but, in the time  
 ind-2 *redouté de Pharaon*  
 of Moses, all nations were corrupted, and the world, which  
*Moïse* art. f. *perversi*  
 God has made to manifest his power, was become a temple  
*pour* *pouvoir* m. *devenu*  
 of idols. That dreadful crisis which threatened the state with  
*terrible* 2 *crise* f. 1 ind-4 *de*

**RULE II.** The participle past, when it follows the verb *avoir*, never agrees with *its subject*.

<i>Mon frère a écrit,</i>	My brother has written.
<i>Mes frères ont écrit,</i>	My brothers have written.
<i>Ma sœur a écrit,</i>	My sister has written.
<i>Mes sœurs ont écrit,</i>	My sisters have written.
<i>Les Amazones ont acquis de la</i>	The Amazons have acquired
<i>célébrité,</i>	celebrity.
<i>J'ai contraint les soldats à mar-</i>	I have forced the soldiers to
<i>cher,</i>	march.

**REMARK.** The participle of the verb *être*, and of all the neuter verbs which are conjugated with the auxiliary verb *avoir*, never vary, as, *il* or *elle a été*, he, or she has been; *ils* or *elles ont été*, they have been; *il* or *elle a dormi*, he, or she has slept; *ils* or *elles ont nui*, they have annoyed. ¶

---

instant	destruction, was happily	soon over.	She is
<i>prochain 2</i>	<i>f. 1</i>	<i>ind-3 heureusement</i>	<i>passé</i>
come to bring us all kinds	of refreshments.	The sciences	
*	<i>sorte f. sing.</i>	<i>rafraîchissement</i>	<i>f.</i>
have always been protected by	enlightened governments.		
	<i>protégé</i>	<i>art. éclairé 2</i>	<i>1</i>

---

### ¶ EXERCISE.

The Romans successively	triumphed over the most
<i>Romain successivement 2</i>	<i>ind-4 1 de</i>
warlike nations. Lampridius relates that	Adrian erected
<i>belliqueux 2 1</i>	<i>raconter Adrien élever</i>
to Jesus Christ some temples, which (were still	
<i>ind-6 de art.</i>	<i>on encore 2</i>
to be seen) in his time. Happy those	princes who have
<i>voir ind-2 1 de</i>	<i>art.</i>
never (made use) of their power but to do	good! We
<i>user</i>	<i>pouvoir que pour art. bien</i>
have spent the whole day in tormenting ourselves.	One
<i>journée f. à inf-1 2</i>	<i>nous 1</i>
has seldom seen a great stock	of good sense in a man of
<i>rarement</i>	<i>fonds m. sens à</i>
imagination. The errors of Descartes proved very	useful
— =	<i>beaucoup servir</i>
to Newton.	
<i>ind-4</i>	

# AGREEMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST WITH ITS REGIMEN.

RULE I. The participle past always agrees with *its regimen direct*, when that regimen is placed before the participle, whether the auxiliary verb that accompanies it be *avoir*, or *être*.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Les écoliers que j'ai eus, ont fait de grands progrès,</i>	The pupils, whom I have had, have made rapid progress.
<i>Lucrèce s'est tuée,</i>	Lucretia has killed herself.
<i>J'ai renvoyé les livres que vous m'aviez prêtés,</i>	I have sent back the books which you had lent me.
<i>Que de soins je me suis donnés!</i>	What pains I have taken!
<i>Quelle affaire avez-vous entreprise?</i>	What business have you undertaken?
<i>Quand la race de Caïn se fut multipliée,</i>	When the race of Cain had multiplied.
<i>Ce yeux que n'ont émus ni soupirs ni terreur,</i>	Those eyes which neither sighs nor terror have moved.
<i>Le Dieu Mercure est un de ceux que les anciens ont le plus multipliés,</i>	The God Mercury is one of those whom the ancients have multiplied the most.

## EXERCISE ON THE AGREEMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST WITH ITS REGIMEN.

All the letters which I have *received*, confirm that important news. *f. pl. confirmer*  
 The agitated life which I have *led* till  
 2 s. 1 *agité* 2 f. 1 *mener* jusqu'à  
 now, makes me sigh for retirement. The difficulties  
*présent* *soupirer après* art. *retraite* f. f. pl.  
 which the academies (have *proposed* to one another) do not  
*se faire* ind-4  
 seem easy to (be resolved) The sciences which you have  
*paraître aisé* *résoudre* f. pl.  
*studied*, will prove infinitely useful (to you.) The death which  
*être* f.  
 Lucretia (*gave* herself) has (*made* her immortal.) The  
*se donner* ind-4 *immortaliser* ind-4  
 cities which those nations have (*built* for themselves) are  
*ville* f. pl. *peuple* *se bâtir* ind-4  
 but a collection of huts. The persons whom you have *in-*  
*ne que* *amas* m. *chaumière* f. pl.

REM. The regimen which precedes the participle is, either one of these pronouns, *que, me, te, se, le, la, les, nous, and vous*, or a noun sometimes joined to the pronoun *quel*, sometimes preceded by the word of quantity, *combien*, or *que*, signifying *combien*, how much, as may be seen in the examples already given.†

RULE II. The participle past *never* agrees with its regimen, either when that participle is without regimen *direct*, or when, having a regimen direct, that regimen is placed *after* it.

---

*structed* appear to me possessed of reason and taste. Nothing  
 can equal the ardour of the troops which I have <sup>plein</sup> *seen* (setting off.) pr.  
*égaler* f. pl. inf-1  
 The chimeras which she has *got* in her head, (are beyond)  
*chimère* f. pl. *se mettre* \* art. *passer*  
 all belief. What measures have I not *taken*! What fortunes  
*croyance* f. *démarches* f. pl. *faire* f. pl.  
 has not this revolution *ruined*! What tears has she not *shed*;  
*renverser* *Que de* f. pl. *verser*  
 what sighs has she not *heaved*! The Amazons (*made* themselves)  
 m. pl. *pousser* f. pl. *se rendre* ind-4  
 famous by their courage. The city of London has (*made* itself,) *célèbre* f.  
 by its commerce, the metropolis of the universe. I have *thought*  
 — m — le f. *croire*  
 her agitated by the furies. This day is one of those which they  
 = m. pl.  
 have *consecrated* to tears. The language in which Cicero and  
*consacrer* art. *langue* f. \* *Cicéron*  
 Virgil have *written*, will live in their works. I could have wished  
*par* *ouvrage* \* *vouloir*  
 to avoid entering into those details, but I *thought* them neces-  
 \* *éviter d'entrer* — m. *croire* ind-4  
 sary. The tribunes demanded of Clodius the execution of  
*tribun* m. pl. ind-3 à  
 the promises which the consul Valerius had *given* them.  
 f. *faire leur*.

---

#### † EXERCISE.

The persons whose visit you had *announced* to me, are not  
 f. pl. 1 art. f. 5 2 4 \* 3



## EXAMPLES.

<i>La lettre dont je vous ai parlé,</i>	The letter which I have mentioned to you.
<i>La perte et les profits auxquels il a participé,</i>	The loss and profits which he has shared.
<i>Les académies se sont fait des objections,</i>	The académies have proposed objections to one another.
<i>Vous avez instruit ces personnes à dessiner,</i>	You have taught these persons to draw.
<i>Lucrèce s'est donné la mort, ¶</i>	Lucretia has put a period to her existence.

**RULE III.** The participle past takes neither gender nor number, when the participle and the auxiliary verb to which it is joined are used impersonally, nor when that participle is followed by a verb, which governs the pronouns, or pronouns preceding it.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Les chaleurs excessives qu'il a fait cet été, ont beaucoup nui à la récolte,</i>	The excessive heats, which we have had this summer, have done great injury to the corn.
<i>Quelle fâcheuse aventure vous est-il arrivé?</i>	What unpleasant adventure have you met with?
<i>La maison que j'ai fait bâtir,</i>	The house which I have ordered to be built.
<i>Imitez les vertus que vous avez entendu louer,</i>	Imitate the virtues which you have heard praised.
<i>Les mathématiques que vous n'avez pas voulu que j'étudiasse,</i>	The mathematics which you would not permit me to study.

come.	Men	built	themselves	cities.	The Amazons
art.	se bâtir	ind-4		de art.	
acquired	great	celebrity.	I have forced	the soldiers	
ind-4	beaucoup de	=	contraindre		
to march.	That woman	has bestowed	on herself	fine gowns.	
			se donner *	* de	
Letters and	writing	were invented	to	represent	
art. 4	art. écriture	5 on 1 a 2	3	pour peindre	
speech.	She has cut	two (of her) fingers.	Titus has made		
art.	se couper	* doigt m. pl.	rendre		
his wife	mistress of his	riches.	I have given	myself (a great deal)	
		bien		bien	
of	trouble.	Commerce has	made this	city flourishing.	
art. peine	f. art.	m.	rendre	f. florissant	
They have made	an appointment.				
	se donner	* rendez-vous,			

*Elle s'est laissé séduire,*

She has suffered herself to be  
seduced.

REMARK. To make a right application of the second part of this rule, we ought to examine whether we can put the regimen immediately after the participle. As we cannot say; *J'ai fait la maison, vous avez entendu les vertus, vous n'avez pas voulu les mathématiques*, it follows that the regimen belongs to the second verb. Sometimes, however, the regimen may relate either to the participle, or to the following verb, according to the meaning of the speaker. Thus, *Je l'ai vu peindre*, means, I saw her picture drawn; but *Je l'ai vue peindre*, signifies, I saw her painting.

Sometimes it happens likewise, that, in sentences which seem to resemble each other, the regimen in one belongs to the participle, and in the other, to the verb which follows it. For instance, this question, *Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle actrice?* Have you heard the new actress sing? should be thus answered, *Oui je l'ai entendue chanter*, yes, I have: but this question, *Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle ariette?* Have you heard the new song? must be answered, *Oui, je l'ai entendu chanter*, yes, I have.†

#### † EXERCISE.

The great changes which (have taken place) in administration, have astonished many people. The heavy rains which we have had in the spring, have been the cause of many diseases. The scarcity which there was last winter, has afforded the opportunity of doing much good. What news has reached you? How many imprudent steps were taken on that occasion! How many large ships have been built in England within these fifty years! The figures which you have learned to draw are of great beauty. We

*changement y avoir ind-4 art.*  
*bien des personnes grand pluie*  
*f. pl. \* il faire ind-4*  
*maladie f. pl. disette f. ind-4 art. dernier 2*  
*1 donner occasion inf-1 bien*  
*est-il venu Que de faux démarche f. pl.*  
*il s'est faire en gros il se*  
*construire ind-4 depuis \**  
*apprendre dessiner un \**

## CHAP. VI.

## OF THE ADVERBS.

*Situation of the Adverbs.*

**RULE I.** In the simple tenses, the adverb is generally placed after the verb; and, in the compound tenses, between the auxiliary and the participle.

## EXAMPLES.

*L'homme le plus éclairé est ordinairement celui qui pense le plus modestement de lui-même,* The man who is most learned is generally he who thinks most modestly of himself.  
*Avez-vous jamais vu un pédant plus absurde et plus vain?* Have you ever seen a pedant more absurd and more vain?

Compound adverbs, and those which have preserved the regimen of the adjectives from which they are derived, are placed always after the verb, as,

## EXAMPLES.

*C'est à la mode,* That is fashionable.  
*Il a agi conséquemment,* He has acted consistently.

Adverbs which denote time in an indeterminate manner are likewise placed after the verb.

## EXAMPLES.

*Il eût fallu se lever plus matin,* It would have been necessary to rise earlier.  
*On a vu cela autrefois,* That has been seen formerly.

**EXCEPTIONS.** 1. Adverbs of order, rank, and those which express a determinate time, are placed either before, or after the verb.

ought never to swerve from the good path which we  
*falloir ind-1* \* *s'éloigner* route f. on  
 have begun to follow. The measures, which you advised  
*mcure f. pl.* *conseiller ind-4*  
 me to adopt, have not succeeded. The rule which I have be-  
*de prendre* *réussir* *règle f.*  
 gun to explain, seems to me very easy to (be understood.) You  
*expliquer sembler* *saisir*  
 see that I have not (been mistaken) respecting the affairs which  
*se tromper ind-4*  
 I had foreseen you would have in hand.  
*prévoir que* \* \*

## EXAMPLES.

*Nous devons premièrement faire* We ought, first, to do our duty;  
*notre devoir ; secondement,* secondly, enjoy lawful pleasures.  
*chercher les plaisirs permis,*  
*Aujourd'hui il fait beau ; il* To-day, it is fine ; it will rain  
*pleuvra peut-être demain,* perhaps to-morrow.

2. These adverbs, *comment, où, d'où, par où, combien, pourquoi, quand*, used with, or without interrogation, are always placed before the verb which they modify.

## EXAMPLES.

*Comment vous portez-vous ?* How do you do ?  
*Où allez-vous ?* Where are you going ? [it.  
*Il ne sait comment s'y prendre,* He does not know how to set about

**RULE II.** The adverb is always placed before the adjective which it modifies.

## EXAMPLE.

*C'est une femme fort belle, très* She is a woman very beautiful,  
*sensible, et infiniment sage,* of great sensibility, and infinitely prudent.

**RULE III.** Adverbs of quantity and comparison, and the three adverbs of time, *souvent, toujours, jamais*, are placed before the other adverbs.

## EXAMPLES.

*Si poliment, fort poliment,* So politely, very politely.  
*Très-heureusement,* Very happily.  
*Le plus adroitement,* The most skilful.  
*Ils ne seront jamais étroitement* They never will be intimately  
*unis,* united.  
*Ils sont toujours ensemble,* They are always together.  
*C'est souvent à l'improviste qu'il* He often comes unexpectedly.  
*arrive,*

*Souvent* may, however, be preceded by an adverb of quantity, or comparison, as, *si souvent, assez souvent, fort souvent, plus souvent, moins souvent, trop souvent*.

**REM.** When adverbs of quantity and comparison meet together in a sentence, the following is the order which custom has established.

Si peu	Bien peu	Beaucoup * trop	Tant mieux
Trop peu	Bien plus	Beaucoup plus	Tant pis,
Très-peu	Bien davantage	Beaucoup moins	&c.

\* *Beaucoup* is not, as the English *much*, susceptible of being modified by any adverb preceding, thus, *très-beaucoup, trop beaucoup, &c.* would be barbarism.



When *bien* stands before another adverb, it means *very, much, &c.* as in the preceding and following examples.

*Bien assez*, Quite enough. *Frapper bien fort*, To strike very hard.  
*Bien moins*, Much less. *Bien tard*, Very late.

But when it is placed after the adverb, it signifies *well*; as,

*Assez bien*, Pretty well. *Fort bien*, Very well.  
*Moins bien*, Not so well. *Aussi bien*, As well.

These rules have been sufficiently exemplified. p. 143.

## CHAP. VII.

### OF THE CONJUNCTIONS.

The conjunction *que* serves to complete a comparison; it is elliptically used to express a restriction, when placed after *ne*, and it generally gives grace, energy, and precision to sentences.

#### EXAMPLE.

QUE {	expressing comparison	{ <i>L'Asie est plus grande que l'Europe.</i> }	Asia is larger than Europe.
	for rien que	{ <i>On ne parle que de la nouvelle victoire.</i> }	They talk of nothing but the new victory.
	—je souhaite que	{ <i>Qu'il vive, pour je souhaite qu'il vive.</i> }	May he live, for I wish that he may live.
	—à moins que	{ <i>Cela ne finira pas qu'il ne vienne.</i> }	There will be no end to it, unless he come.
	—avant que	{ <i>Qu'il fasse le moindre excès, il est malade.</i> }	If he commits the least excess, he is ill.
	—sans que	{ <i>Qu'il perde, ou qu'il gagne son procès, c'est un homme ruiné.</i> }	Whether he gains or loses his lawsuit, he is a ruined man.
	—dès que	{ <i>Attendez qu'il vienne.</i> }	Wait till he comes.
	—aussitôt que		
	—si, or quand		
	—soit que		

QUE	{	for <i>pourquoi</i> ?	{ <i>Que ne se cor-</i>	{ <i>Why does he not re-</i>
		— <i>comme</i>	<i>rige-t-il</i> ?	<i>form</i> ?
			<i>Méchant qu'il est.</i>	<i>Wicked as he is.</i>
			<i>Que Dieu est</i>	<i>How great is the Al-</i>
			<i>grand !</i>	<i>mighty !</i>
		— <i>combien</i> !	{ <i>Que je hais les</i>	{ <i>How much I hate the</i>
			<i>méchans !</i>	<i>wicked !</i>

Another frequent use of this conjunction is, to save the repetition of *comme*, *parceque*, *puisque*, *quand*, *quoique*, *si*, &c. when to phrases beginning with these words, others are added under the same regimen, by means of the conjunction *et* ; as,

*Si l'on aimait son pays, et qu'on* If we loved our country, and  
*en désirât sincèrement la* sincerely wished its glory,  
*gloire, on se conduirait de ma-* we should act so as, &c.  
*nière, &c.†*

### EXERCISE ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

We have every thing to fear from his wisdom, even more  
*encore*  
 than from his power. What men style greatness, glory,  
*Ce que art. appeler*  
 power, profound policy, is in the eyes of God *only* misery,  
*profond politique f. à*  
 weakness, and vanity. *May* they understand, at last, that without  
*comprendre*  
 internal peace there is no happiness. *May* she  
*avec soi-même 2 art. 1 point de*  
 be as happy as she deserves to be! Never write *before* you  
*de le*  
 have thoroughly examined the subject which you pro-  
*sous toutes ses faces 2 1 se*  
 pose to treat. *Let* him but hear the least noise, his terrified  
*proposer de trailler \** *bruit effrayé 2*  
 imagination presents to him nothing but monsters. Do  
*f. 1 \* \* ne que de art.*  
 not sift this question, *till* I can (be your guide.)  
*approfondir ne subj-1 vous mettre sur la voie*  
 Do not go out *till* your brother comes in. *Why* does he not  
*ne rentrer \**  
 (take advantage) of his youth, (in order to) acquire the know-  
*profiter pour con-*  
 ledge he wants?  
*naissance pl. dont avoir besoin ?*

## GOVERNMENT OF CONJUNCTIONS.

The conjunctions which unite sentences to one another are followed either by the *infinitive*, the *indicative*, or the *subjunctive*.

Those that are followed by an infinitive, are,

1. Such as are distinguished from prepositions, only by being followed by a verb; as,

*Il faut se reposer après avoir travaillé,* One ought to rest after having laboured.

2. Those which have the preposition *de* after them; as,

*Il travaille afin de vous surpasser,* He works that he may surpass you.

## + EXERCISE.

Full as he was of his prejudices, he would not acknowledge  
*Rempli* ind-2 *préjugé* ind-3 *convenir de*  
 (any thing.) Full of self-love (as he is,) expect nothing  
*rien* pétri 1 3 2 *de*  
 good (from him.) How beautiful is that cultivated nature!  
*en* 1 6 5 2 4 3  
 How, by the care of man, is it brilliantly and richly adorned!  
*par* f. *pompeusement orné*  
 Had profound philosophers presided at the formation of  
*si* \* *de* ind-6 *à* art.  
 languages, and had they carefully examined the elements of  
*langue* *avec soin* subj-4 — m. art.  
 speech, not only in their relations (to one another,) but also  
*discours non* *entr'eux* *encore*  
 in themselves, it is not (to be doubted,) that languages  
*en* m. *douteux* art. *ne*  
 would present principles more simple, and at the  
*offrir* subj-2 *de* art.  
 same time, more luminous.

## ¶ EXERCISE ON THE GOVERNMENT OF CONJUNCTIONS.

They were going to spend a few days in town,  
*ne* \* ind-2 \* *passer* \* *quelques* *à* art.  
 only that they might return with more pleasure to  
*que pour* \* \* *se retrouver* inf-1 *dans*  
 their charming solitude. Many persons work only (in order to)  
*ne que* *afin de*  
 acquire consideration and riches, but the honest  
*de* art. pr. art. 2 *et*

## Conjunctions that govern the indicative,

bien entendu que,	autant que,	puisque,	peut-être que,
à condition que,	non plus que,	lorsque,	comme,
à la-charge que,	outré que,	pendant que,	comme si,
de même que,	parce que,	tandis que,	quand,
ainsi que,	attendu que,	durant que,	pourquoi,
aussi bien que,	vu que,	tant que,	comment, &c.

They are followed by the indicative, because the principal sentence, which they unite with that which is incidental, expresses the affirmation in a direct, positive, and independent manner.

The use of the six following conjunctions,

si non que,	de sorte que,	tellement que,
si ce n'est que,	en sorte que,	de manière que,

varies according to the meaning expressed by the principal sentence.

## EXAMPLE OF THE INDICATIVE.

*Je ne lui ai répondu autre chose, si non que j'avais exécuté ses ordres.*

I made him no other answer, *but that* I had executed his orders.

## EXAMPLE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Je ne veux autre chose, si non que vous travailliez avec plus d'ardeur.*

I desire nothing else, *but that* you would study with greater ardour.

The indicative is required in the first sentence, by the verb *j'ai répondu* expressing a positive affirmation, and the subjunctive in the second, because *je veux* expresses a compound, or desire.†

humane	man spends	(so much)	time in	study, only
sensible 3	1 ne employer	tant de	à art.	que
to	be useful to his fellow-creatures.			
pour		semblables.		I reveal to you the
plot	which your enemies have concerted in			secret,
trame f.		ourdir	art. ténèbres f.pl.	
in order to warn	you against their artifices.			
	prémunir			

## + EXERCISE.

When you have a more extensive knowledge of	geometry
ind-7	2 1 art. f.
and algebra, I shall give you a few	lessons in astro-
pr. art. algèbre f.	* quelque de
nomy, and optics. Form your mind,	heart, and taste
pr. optique	pron. pron.



The conjunctions which govern the subjunctive are,

soit que,	jusqu'à ce que,	supposé que,	afin que,
sans que,	encore que,	au cas que,	de peur que,
pour que,	à moins que,	avant que,	de crainte que,
quoique,	pourvu que,	non pas que,	&c. &c.

They require the subjunctive, as they always imply doubt, desire, ignorance.‡

while you are still young. Do not keep truth a prisoner,  
*encore* *retenir* art. \* *captive*  
 though you should (draw upon you) a cloud of enemies.  
*quand* *devoir* cond-1 *s'attirer* *nuée* f.  
 I will give you this fine picture upon condition that you  
*tableau* m. à  
 keep it as a testimony of my friendship.  
*conserver* ind-7. *témoignage* m.

‡ EXERCISE.

You know too well the value of time, to make  
*connaître* *prix* m. art. *pour que être* 2  
 it necessary to tell you to (make a good use of) it. Study only  
*il* 1 *de* *de* *bien employer*  
 great models, lest those which are but middling  
 art. *de peur que* \* *médiocre* *ne*  
 should spoil your taste, before it be entirely formed. I  
*gâter* subj-1  
 (make not the least doubt) that your method will succeed,  
*ne douter nullement* f. *ne* \* *subj-1*  
 provided it be well known. Several phenomena of nature are  
 f. art.  
 easy (to be explained,) supposing the principle of universal  
 (by the active) art. 2  
 gravitation to be true.  
 f. 1 \*

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE NINE PARTS OF SPEECH.

THE GOOD MOTHER.

What a fine morning! said the amiable Charlotte to her  
*matinée* f. ind-3  
 brother George. Come, let us go into the garden and enjoy  
 sing. \* inf-1  
 the magnificent sight of rich and abundant nature.  
*de* 2 *spectacle* m. 1 *une* 2 *fertile* 3 1  
 We will gather there the freshest and sweetest flowers.  
*cueillir* y *fraîs* 2 art. adv. *odorant* 3 f. pl. 1

We will make a nosegay, which we will offer to mamma. You  
*know* she loves flowers. This attention will give her plea-  
*savoir que* art. *faire lui*  
 sure. Ah! brother, it will obtain us a smile, a caress, perhaps  
*mon* f. *valoir* *sourire* m. f.  
 even a kiss. Ah! sister, replied George, your pro-  
*baiser* m. *ma* *répondre* ind-3 sing. *pro-*  
 posal delights me; let us run, let us fly, that we may offer  
*jet* *enchanter* *courir* *voler afin de* \* \*  
 her (when she rises) this tribute of our gratitude and our love.  
*lui* *à son lever* *hommage* — pr.  
 Full of this idea, Charlotte and George hastened  
*plein* *se hâter* ind-3 *de se rendre*  
 into the garden. Charlotte gathered violets, jessamine,  
 ind-3 *de art.* pr. art.  
 and young rose-buds, which (had but just begun)  
 pr. *de* 2 *bouton* m. 1 *ne commencer que* ind-2  
 to open their purple cups, while George prepared  
*entr'ouvrir* *de pourpre* 2 *calice* 1 ind-2  
 green sprigs of myrtle and thyme, intended  
*de art.* *verdoyant* 2 *jet* m. 1 *myrte* pr. *thym* *destiné*  
 to support the flowers. Never had these amiable children  
*soutenir* 1 ind-2 3 2  
 worked with (so much) zeal and ardour. Satisfaction and  
*travailler* *tant de zèle* pr. art. f. art.  
 pleasure beamed in all their features, sparkled in their  
 m. *être* ind-2 *peint* *trait* m. *pétiller*  
 eyes, and added still to their beauty.

While they (were employing themselves) (in this manner,)  
*s'occuper* ind-2 *ainsi*  
 their mother, who had seen them in the garden, came to join  
 ind-3 \* *joindre*  
 them. (As soon as) they perceived her, they flew to her, and  
*dès que* ind-3 ind-3 *elle*  
 said: Ah! mamma, how glad we are to see you! how  
*lui* *que aise* 3 1 2 *de*  
 impatient we were) for this pleasure! In the  
*qu'il tardait à notre impatience d'avoir* *ce*  
 pleasing expectation (of it) we (were preparing) this nosegay for  
*doux attente* f. \* ind-2  
 you. What satisfaction should we have had in presenting  
 f. *ne* *pas à offrir*  
 it to you! Look at these rose-buds, these violets, this jessamine,  
*voir* \*  
 this myrtle, and this thyme. Well, we designed them for you.  
*Eh! bien, destiner* ind-2 \*

These flowers, coming from us, would have been dear to you.

When you wore <sup>cher</sup> them, you would have said: My children  
*En* \* *porter* inf-3  
 (were thinking) of me whilst I slept. I am always as  
*s'occuper* ind-2 *dormir* ind-2  
 present to their minds as to their hearts. They love me, and it  
 sing. sing. *ce*  
 is by giving me every day new proofs of their affection,  
*en* art. pl. *de* *preuve* f.  
 that they acknowledge the care I have taken of them  
*reconnaître* *soin* m. pl. *que*  
 in their childhood, and all the marks of tenderness I am un-  
*que* *ne*  
 ceasingly giving them.  
*cesser* *de* inf-1 *leur*.

My dear children, replied the mother, embracing  
*répondre* ind-3 *en embrasser*  
 them, how charming you render all my days! your grati-  
*quel charme* *répandre* sur \*  
 tude, your tenderness, your attention to me, make me forget  
 pl. *pour* *oublier*  
 my former misfortunes, and yield my heart again to the soft  
*ancien malheur* m. *rouvrir*  
 impressions of pleasure. May Heaven continue  
 f. art. *Pouvoir* subj-1 art. *continuer*  
 to bless my labour! May it be your guide and your support  
*de* *soin* *Pouvoir* — *soutien*  
 in the career which (will soon be opened) to you! may it  
*carrière* f. *aller* ind-1 *s'ouvrir* *devant*  
 complete its kindness by preserving you from the  
*mettre le comble à* *bienfait* pl. *en garantir* inf-3 *de*  
 dangers to which you cannot fail to be soon exposed!

\* *ne pas tarder* ind-7 \*  
 Alas! I shudder (at them) beforehand, my dear children; the  
*frémir* *en* *d'avance*  
 moment is come when you must enter the world. Your  
*où* *devoir* *dans*  
 persons, your birth, and your fortune, call you there, and  
*figure* sing. *naissance* *appeler* *y*  
 ensure you a distinguished rank (in it); I cannot always be your  
*assurer* 2 m. l. *y* ind-7  
 guide. Young and inexperienced, you will find yourselves  
*sans expérience* *aller* ind-1 inf-1  
 surrounded by every kind of temptation. (Every thing,)  
*entouré* *sorte* f. *séduction*. *Tout*  
 even — vice, presents itself there under an agreeable  
*jusque à* art. m. *offrir* *y* *sous* \* *de* art. 2

form, and almost always in the shape of pleasure, which has  
 pl. 1 *sous image* art.  
 (so many) attractions for youth. They will try to  
*tant de attrait f.* art. *jeunesse f.* On *chercher*  
 mislead you, to corrupt you; they (will make use of) artifice,  
*égarer* *employer* art.  
 raillery, and even ridicule, and, if necessary, they  
 art. = *même* art. — *il est*  
 will assume even the mask of virtue. If you abandon  
*prendre jusque à masque m.* art. *se laisser*  
 yourselves to first impressions, you are lost. The poison of  
*aller* art.  
 example will insinuate itself into your hearts, will corrupt the  
*se glisser* *altérer*  
 innocence and purity (of them,) and will substitute violent  
*en* *de* art. *déchirant* 2  
 passions for the mild affections which have hitherto formed your  
 f. pl. 1 *à doux* *faire*  
 happiness.

Do not imagine, my dear children, that in placing before your  
*croire* *en mettre sous*  
 eyes a picture of the dangers of the world, my intention  
 art. *tableau m.*  
 is to prohibit you every kind of pleasure. God forbid.  
 subj-1 *de interdire* *espèce f.* *à ne plaire*  
 Pleasure is necessary to man; without it, our ex-  
 subj-1 art. art. *lui*  
 istence would be dreadful; (and therefore) Providence, ever  
*affreux* *aussi* art. f.  
 attentive to our wants, has multiplied the sources of it, both  
*besoin* *-t-elle*  
 in and out of ourselves. But, in tasting the pleasures of  
*en nous* *nous* *en goûter*  
 the world, never (abandon yourselves) (to them.) Take care  
*se livrer* *y* *Avoir*  
 that they do not govern you: know how to quit them the mo-  
*dominer* *savoir* \* \* *de*  
 ment they have acquired (too much) sway over you. It is  
*que* *prendre* ind-7 *trop de* *empire* *Ce*  
 the only way to enjoy with delight that exquisite pleasure  
*moyen de* *volupté de* *délicieux* 2 1  
 which we can only find in ourselves, and which has its source  
*en*  
 in an upright and pure conscience. Ah! why cannot I give  
*dans* *droit* 2 3 f. 1 *que*  
 you all my experience? Why cannot you, like me, read the  
*dans*



depths of the heart? With what astonishment would you often  
*abîme* sing. pl.  
 see *chagrin*, agitation, and trouble, disguised under the  
 art. —m. art. art. —m. *déguisé* sous  
 appearance of joy and tranquillity; hatred and  
*apparence* pl. art. pr. art. *calme* art. f. art.  
 envy concealed under the air of confidence and friend-  
 f. *caché* art. *confiance* f. pr. art.  
 ship; indifference and selfishness, affecting the most lively  
 art. *égoïsme* *vif*  
 interest; the most dreadful and perfidious plots  
 2 art. adv. 3 *trame* f. pl. 1  
 contrived deliberately in the dark; in a word, the most  
*ourdi* *de sang froid et* *ténèbres* f. pl. *en*  
 odious vices endeavouring to show themselves under the  
 2 art. 1 *s'efforcer* *de*  
 features of (their opposite) virtues! In the world there  
*traits* *qui leur être opposé* 2 art. 1  
 is but one (moving principle;) that is, self-interest. To  
*ne que* *seul mobile* m. *ce* art. *personnel* 2 1 *C'est à*  
 that every action refers, every thing tends to that as  
*lui que* art. pl. *se rapporter* *lui*  
 to its end. I know very well, my dear children, that your  
*fin* f. *savoir*  
 hearts will not be infected by this vice. The sentiments of  
*de*  
 universal benevolence with which I (have always)  
 2 *bienveillance* 1 \* *ne point cesser* ind-4 *de*  
 inspired you, and of which I have seen you give (so many)  
 inf-1 *tant de*  
 proofs, (remove already every fear) (I might have) upon that  
*preuve* *rassurer d'avance* *me* *sur*  
 subject: but will you not yield to other vices not less danger-  
*point* m. *de* *non*  
 ous? Cruel idea! terrible uncertainty! If this misfortune  
 f. *affreux* f.  
 were to happen, ah! my dear children, instead of being  
 \* \* *arriver* ind-2  
 the joy and consolation of my life, you would be the torment,  
 art. f.  
 the shame, and the disgrace (of it.) You would poison my  
*honte* f. *opprobre* *en* *empoisonner*  
 days, and you would plunge a dagger into the very bosom  
*porter* art. *mort* f. *même* 2 *sein* m. 1  
 which gave you life. But whither is my tenderness for you  
 ind-3 art. *où* \*  
 hurrying me? No, my children, no, I have nothing to fear;  
*emporter* *Non*

## PART III.

## IDIOMS,

OR

## WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES.

## CHAP. I.

## OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

The substantive performs *three* functions in language, that of the subject, the regimen, or the apostrophe.

The substantive is the *subject*, whenever it is that of which something is affirmed. When we say, *l'oiseau vole*, the bird flies; *le lion ne vole pas*, the lion does not fly; the substantives *oiseau* and *lion* are subjects; because it is affirmed of the first that it flies, and of the second that it does not fly.

It is to the substantive as the subject that every thing relates in a sentence. In the following, *un homme juste*

---

you love me (too much) to wish to afflict me so cruelly; and  
*trop pour vouloir \**  
 I shall have the pleasure, (as long as) I live, of seeing you walk  
*tant que ind-7*  
 in the ways of honour and virtue.  
*sentier art. pr. art.*

---

## EXERCISE ON THE SUBSTANTIVE.

1. A *king*, who is inaccessible to men, is inaccessible to truth also, and passes his life in a ferocious 2 inhuman 3 grandeur 1: as he is continually afraid of being deceived, he always 2 unavoidably 3 is 1 and deserves to be so; besides, he is at the mercy of slanderers and tale-bearers, a base 2 malicious 3 tribe, 1 who feed on venom, and invent mischief rather than cease to injure.

2. The *good* which a man does, is never lost; if men forget it, *God* remembers and rewards it.

(1.) *Is inaccessible also*, l'est aussi; *ferocious*, sauvage; *inhuman*, et farouche; *as he is afraid*, craignant; *is*, l'est; *to be so*, de l'être; *besides*, de plus; *tail-bearers*, rapporteur; *tribe*, nation; *feed upon*, se nourrir de; *mischief*, mal; *to injure*, de nuire.

(2.) *Good*, bien; *a man*, on; *remember*, s'en souvenir.

*et ferme n'est ébranlé, ni par les clameurs d'une populace injuste, ni par les menaces d'un fier tyran; quand même le monde brisé s'écroulerait, il en serait frappé, mais non pas ému*, the adjectives *juste* and *ferme* modify the subject *homme*, and all the rest modify *un homme juste et ferme*.

The substantive is the *regimen*, when governed, either by another substantive, by an adjective, by a verb, or by a preposition, as,

*la loi de Dieu*, the law of God. *aimer son prochain*, to love one's neighbour.  
*utile à l'homme*, useful to man. *chez son père*, at his father's.

In French, a substantive cannot be governed by another substantive, but by the help of a preposition; such as *de*, as, *la difficulté de l'entreprise*, the difficulty of the undertaking; or *à*, or *pour*, as, *l'abandon à ses passions*, the giving way to one's passions; *le goût pour le plaisir*, the love of pleasure.

GENERAL RULE. When two substantives are found together, the one *governing*, the other *governed*, the former is generally placed first.

#### EXAMPLE.

*La beauté des sentimens, la violence des passions, la grandeur des événemens et les succès miraculeux des grandes épées des héros, tout cela m'entraîne comme une petite fille.*—Sévigné. The beauty of sentiments, the violence of passions, the grandeur of events, and the prodigious successes of the huge swords of heroes, all these transport me like a little girl.

REMARK. This order is not followed—1. When, in English, two substantives are joined by an *s* and an apostrophe, placed after the first, thus, *'s*, as, the *king's palace*. 2. When the two English substantives form a compound word, as, *silk-stockings*. ¶

#### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. *The silence* of the night, *the calmness* of the sea, *the trembling* 2 *light* 1 of the moon diffused over the surface of the

(1.) *Trembling*, tremblant; *diffused*, répandu; *dim*, sombre; *bespangled*, parsemé; *with*, de; *heighten*, rehausser; *scene*, spectacle.

The substantive is an *apostrophe*, whenever it is the object addressed; as, *rois, peuples, terre, mer, et vous, cieux, écoutez-moi!* In this sentence, the substantives *rois, peuples, terre, mer, and cieux*, form an *apostrophe*.

N.B. It is only in highly oratorical language, that the address is thus directed to inanimate, or absent objects.†

water, and *the dim azure* of the sky bespangled with glittering 2 stars 1, served to heighten the beauty of the scene.

2. Nothing was heard but *the warbling* of birds, or *the soft breath* of the zephyrs sporting in *the branches* of the trees, or *the murmurs* of a lucid rill falling from the rocks, or *the songs* of the young swains who attended Apollo.

3. A smiling boy was, at the same time, caressing a lap-dog, which is his *mother's favourite*, because it pleases the child.

4. There are several *gold and silver mines* in this beautiful country; but the inhabitants, simple, and happy in their simplicity, do not even deign to \* reckon gold and silver among their riches.

(2.) *Nothing but*, on ne plus que; *breath*, haleine; *sporting*, qui se jouer, ind-3; *branches*, rameaux; *lucid rill*, eau claire; *falling*, (which fell;) *swains*, berger; *attended*, suivre, ind-2.

(3.) *Smiling boy*, enfant d'un air riant; *was caressing*, caresser, ind-2; *lap-dog*, bichon; *pleases*, amuser.

(4.) *Reckon*, compter

#### † EXAMPLE OF A BEAUTIFUL APOSTROPHE.

O Hippias! Hippias! I shall never see thee again!\* O my dear Hippias! it is I, cruel and \* void of compassion, who taught thee to despise death. Cruel Gods! ye prolonged my life, only that I might see the death of Hippias! O my dear child, whom I had brought up with so much care, I shall see thee no more. O dear shade, summon me to the banks of the Styx, the light grows hateful to me; it is thou only, my dear Hippias, whom I wish to see again. Hippias! Hippias! O my dear Hippias! I live but to pay the last duty to thy ashes.

*Never*, ne plus; *void of compassion*, moi impitoyable; *taught*, apprendre, ind-1; *prolonged*, prolonger, ind-1; *only that I might*, pour me faire; *brought up*, nourrir, ind-4; *with so much care*, et qui me coûter, ind-4, tant de soins; *shade*, ombre; *summon*, appeler; *to*, sur; *banks*, rive; *grows hateful*, être odieux; *I live but to*, ne vivre encore que pour; *pay*, rendre; *ashes*, cendre.



## CHAP. II.

## OF THE ARTICLE.

**GENERAL PRINCIPLE.** The article is to be used before all substantives common, taken in a determinate sense, *unless there be another word performing the same office*; but it is not to be used before those that are taken in an indeterminate sense.

## CASES IN WHICH THE ARTICLE IS TO BE USED.

**RULE I.** The article necessarily accompanies all substantives common, which denote a whole species of things, or determinate things.

## EXAMPLES.

L'homme <i>se repaît trop souvent de chimères,</i>	Man too often feeds on chimeras.
Les hommes <i>à imagination sont toujours malheureux,</i>	Men of fanciful dispositions are always unhappy.
L'homme <i>dont vous parlez est très-instruit,</i>	The man you speak of is very learned.

In the first example, the word *homme* is taken in its fullest sense; it denotes a collective universality. In the second, *les hommes à imagination*, denotes a particular class only. In the third, *l'homme* denotes but one individual, being restricted by the incidental proposition, *dont vous parlez*.

**REMARK.** In English, the article is not used before substantives taken in a general sense, as, *Men of genius*, *women of sound understanding*.‡

## ‡ EXERCISE ON THE ARTICLE.

1. The moment *elegance*, the most visible image of fine *taste*, appears, it is universally admired: *men* differ respecting the other constituent parts of \* *beauty*, but they all unite without hesitation in acknowledging the power of *elegance*.

2. *Men of superior genius* 2, while 1 they \* see 3 the rest of

(1.) *The moment*, du moment que; *fine*, délicat; *appears*, se montrer; *is*, elle est; *respecting*, sur; *constituent*, (which constitute;) *hésitation*, hésiter; *in*, pour.

(2.) *While*, tandis que; *struggling*, se tourmenter; *obvious*, qui s'offrent d'elle mêmes; *glance*, ils pénètrent en un instant; *lightning*, foudre, f.; *through*, traverse; *track*, espace; *that*, qu'on; *be measured*, mesurer.

**RULE II.** The article is put before substantives employed in the sense of an extract, or denoting only a part of a species; but it is omitted, if they be preceded by an adjective, or a word of quantity.

**EXAMPLES.**

Du pain <i>et</i> de l'eau <i>me feraient</i>	Some bread and water would
<i>plaisir,</i>	please me.
<i>Je vis hier</i> des savans <i>qui ne pensent pas comme vous,</i>	I yesterday saw some learned men, who do not think as you do.
<i>Voilà</i> de beaux tableaux,	There are beautiful pictures.
<i>J'achetai hier</i> beaucoup de livres,	I bought yesterday many books.
<i>Que</i> de livres <i>j'achetai hier!</i>	How many books I bought yesterday!

**REMARK.** Among the words of quantity must be reckoned *plus, moins, pas, point, and jamais.*

**EXAMPLES.**

<i>Il n'y eut jamais plus de lumières,</i>	There never was more learning.
<i>Il y a moins d'habitans à Paris qu'à Londres,</i>	There are fewer inhabitants in Paris than in London.
<i>Je ne manque pas d'amis,</i>	I do not want for friends.

**EXCEPTIONS.** *Bien* is the only word of quantity which is followed by the article.

**EXAMPLES.**

<i>Il a bien de l'esprit,</i>	He has a great deal of wit.
<i>Elle a bien de la grâce,</i>	She is very graceful.

**REMARK.** The sense of extract is marked in English by the word *some*, or *any*, either expressed or understood, which answers to *quelques*, a particular adjective, and consequently to *du, de la, de l', des*, which are elegantly used instead of *quelque, quelques*,

---

mankind painfully \* struggling to comprehend obvious 2 truths 1, glance themselves \* through \* the most remote 2 consequences 1, like lightning through a track that cannot be measured.

3. *The man who lives* under an habitual 2 sense 1 of the divine 2 presence 1, preserves a perpetual cheerfulness of temper, and enjoys, every moment, the satisfaction of thinking himself \* in company with the dearest and best of friends.

(3.) *Under*, dans; *sense*, conviction; *preserves*, conserver; *perpetual*, constant; *cheerfulness*, gaité; *temper*, caractère; *enjoys*, jouir de; *of thinking*, se croire; *in*, dans, art.; *with*, de.

These expressions: *des petits-maîtres, des sages-femmes, des petits-pâtés, &c.* are not exceptions to this rule, because, in cases of this kind, the substantives are so united with the adjectives, as to form but one and the same word. We should likewise say; *le propre des belles actions, les sentimens des anciens philosophes, &c.*; because, in expressions of this kind, the substantives are taken in a general sense. ¶

### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. We could not cast our eyes on either shore, without seeing *opulent cities, country houses agreeably situated, lands yearly 2 covered 1 with a golden 2 harvest 1, meadows abounding in flocks and herds, husbandmen bending under the weight of the fruits, and shepherds who made 1 the echoes 5 around them 6 repeat 2 the sweet sounds 3 of their pipes and flutes 4.*

2. Provence and Languedoc produce *oranges, lemons, figs, olives, almonds, chestnuts, peaches, apricots, and grapes of an uncommon sweetness.*

3. The man who has never seen this pure light, is as \*blind as one who is born blind: he dies without having seen any thing; at most, he perceives nothing but *glimmering and false lights, vain shadows and phantoms* that have no reality.

4. Among the Romans, those who were convicted of having used *illicit or unworthy means* to obtain an employ, were excluded from it for ever.

5. Those who govern are like the celestial 2 bodies 1, which have *great splendour and no rest.*

6. *What beauty, sweetness, modesty, and at the same time what nobleness and greatness of soul!*

7. Themistocles, in order to ruin Aristides, made use of *many artifices*, which would have covered him with infamy in the eyes of posterity, had 1 not 4 the eminent services 2 which he rendered his country 3 blotted out 5 that stain.

(1.) *Could, pouvoir, ind-2; our, art.; either, les deux; seeing, apercevoir: yearly, tous les ans; covered with, qui se couvrir de, ind-2; abounding in, remplis de; flocks and herds, troupeau; bending, qui étaient accablés; weight, poids; shepherds, bergers; pipes, chalumeau; the echoes, aux échos; around them, d'alentour.*

(3.) *Who is born blind, aveugle-né; without having, n'avoir jamais, inf-3; any thing, rien; at most, tout au plus; perceives nothing from, apercevoir ne que; glimmering, sombre; lights, lueur; no reality, rien de réel.*

(4.) *Used, employer; illicit or unworthy means, moyen illicite, on voie indigne, pl.; were, ind-2; from it, en.*

(5.) *Great, beaucoup de; splendour, éclat; no rest, (that have no rest) repos.*

(6.) *What, que de. (7.) Ruin, perdre; made use of many, employer bien; artifices, manœuvres; covered, cond-3; with, de; infamy, opprobre; in, à; had, si; rendered, ind-3, à; blotted out, effacer, cond-3: stain, tache,*

RULE III. The article is put before proper names of countries, regions, rivers, winds, and mountains.

#### EXAMPLES.

*La France a les Pyrénées et la Méditerranée au sud, la Suisse et la Savoie à l'est, les Pays-Bas au nord, et l'océan à l'ouest.* France is bounded on the south by the Pyrenees and the Mediterranean, on the east by Switzerland and Savoy, on the north by the Netherlands, and on the west by the ocean.

*La Tamise, le Rhône, l'aquilon, les Alpes, le Cantal,* The Thames, the Rhone, the north wind, the Alps, the Cantal.

REM. By apposition we find the words: *le mont Parnasse, le mont Valérien, &c. le fleuve Don, &c.* But, we should say, *la montagne de Tarare, &c. la rivière de Seine, &c.* though never, *le fleuve du Rhône,* but simply, *le Rhône.*†

8. The consequences of great passions are blindness of mind and depravity of heart.

9. Noblemen should never forget that their high birth imposes great duties on \* them.

(8.) Of mind, of heart, de, art.

(9.) Noblemen, gentilhomme; should, devoir, ind-1.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. *Europe* is bounded on the north by the Frozen Ocean; on the south by the Mediterranean Sea, which separates it from *Africa*; on the east by the continent of *Asia*; on the west by the Atlantic Ocean. It contains the following 2 states 1: on the north, *Norway, Sweden, Denmark, and Russia*; in the middle, *Poland, Prussia, Germany, the United Provinces, the Netherlands, France, Switzerland, Bohemia, Hungary, the British Isles*; on the South, *Spain, Portugal, Italy, Turkey in Europe.*

2. The principal rivers in Europe, are, the *Volga*, the *Don* or *Tanaïs*, and the *Boristhenes*, or *Nieper*, in Muscovy; the *Danube*,

(1.) Bounded, borné; on, à; frozen ocean, mer glacial, f.; south, sud or midi; Mediterranean sea, Méditerranée, f.; east, est or orient; west, ouest or occident; Norway, &c., SEE P. 70.; British Isles, îles Britanniques; Turkey in, Turquie de.

(2.) Muscovy, Moscovie; Vistula, Vistule, f.; Loire, f.; Seine, f.; Rhône, m.; Garonne, f.; Ebro, Ebre; Tagus, Tage, m.; Thames, Tamise, f.; Severn, Saverne, f.



EXCEPTIONS. The article is not used before the names of countries:

1. When those countries have the names of their capitals, as *Naples est un pays délicieux*, Naples is a delightful country.

2. When these are governed by the preposition *en*, as, *il est en France*, he is in France; *il est en Espagne*, he is in Spain.

3. When those names are governed by some preceding noun, and have the sense of an adjective, as, *vins de France*, French wines; *noblesse d'Angleterre*, the English nobility.

4. When speaking of those countries as of places we come from, as, *je viens de France*, I come from France; *j'arrive d'Italie*, I am just arrived from Italy. However, when speaking of the four parts of the world, the present practice favours the use of the article, as, *je viens de l'Amérique*, *j'arrive de l'Asie*.†

the *Rhine*, and the *Elbe*, in Germany; the *Vistula*, or *Wezel*, in Poland; the *Loire*, the *Seine*, the *Rhone*, and the *Garonne*, in France; the *Ebro*, the *Tagus*, and the *Douro*, in Spain; the *Po*, in Italy; the *Thames*, and the *Severn*, in England; and the *Shannon*, in Ireland.

3. The principal mountains in Europe, are the *Daarne Fields*, between Norway and Sweden; *Mount Crapel*, between Poland and Hungary; the *Pyrenean Mountains*, between France and Spain; the *Alps*, which divide France and Germany from Italy.

4. The bleak *north wind* never blows here, and the heat of summer is tempered by the cooling 2 *zephyrs* 1, which arrive to refresh the air towards the middle of the day.

(3.) *Pyrenean Mountains*, Pyrénées.

(4.) *Bleak*; rigoureux; *north wind*, aquilon; *heat*, ardeur; *cooling*, rafraîchissant; *arrive*, venir; *to refresh*, adoucir.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. *Naples* may be called a paradise, from its beauty and fertility. From this country 2 some suppose 1 Virgil took the model of the Elysian 2 Fields 1.

2. I have been a \* prisoner *in Egypt*, as a \* Phœnician;

(1.) *From*, à cause de; *from this country*, que c'est là, où; *some suppose*, quelques personnes penser.

(2.) *Prisoner*, captif; *under that name*, c'est sous ce nom que (both alike.)

The article is also used before the names of countries, either distant, or little known, *la Chine*, China: *le Japon*, Japan; *le Mexique*, Mexico; and before those which have been formed from common nouns: *le Hâvre*, *le Perche*, *la Flèche*, &c.

REMARK. In English, the article is generally omitted before the names of countries.

#### CASES IN WHICH THE ARTICLE IS NOT USED.

RULE I. The article is omitted before nouns common, when, in using them, nothing is said as to the extent of their signification.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>Le sage n'a ni amour ni haine,</i>	The wise man has neither love nor hatred.
<i>Ils ont renversé religion, morale, gouvernement, sciences, beaux-arts, en un mot, tout ce qui fait la gloire et la force d'un Etat,</i>	They have overturned religion, morality, government, sciences, fine arts, in a word, every thing which constitutes the glory and strength of a state.

Hence the article is not employed before nouns.

1. When they are in the form of a title, or an address.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>Préface,</i>	Preface.	<i>Il demeure</i>	He lives in
<i>Livre premier,</i>	Book the 1st.	<i>Rue Piccadilly,</i>	Piccadilly,
<i>Chapitre dix,</i>	Chap. the 10th.	<i>Quartier St. James,</i>	St. James's.

2. When they are governed by the preposition *en*.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Regarder en pitié*, to look with pity. *Vivre en Roi*, to live as a king.

under that name I have long suffered, and under that name I have been set at liberty.

3. *He* has received French and Spanish wines, Italian silks, Provence oil, and English wool.

4. We set sail *from Holland* for the Cape of Good Hope.

5. I was but just arrived *from Russia*, when I had the misfortune to lose my father.

6. I had set off *from America*, when my brother arrived there.

(4.) *Set sail*, partir; *for*, pour se rendre.

(5.) *I was but just*, ne faire que de.

(6.) *Set off*, partir; *there*, y.

3. When they are joined to the verbs *avoir*, or *faire*, with which they form only one idea.

## EXAMPLES.

*Avoir peur*, To be afraid. *Faire pitié*, To excite pity.

4. When they are used as an apostrophe, or interjection.

## EXAMPLE.

*Courage, soldats, tenez ferme*, Courage, soldiers, stand firm.

5. When they serve to qualify a noun, or pronoun.

## EXAMPLES.

*Il est quelquefois plus qu'homme*, He is sometimes more than man.

*Son Altesse Royale le Duc d'York, Prince du sang, &c.* His Royal highness the Duke of York, Prince of the blood.

6. The article is not put before the substantive beginning an incidental sentence, which is opposed to what has been said.

## EXAMPLES.

*Tous les peuples de la terre ont une idée plus ou moins développée d'un Être-Suprême; preuve évidente que le péché originel n'a pas tout-à-fait obscurci l'entendement.* All the nations of the earth have an idea more or less clear of a Supreme Being; an evident proof that original sin has not totally obscured the understanding.

7. When they are governed by the words *genre*, *espèce*, *sorte*, or terms of this kind.

## ¶ EXERCISE.

1. The highways are bordered with *laurels*, *pomegranates*, *jessamines*, and *other trees* which \* are \* always green, and always in bloom. The mountains are covered with *flocks*, which yield a fine wool, in great request among all the known 2 nations 1 (of the world.\*)

2. The fleets of Solomon, under the conduct of the Phœnicians, made frequent voyages to the land of Ophir and Tharsis, (of the kingdom of Sophala, in Ethiopia,) whence they returned at the end of three years, laden with *gold*, *silver*, *ivory*, *precious stones* 1, and other kinds of *merchandise*.

3. *Costly furniture* 2 is not allowed there 1, nor *magnificent attire*, nor *sumptuous feasts*, nor *gilded palaces*.

(1.) *Highways*, chemin; *with*, de; *pomegranates*, grenadier; *in bloom*, fleuri; *yield*, fournir; *wool*, laine, pl.; *in great request*, recherché; *among*, de.

(2.) *Made*, ind-2; *end*, bout; *laden*, chargé.

(3.) *Is not allowed there*, on n'y souffre ni; *furniture*, meuble; *costly*, précieux; *attire*, ornement; *feasts*, repas.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Sorte de fruit,</i>	A sort of fruit.	<i>Bande de voleurs,</i>	A troop of robbers.
<i>Genre d'ouvrage,</i>	A kind of work.	<i>Pile de livres,</i>	A pile of books.
<i>Monceau d'argent,</i> †	A heap of money.	<i>Meute de chiens,</i> &c.	A pack of dogs.

RULE II. The article is not used, either before nouns preceded by the pronominal adjectives *mon, ton, son, notre, votre, leur, ce, nul, aucun, chaque, tout*, (used for *chaque*,) *certain, plusieurs, tel*, or before those which are preceded by a cardinal number without any relation whatever.

## EXAMPLES.

Nos mœurs mettent le prix à nos richesses,	Our manners fix the value of our riches.
Toute nation a ses lois,	Each nation has its laws.
Cent ignorans, doivent-ils l'emporter sur un homme instruit?	Are a hundred blockheads to be preferred to one learned man?

4. We contemplated with pleasure the extensive fields covered with yellow ears of corn, the \* *rich gifts* of bounteous Ceres.

5. He was *in a kind of ecstasy*, when he perceived us.

6. In the most corrupt age, he lived and died *a wise man*.\*

7. Are you surprised that the worthiest 2 men 1 are *but men*, and betray remains of the weakness of humanity, amid the innumerable 2 snares 1 and difficulties which \* are \* inseparable from royalty?

8. *He excited our pity*, when we saw him after his disgrace.

9. Hear then, *O nations* full of valour! and you, *O chiefs*, so wise and so united! hear what I have \* to \* offer to you.

10. Out of this cavern issued, from time to time, a black 2 thick 3 smoke 1, which made *a sort of night* at mid-day.

## † EXERCISE.

1. *That good father* was happy in his children, and his children were happy in him.

(4.) *Extensive*, vaste; *fields*, campagne; *ears*, épi; *bounteous*, fécond.

(5.) *In a kind of*, comme en. — (6.) *Age*, siècle.

(7.) *That*, de ce que; *worthy*, estimable; *but*, encore; *betray*, montrer; *remains*, reste; *snares*, piège; *difficulties*, embarras.

(8.) *He excited our pity*, il nous fit pitié. — (9.) *Hear*, écouter.

(10.) *Out of*, de; *issued*, sortir; *thick*, et épais; *smoke*, fumée; *mid-day*, milieu du jour.



RULE III. Proper names of deities, men, animals, towns, and particular places, do not take the article.

## EXAMPLES.

Dieu a créé le ciel et la terre,	God has made heaven and earth.
Jupiter était le premier des dieux,	Jupiter was the first of the gods.
Bucéphale était le cheval d'Alexandre,	Bucephalus was Alexander's horse.
Rome est une ville d'une grande beauté,	Rome is a city of great beauty.

EXCEPTIONS. Proper names, however, take the article, when used in a limited sense.

## EXAMPLES.

Le Dieu des Chrétiens,	The God of Christians.	Le Bucéphale, d'Alexandre,	Alexander's Bucephalus.
Le Dieu de paix,	The God of peace.	L'Ancienne Rome,	Ancient Rome.
Le Jupiter d'Homère	Homer's Jupiter.	La Rome Moderne,	Modern Rome.

N. B. In imitation of the Italians, the French use the article before the names of several painters and poets of that nation, by an elliptical mode of expression, the words *peintre*, *poète*, or *seigneur*, being understood.†

2. *Those imitative 2 sounds* 1 are common to all languages, and form, as it were, their \* real basis.

3. *Every man* has his foibles, his moments of ill \* humour, even his irregularities.

4. *Each plant* has virtues peculiar to it, the knowledge 2 of which 1 could not but be infinitely useful.

5. *In all his instructions*, he is careful to remember that grammar, logic, and rhetoric, are three sisters, that ought never to be disjoined.

(2.) *Common*, fondu ; *to*, dans ; *and form as it were*, et ils en sont comme ; *real*, fondamentale.

(4.) *Peculiar*, qui sont propres ; *to it*, lui ; *could*, cond-1 ; *not but*, ne que.

(5.) *He is careful to remember*, ne point perdre de vue ; *ought*, on devoir, ind-1 ; *to be disjoined*, séparer.

## † EXERCISE.

1. *Jupiter*, son of *Saturn* and *Cybele*, or *Ops*, after having ex-

(1.) *Expelled*, chasser ; *divided*, en partager ; *inheritance*, héritage

## CHAP. III.

## OF THE ADJECTIVE.\*

## I.

## OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE ARTICLE.

**RULE I.** Adjectives used substantively, are like substantives common, accompanied by the article, if the occasion require it.

## EXAMPLE.

Les fous *inventent les modes*, et Fools invent fashions, and wise  
les sages *s'y conforment*, ¶ men conform to them.

pelled his father from the throne, divided the paternal \* inheritance with his two brothers, *Neptune* and *Pluto*.

2. On a dispute at a feast of the gods, between *Juno*, *Pallas*, and *Venus*, for the pre-eminence of beauty, *Jupiter*, not being able to bring them to an agreement, referred the decision to *Paris*, a shepherd of Mount Ida, with directions that a golden apple should be given to the fairest. *Paris* assigned to *Venus* 2 the golden \* prize 1.

3. *God* said : let there \* be 2 light 1, and there \* was 2 light 1.

4. *The Apollo di Belvidere*, and *the Venus di Medicis*, are valuable 2 remains 1 of antiquity.

5. *May* and *September* are the two finest months in the year in the south of France.

6. *The God of Abraham*, *Isaac*, and *Jacob*, was the only true God.

(2.) *On*, dans ; *at a feast*, qu'il y eut à un festin ; *being able*, pouvoir ; *to bring to an agreement*, accorder ; *referred*, renvoyer ; *directions*, ordre ; *that a golden*, &c. *to give a golden apple to* ; *assigned*, adjuger.

(4.) *Di Belvidere*, Belvédér ; *di*, de ; *valuable*, précieux.

(6.) *Only*, seul.

## ¶ EXERCISE.

1. Were the *learned* of antiquity to come to life again, they would be much astonished at the extent of our knowledge.

2. *The ignorant* have, in a \* large stock of presumption, what they want in real knowledge, and that is the reason they are admired by *fools*.

(1.) *Were the*, si les ; *to come again*, revenir, ind-2 ; *life*, monde ; *at*, de ; *knowledge*, connaissance, pl.

(2.) *Large stock*, forte dose ; *they want*, il leur manquer ; *knowledge*, science ; *the reason*, ce qui fait que ; *they are* &c. the fools admire them.

**RULE II.** When a noun is accompanied by two adjectives, expressing *opposite* qualities, the article must be repeated before each adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Les vieux <i>et</i> les nouveaux sol-	The old and the newly raised
dats sont remplis d'ardeur,	soldiers are full of ardour.
Il faut fréquenter la bonne com-	We ought to frequent good and
pagnie <i>et</i> fuir la mauvaise,	shun bad company.

**REM.** But if those qualities be nearly similar, the article is not repeated, as, *Le sage et pieux Fénélon*;—if merely different, it is perhaps better to repeat it, as, *Le sensible et l'ingénieux Fénélon*.

**N. B.** In French the substantive must be joined to the first adjective, when governed by different words.†

**RULE III.** The article is used before the adjective which is joined to a proper name, either to express its quality, or to distinguish the person spoken of from those who might bear the same name.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Le sublime Bossuet,</i>	<i>Le vertueux Fénélon,</i>	<i>Le tendre Racine.</i>
The sublime Bossuet.	The virtuous Fénélon.	The tender Racine.
<i>Louis le Gros,</i>	<i>Louis le Juste,</i>	<i>Louis le Grand,</i>
Louis the Fat.	Louis the Just.	Louis the Great.

**REM.** If the adjective, which is joined to a proper name, precede that name, it expresses a quality, which may be common to many; if it follow, it expresses a distinguishing quality. Thus—*Le savant Varron*; and *Varron le savant*; do not convey the same meaning: in the first example, *Varron* merely obtains the quality of

† EXERCISE.

1. The *ancient* 1 and *modern* 3 writers 2 are not agreed upon that point.

2. The wise man preserves the same tranquillity of mind in *good* or *bad* fortune.

3. The man who is jealous of his reputation frequents *good* and shuns *bad* company.

4. *Grand* and *vigorous* thoughts were always the offspring of genius.

(1.) *Writers, auteur*; are agreed, s'accorder. (2.) *The wise man, le sage.*  
 (4.) *Vigorous, fort*; offspring, fruit.

*savant*; in the second, *Varron* is distinguished for his learning from all of the same name.‡

RULE IV. When a superlative relative precedes a substantive, the article serves for both; if it follow, the article must be repeated before each.

#### EXAMPLES.

Les plus habiles *gens* *font quelquefois* les plus grandes *fautes*, or  
Les *gens* les plus habiles *font quelquefois* les *fautes* les plus grandes.  
The ablest men sometimes commit the grossest blunders.¶

## II.

### THE PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

RULE I. Pronominal and numerical adjectives precede their substantive, as do generally the following sixteen, *beau, bon, brave, cher, chétif, grand, gros, jeune,*

#### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. The *great Corneille* astonishes by beauties of the first order, and by faults of the worst taste. If the *tender Racine* does not often rise so high, at least, he is always equal, and possesses the art of always interesting the heart.

2. The more we read the fables of the *good* and *artless La Fontaine*, the more we are convinced they are a book for all ages, and the manual of the man of taste.

3. It was only under the reign of *Louis the Just*, (XIII.) that good taste began to show itself in France: but it was under that of *Louis the Great* that it was carried to perfection.

- (1.) *By* par des; *order*, ordre; *is always equal*, se soutenir; *possesses*, avoir.  
(2.) *The more we*, plus on; *artless*, simple; *are convinced*, on se convaincre; *they are*, que c'est; *a*, le; *for*, de; *manual*, manuel.  
(3.) *Only*, ne que; *carried*, porter à.

#### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. It has been said of the *Telemachus* of the virtuous *Fénélon*, that it is *the most useful* 2 present 1 the *muses* have made to mankind; for, could the happiness of man be produced by a poem, it would be by that.

2. *The smoothest* 2 *waters* 1 often conceal *the most dangerous* 2 gulfs 1.

- (1.) *It has been said*, on a dit, *present*, don que; *have made*, subj-3; *could*, (if the, &c. could, ind-2;) *be produced by*, naître de; *would be*, naître, cond-1.  
(2.) *Smoothest*, tranquille.



*mauvais, méchant, meilleur, moindre, petit, saint, vieux,*  
and *vrai*, when taken in their literal sense.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Mon père,</i>	My father.	<i>Plusieurs officiers,</i>	Several officers.
<i>Quel homme,</i>	What man.	<i>Grand homme,</i>	Great man.
<i>Vieille femme,</i>	Old woman.	<i>Six arbres,</i>	Six trees.
<i>Dix guinées,</i>	10 guineas.	<i>Chétive mine,</i>	Mean look.

EXCEPTION 1. The pronoun *quelconque*.

## EXAMPLE.

*D'une manière quelconque,* In whatever manner.

2. Adjectives of number, joined to proper names, pronouns, and substantives, as quotations.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>George Trois,</i>	George III.	<i>Chapitre dix,</i>	Chapter 10th.
<i>Lui dixième,</i>	He the tenth.	<i>Page trente,</i>	Page the 30th.

3. The above sixteen adjectives, when connected by a conjunction with another adjective, which is to be placed after the substantive.

## EXERCISE ON THE PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

1. There have been ages, when a *great man* was a sort of prodigy produced by a mistake of nature.

2. In almost all nations, the *great geniuses* that have adorned them were contemporaries.

3. *Young people*, says Horace, are supple to the enticements of vice, lavish, presumptuous, and equally impetuous and light in their passions; *old people*, on the contrary, are covetous, dilatory, timid, ever alarmed about the future, always complaining, hard to please, panegyrists of times past, censors of the present, and great givers of advice.

4. *What man* was ever satisfied with his condition, and dissatisfied with his abilities?

5. *Thirty chambers* which have a communication one with another, and each of them an iron door, with six huge bolts, are the places where he shuts himself up.

(1.) *Ages*, des siècles; *when*, où; *produced*, enfanter.

(2.) *In*, chez; *nations*, peuple; *adorned*, illustrer, ind-4.

(3.) *People*, gens; *supple*, souple; *lavish*, prodigue; *impetuous*, vif; *old*, f. pl. (the following adjectives in. pl.) *covetous*, avare; *dilatory*, temporisateur; *about*, sur; *complaining*, plaintif; *hard*, difficile; *please*, contenter; *times*, sing.

(4.) *Dissatisfied*, mécontent; *abilities*, esprit.

(5.) *Have a communication*, communiquer; *each of them*, dont chacun avoir; *huge*, gros; *bolts*, verrou; *places*, lieu, sing.; *shuts himself*, se renfermer.

## EXAMPLE.

*C'est une femme grande et bien faite,* She is a tall well-made woman.

REM. In English, two, or even several adjectives, may qualify a substantive, without a conjunction: but in French, this is generally required, as, *c'est un homme aimable et poli*, he is an amiable well-behaved man; EXCEPT when custom allows the substantives to be placed between two adjectives; as, *c'est un grand homme sec*, he is a tall thin man.

RULE II. Adjectives formed from the participle present of verbs, are, generally, placed after the substantive; *ouvrage divertissant*, entertaining work; and from the participle past, always; *figure arrondie*, round figure; those expressing—form, *table ovale*, oval table;—colour, *maison blanche*, white house;—taste, *herbe amère*, bitter herb;—sound, *orgue harmonieux*, harmonious organ;—action, *procureur actif*, active attorney;—effect, *coutume abusive*, custom founded in abuse;—arrangement, *ordre grammatical*, grammatical order;—species, *qualité occulte*, occult quality;—nation, *générosité Anglaise*, English generosity;—those ending in *-esque*, *-il*, *-ule*, *-ic*, *-ique*, *-in*:

<i>Style burlesque</i> ,	Burlesque style.	<i>Bien public</i> ,	Public welfare.
<i>Jargon puéril</i> ,	Childish jargon.	<i>Ris sardonique</i> ,	Sardonic grin.
<i>Femme crédule</i> ,	Credulous woman.	<i>Voix enfantine</i> ,	Childish voice.

but in this, custom is the best guide.†

## † EXERCISE.

1. An *affected* simplicity is a *refined* imposture.
2. The *smiling* images of Theocritus, Virgil, and Gessner, *excite* in the soul a soft sensibility.
3. In that *antique* palace are to be seen neither *wreathed* columns, nor *gilded* wainscots, nor *valuable* basso-relieues, nor

(1.) *Refined*, délicat. (2.) *Smiling*, riant; *excite*, porter; *soft*, doux.  
 (3.) *Are to be seen*, on ne voit; *wreathed*, torse; *wainscots*, lambris; *basso-relieues*, bas relief; *ceilings*, plafond; *curiously*, artistement; *had existence*, exister.

RULE III. Although it may seem that adjectives expressing moral qualities are placed indifferently before or after the substantive; yet taste and a correct ear will assign them their proper situation.

In conversation, or in a broken, loose style, it may be indifferent to say *femme aimable*, or *aimable femme*; *talens sublimes*, or *sublimes talens*, &c.; but in the dignified style, the place of the adjective may, in a variety of instances, affect the beauty of a sentence.†

### III.

#### REGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES.

RULE. A noun may be governed by two adjectives, provided these do not require different regimens, as:

ceilings curiously *painted*, nor *grotesque* figures of animals, which never had existence but in the imagination of a child or a madman.

4. If *human* life is exposed to many troubles, it is also susceptible of many pleasures.

5. A *ridiculous* man is seldom so by halves.

6. *Spanish* manners have, at first sight, something harsh and uncivilized.

7. *French* urbanity has become a proverb among *foreign* nations.

(4.) *Many*, bien de ; *troubles*, peine. (5.) *So*, le ; *by halves*, à demi.

(6.) *Spanish*, Espagnol ; *manners*, mœurs ; *at first, sight* au premier abord ; *uncivilized*, sauvage.

(7.) *Become*, passer en ; *among*, chez.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. An *amiable* woman gives to every thing she says an *inexpressible* grace ; the more we hear, the more we wish to hear her.

2. The *majestic* eloquence of Bossuet is like a river, which carries away every thing in its rapid course.

3. The *sublime* compositions of Rubens have made 1 an English traveller 3 say 2, that this *famous* painter was born in Flanders, through a mistake of nature.

(1.) *Give to*, répandre sur ; *we*, on.

(2.) *River*, fleuve ; *carries away*, entraîner ; *its rapid course*, la rapidité de son cours.

(3.) *Say*, dire à ; *famous*, célèbre ; *through*, par ; *mistake*, méprise.

*Cet homme est utile et cher à sa famille*, that man is useful and dear to his family. But it would be incorrect to say: *Cet homme est utile et chéri de sa famille*, that man is useful and beloved by his family; because the adjective *utile* does not govern the preposition *de*. ¶

## IV.

## ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

*Unième* is used only after *vingt*, *trente*, *quarante*, *cinquante*, *soixante*, *quatre-vingt*, *cent*, and *mille*. *C'est la vingt-et unième fois*, it is the twenty-first time; see page 101.

*Cent*, in the plural, takes *s*, except when followed by another noun of number, as,

*Ils étaient deux cents,*

They were two hundred.

*Trois cents hommes,*

Three hundred men.

*Ils étaient deux cent dix.*

They were two hundred and ten.

*Vingt*, in *quatre-vingt*, and *six-vingt*, also takes *s*, when followed by a substantive, as,

*Quatre-vingts hommes,*

Eighty men.

*Six-vingts abricots,*

Six score apricots.

But it takes no *s*, when followed by another term expressing number, *quatre-vingt-un arbres*, *quatre-vingt-dix hommes*.

The ordinal numbers, collective and distributive, always take the sign of the plural: *les premières dou-*

## ¶ EXERCISE ON THE REGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES.

1. A young man, whose actions are all regulated by honour, and whose only aim is perfection in every thing, is *beloved* and *courted* by every body.

2. Cardinal Richelieu was all his life-time *feared* and *hated* by the great whom he had humbled.

3. A young lady, mild, polite, and delicate, who sees in the advantages of birth, riches, wit, and beauty, nothing but *incitements* to virtue, is very certain of being *beloved* and *esteemed* by every body.

(1.) *Actions are regulated by honour*, l'honneur dirige les actions; *whose only aim is*, qui ne se propose que; *courted*, recherché.

(2.) *Young lady*, demoiselle; *delicate*, décent; *nothing but*, ne que; *incitements*, encouragement; *certain*, assuré.



*zaines*, the first dozens; *les quatre cinquièmes*, the four fifths.

For dates, the French write *mil*, as *mil sept cent-quatre-vingt-dix-neuf*, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine, &c. see p. 102.

REM. *Cent* and *mille* are used indefinitely, as,

*Il lui fit cent caresses*, He showed him a hundred marks of kindness.

*Faites-lui mille amitiés de ma part*,† Present him for me a thousand compliments.

The French say, *le onze*, *du onze*, *au onze*, *sur les onze heures*, *sur les une heure*, pronouncing the words *onze* and *une*, as if they were written with an *h* aspirated.

The cardinal numbers are used for the ordinal.

1. In reckoning time, that is, the *hour* of the day, the *day* of the month, the *year* of an era, as, *il est trois heures*, it is three o'clock; *le vingt de Mars*, the twentieth of

#### † EXERCISE ON THE ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

1. It was the *thirty-first* year after so glorious a peace, when the war broke out again with a fury of which history offers few examples.

2. There were only *three hundred*, and in spite of their inferiority in numbers,\* they attacked the enemy, beat and dispersed them.

3. He has sold his country house for\* *two thousand five hundred and fifty* pounds.

4. Choose out of your nursery *eighty* fruit trees, and *ninety* dwarf-trees, divide them into dozens, and put in the two first dozens of each sort, those whose fruits are most esteemed.

5. When Louis the Fourteenth made his entry into Strasbourg, the Swiss deputies having come to pay their respects to him, Le Tellier, archbishop of Rheims, who saw among them the bishop of Basle, said to one near him: That bishop is apparently some miserable character.—How, replied the other, he has a *hundred thousand livres* a year.—Oh! oh! said the archbishop, he is then a respectable man; and showed him a thousand civilities.

(1.) *Year*, année: *when*, que; *broke out again*, se rallumer.

(2.) *Only*, ne que; *in spite of*, malgré. (3.) *Pounds*, livre sterling.

(4.) *Out of*, dans; *nursery*, pépinière; *fruit trees*, pied d'arbre fruitier; *dwarf-trees*, arbre nain.

(5.) *Swiss*, (of the Swiss;) *pay*, présenter; *respect*, hommage, pl.; *one near him*, son voisin; *that bishop*, &c. c'est un misérable apparemment que cet évêque; *a year*, de rente; *showed*, faire; *civilities*, caresse.

March; *l'an mil sept cent dix*, &c. See pages 101, 102.

3. In speaking of the order of sovereigns, as, *Louis seize*, *George trois*; except the first two of the series, as, *Henri premier*, *George Second*. *Quint* for *cing* is only said of the *Empereur Charles-quint*, and the *Pape Sixte-quint*.†

---

## CHAP. IV.

### OF THE PRONOUNS.

#### 1.

#### OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

#### I.

#### *Office of Personal Pronouns.*

The personal pronouns have the three characteristics of the substantive, that is, subject, regimen, and apostrophe; but with this difference, that some always form the subject; two only are used as an apostrophe: some always form the regimen, and lastly, others are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen.

---

#### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. They made in the parish and in the neighbouring places a collection which produced a *hundred and twenty-one* guineas.

2. William, surnamed the Conqueror, king of England, and duke of Normandy, was one of the greatest generals of the *eleventh* century; he was born at Falaise, and was the natural son of Robert, duke of Normandy, and of Arlotte, a furrier's daughter.

3. Make haste; it will soon be *ten* o'clock. We shall have a good deal of difficulty to arrive in time.

4. The winter was so severe in *one thousand seven hundred and nine*, that there was but one olive tree that resisted it,\* in a plain where there had been more than ten thousand.

5. It was the *twenty-first* of January, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-three, that the unhappy Louis *the sixteenth* was led to the scaffold.

---

(1.) *They*, on; *neighbouring places*, voisinage, sing.; *collection*, quête.

(2.) *William*, Guillaume; *furrier*, fourreur.

(3.) *Make haste*, se dépêcher; *will be*, ind-1; *a good deal of difficulty*, bien de la peine; *in*, à.

(4.) *Severe*, rude; *but*, ne que; *had been*, ind-2.

*Je, tu, il, and ils*, are always the subject; these four pronouns cannot be separated from the verb which they govern, but by personal pronouns acting as a regimen, or by the negative *ne*.

## EXAMPLES.

*Je ne lui en veux rien dire,* I will say nothing to him about it.  
*Tu en apprendras des nouvelles,* Thou wilt hear news of it.  
*Il nous raconta son histoire,* He told us his history.  
*Ils sont survenus à l'improviste,* They are come unexpectedly.

The *two* acting as an apostrophe are *toi* and *vous*, whether they stand alone, or are preceded by the interjection *ô*; as, *toi, ô toi: vous, ô vous.* ¶

*Me, te, se, leur, le, la, les, y, and en*, are always used as a regimen:—*direct*, when acted upon by the verb:—*indirect*, when referable to the prepositions *à* or *de*, (see p. 273, 274.) They always *precede* the verb, except in the imperative when affirmative; and can never

## ¶ EXERCISE ON PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. The better to bear the irksomeness of captivity and solitude, *I* sought for books; for *I* was overwhelmed with melancholy, for want of some knowledge to cherish and support my mind.

2. Since *thou* art more obdurate and unjust than thy father, mayest *thou* suffer evils more lasting and more cruel than his!

3. What! say *they*, do not men die fast enough without destroying each other? Life is so short, and yet it seems that it appears too long to *them*. Are *they* sent into the world to tear each other in pieces, and to make themselves wretched?

4. O *thou*, my son, my dear son, ease my heart: restore me what is dearer to me than my life. Restore to me my lost son, and restore thyself to thyself.

5. O *ye*, who hear me with so much attention, believe not that *I* despise men: no, no, *I* am sensible how glorious it is to toil to make them virtuous and happy; but this toil is full of anxieties and dangers.

(1.) *To bear*, supporter; *irksomeness*, ennui; *overwhelmed with*, accablé de; *for want*, faute; *to cherish*, qui pût nourrir; *support*, soutenir.

(2.) *Obdurate*, dur; *mayest*, pouvoir, subj-1; *lasting*, long.

(3.) *Die fast enough*, être assez mortel; *destroying each other*, se donner encore une mort précipitée; *sent into*, sur; *world*, terre; *tear in pieces*, se déchirer; *make themselves*, se rendre.

(4.) *Ease*, soulager; *restore*, rendre; *lost*, (whom I have lost,) perdre.

(5.) *I am sensible*, savoir; *glorious*, grand; *to toil*, travailler à; *toils*, travail; *anxiety*, inquiétude.

be separated from *it* by any other word, except *tout, rien,* and *jamais*, which may intervene before an infinitive.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>C'est leur tout refuser,</i>	It is refusing them every thing.
<i>C'est ne me rien permettre,</i>	It is allowing me nothing.
<i>Il a juré de ne lui jamais pardonner,</i>	He has sworn he would never pardon him.

*Me, te, se,* form a regimen sometimes *direct*, and sometimes *indirect*;—*direct*, when they represent *moi, toi, soi*;—*indirect*, when they supply the place of *à moi, à toi, à soi*.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Vous me soupçonnez mal à propos,</i>	You suspect me unjustly.
<i>Je t'en remercie,</i>	I thank thee for it.
<i>Il se perd de gaieté de cœur.</i>	He ruins himself out of wantonness.
<i>Vous me donnez un sage conseil,</i>	You give me prudent advice.
<i>Je te donne cela,</i>	I give thee that.
<i>Il se donne bien du mouvement,</i>	He is an active stirring man.

*Leur* is always indirect, as it stands for *à eux*, or *à elles*.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Je leur représentai le tort, qu'ils ou qu'elles se faisaient,†</i>	I represented to them the injury they did themselves.
---	---

## EXERCISE.

1. He has been speaking *to them* with such energy, as has astonished *them*.

2. Women ought to be very circumspect; for a mere appearance is sometimes more prejudicial *to them* than a real fault.

3. He comes up to me with a smiling countenance, and pressing my hand, says: My friend, I expect you to-morrow at my house.

4. He said *to me*: Wilt thou torment thyself incessantly for advantages, the enjoyment 2 of which 1 could not render *thee* more happy? Cast thy eyes round thee: see how every thing

(1.) *Such energy as*, une force qui.

(2.) *Mere*, simple; *more prejudicial*, faire plus de tort.

(3.) *Comes up—with*, aborder—de; *pressing*, serrer; *my hand*, la main; says, il me dit; *at my house*, chez moi.

(4.) *Incessantly*, sans cesse; *advantages*, des biens; *could*, savoir, cond-1; *cast*, porter; *thy*, art; *smiles*, sourire.



*Le, la, les*, are always direct; as,

<i>je le vois, je la vois,</i>	for   <i>je vois lui, je vois elle.</i>
<i>je les vois,</i>	—   <i>je vois eux, je vois elles.</i>

But *y* and *en* are always indirect; as,

<i>Je n'y entends rien,</i>	for   <i>je n'entends rien à cela.</i>
<i>ces fruits sont bons, en vou-</i>	—   <i>voulez-vous de ceux ?</i>
<i>lez-vous ?</i>	—   <i>{ un peu une certaine somme,</i>
<i>avez-vous reçu de l'argent ?</i>	—   <i>{ or quantité d'argent.</i>
<i>—oui, j'en ai reçu.</i>	

Though seeming to perform the function of regimen *direct*, in this last and other phrases of the same kind, it is obvious that there is in the word *en* an ellipsis, which may be readily supplied. See p. 108.†

smiles *at thee*, and seems to invite *thee* to prefer a retired and tranquil life to the tumultuous pleasures of a vain world 1.

5. The ambitious man \* agitates, torments, and destroys *himself*, to obtain the places or the honours to which he aspires; and when he has obtained *them*, he is still not satisfied.

(5.) *Destroys*, consumer; *to*, pour.

### † EXERCISE.

1. I have known *him* since his childhood, and I always loved *him* on account of the goodness of his character.

2. This woman is always occupied in doing good works: you see *her* constantly consoling the unhappy, relieving the poor, reconciling enemies, and promoting the happiness of every one around *her*.

3. The more you live with men, the more you will be convinced that it is necessary to know *them* well before you \* form a connexion with them.

4. Enjoy the pleasures of the world, I consent *to it*; but never give yourself up *to them*.

5. I shall never consent to that foolish scheme; do not mention it any \* more.

6. Have you received some copies of the new work? Yes, I have, (received *some*.)

(1.) *Have known*, connaître, ind-1; *loved*, ind-4; *on account*, à cause; *the goodness of his*, (his good.)

(2.) *In*, à; *works*, œuvres, f. pl.; *constantly*, sans cesse; *consoling*, &c. inf-1; *relieving*, assister; *promoting*, faire; *every one around her*, tout ce qui l'environne.

(3.) *Live*, ind-7; *be convinced*, se convaincre; *before*, avant de; *form a connexion*, vous lier.

(4.) *Enjoy*, jouir de; *give yourself up*, se livrer.

(5.) *Scheme*, enterprise; *mention*, parler de.

(6.) *Copies*, exemplaire.

The pronouns, which are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen, are *nous*, *vous*, *moi*, *toi*, *lui*, *elle*, *eux*, *elles*.

*Nous* and *vous* are the subject in, *nous aimons*, *vous aimez*; the regimen direct in, *ils nous aiment*, *ils vous aiment*; and indirect in, *ils nous parlent*, *ils vous parlent*.

In general, *moi*, *toi*, are only the subject by apposition, or reduplication, whether they precede, or follow the verb, as,

<i>Moi, dont il déchire la réputation,</i>	I, whose reputation he is asper-
<i>je ne lui ai jamais rendu que</i>	sing, always did him acts of
<i>de bons offices,</i>	kindness.
<i>Toi, qui fais tant le brave, tu</i>	Wouldst thou, who pretendest
<i>oserais, &amp;c.</i>	to be so brave, dare, &c.
<i>Je prétends, moi,</i>	I do maintain, I.
<i>Tu dis donc, toi,</i>	Thou sayest then, thou.

REM. Sometimes the personal pronouns *je* and *tu* are not expressed, but understood, as,

<i>Moi, trahir le meilleur de mes</i>	I, betray my best friend!
<i>amis!</i>	
<i>Faire une lâcheté, toi!</i>	Thou, be guilty of such base-
	ness!

that is, *je voudrais*, &c. *tu pourrais*, &c.

They are likewise the subject, when they are placed in a kind of apposition expressed by *ce* and *il* in impersonal verbs, as, *qui fut bien aise? ce fut moi; ce ne peut être que toi; que vous reste-t-il?—moi*.

After a conjunction, they are either the subject, or regimen, according to the nature of the phrase, as, *nous y étions, mon père et moi; il ne craint ni toi ni moi*.

In phrases which are not imperative, *toi* and *moi* can only be the object by apposition before or after the verb, as, *voudriez-vous me perdre, moi, votre allié, &c. toi, je te soupçonnerais de perfidie!*

After a preposition, they alone can be employed, as, *vous servirez-vous de moi? selon moi, vous avez raison; il est fâché contre toi*.

What has just been remarked of *toi* and *moi*, is applicable to *lui*, but with this difference, that *lui* can

only be the object after *ne—que* signifying *only*, or in distributive phrases, as,

*N'aimez que lui, je ne le trouve pas mauvais; mais ne me haïssez pas,* That you should like only him, I do not disapprove, but do not hate me.

So, *protégez nous, lui, à cause de, &c. et moi, parce que, &c.* we may likewise say by apposition, *aimez-le, lui qui, &c.*

*Eux* is employed in the same manner as *lui*, but differs from it in this, that it cannot be the regimen indirect, except after a preposition, as, *parliez-vous d'eux? est-ce à eux que vous parlez?*

REM. *Lui* and *eux* may be the subject in distributive phrases without being in apposition, as,

*Mes frères et mon cousin m'ont secouru; eux m'ont relevé, et lui m'a pansé,* My brothers and cousin assisted me; they took me up, and he dressed my wounds.

The natural office of *elle* and *elles*, is to form the subject; however, they are susceptible of all the other uses just mentioned, except that they cannot be the regimen indirect, unless preceded by a preposition, as, *c'est à elles que je parle.*†

### † EXERCISE.

1. In the education of youth, we should propose to ourselves to cultivate, to polish their understanding, and thus to enable them to fill with dignity the different stations assigned them; but, above all, we ought to instruct them in that religious worship which God requires of them.

2. What! *you* would suffer *yourself* to be overwhelmed by adversity!

3. *I!* stoop to the man who has imbrued his hands in the blood of his king!

4. *Thou!* take that undertaking upon thyself? Canst \* thou think of it.

(1.) *Youth*, jeunes gens; *should*, devoir, ind-1; *to cultivate*, (to them;) *to polish*, (to them,) orner; *understanding*, l'esprit; *enable*, disposer; *stations*, place, (which are) assigned, (to) them; *worship*, culte; *requires*, demander.

(2.) *Suffer yourself*, se laisser, cond-1; *to be overwhelmed*, abattre.

(3.) *Stoop to*, s'abaisser devant, subj-1; *imbrued*, souiller; *in*, de.

(4.) *Take upon thyself*, se charger, cond-1; *of it*, y.

## II.

ON THE PRONOUN *soi*.

*Soi* is generally accompanied by a preposition, and is used in phrases, where there is an indeterminate pronoun, either expressed or understood: *on doit rarement parler de soi*; *il est essentiel de prendre garde à soi*.

5. Your two brothers and mine take charge of the enterprise; *they* find the money, and *he* will manage the work.

6. It is *I* who have engaged him to undertake this journey.

7. It is *thou* who hast brought this misfortune on thyself.

8. When you are at Rome, write *to me* as often as you can, and give *me* an account of every thing that can interest me.

9. He told it *to thee* thyself.

10. Fortune, like a traveller, shifts from inn to inn: if she lodges to-day *with me*, to-morrow, perhaps, she will lodge *with thee*.

11. Whom dost thou think we were talking of?—it was *of thee*.

12. Descartes deserves immortal praise, because it is *he* who has made reason triumph over authority in philosophy.

13. He is dissatisfied *with himself*.

14. She is never satisfied *with herself*.

15. The indiscreet often betray *themselves*.

16. Saumaise, speaking of the English authors, said, that he had learned more from *them* than from any other.

17. To love a person, is to render him, on every occasion, all the services in our power, and to afford him, in society, every comfort that depends *upon us*.

(5.) *Take charge*, se charger; *find*, fournir; *money*, fonds, pl.; *manage*, conduire, ind-1.

(6.) *Undertake*, faire; *journey*, voyage.

(7.) *Hast brought on thyself*, s'attirer, ind-4.

(8.) *Are*, ind-7; *can*, ind-7; *give*, faire; *an account*, le détail.

(9.) *Told*, dire, ind-4.

(10.) *Shifts from inn to inn*, changer d'auberge; *with*, chez; *she will lodge*, ce être.

(11.) *Were talking*, parler, subj-2.

(12.) *Triumph over*, triompher de.

(13.) *Is dissatisfied with*, se déplaître,

(14.) *Satisfied with*, content de.

(15.) *Betray*, se trahir.

(17.) *In our power*, dont on être capable; *afford*, procurer à; *comfort*, agrément; *depends upon*, dépendre de.



In this case, it is the regimen indirect; but it may be employed without a preposition.

1. With the verb *être*, as, *En cherchant à tromper les autres, c'est souvent soi qu'on trompe*, or *on est souvent trompé soi-même*, in attempting to deceive others, we frequently deceive ourselves. In this situation it is the subject.

2. After *ne que*, or by opposition, as,

<i>N'aimer que soi, c'est n'être bon à rien,</i>	To love only ourselves, is being good for very little.
<i>Penser ainsi, c'est s'aveugler soi-même,</i>	To think in this manner, is to blind one's-self.

It is in these examples the regimen; but when *de soi* and *en soi* are used in a definitive sense in speaking of things, they mean *de sa nature*, and *dans sa nature*.†

### III.

CASES WHERE THE PRONOUNS *elle, elles, eux, lui, leur*, MAY APPLY TO THINGS.

The personal pronouns *elle* and *elles*, when the regimen, generally apply to persons only. Thus, in speak-

#### † EXERCISE ON THE PRONOUN *soi*.

1. To excuse in *one's-self* the follies which one cannot excuse in others, is to prefer being a fool *one's-self* to seeing others so.

2. To be too much dissatisfied with *ourselves*, is a weakness; but to be too much satisfied (*with ourselves*) is (a) folly.

3. We ought to despise no one: how often have we needed the assistance of one more insignificant than *ourselves*?

4. If we did not attend so much to *ourselves*, there would be essegotism in the world.

5. Vice is odious in *itself*.

6. The loadstone attracts iron (to *itself*.)

(1.) *Follies*, sottises; *others*, autrui; *prefer*, aimer mieux; *fool*, sot; *to seeing*, que de voir; *so*, tel.

(3.) *We ought*, falloir, ind-1; *how often*, combien de fois; *we*, on; *needed the assistance*, n'avoir pas besoin; *insignificant*, petit.

(4.) *We*, on; *attended to*, s'occuper de; *egotism*, égoïsme.

(6.) *Loadstone*, aimant.

ing of a woman, we must say, *Je m'approchai d'elle, je m'assis près d'elle*; but, in speaking of a table, *Je m'en approchai, je m'assis auprès*.

However, with the prepositions *avec, après, à, de, pour, en, &c.* they may be applied to things. Thus it is correct to say of a river,

*Cette rivière est si rapide, quand elle déborde; qu'elle entraîne avec elle tout ce qu'elle rencontre; elle ne laisse après elle que du sable et des cailloux,*

That river is so rapid when it overflows, that it carries away every thing it meets with in its course; it leaves nothing behind but sand and pebbles.

—of an enemy's army,

*Nous marchâmes à elle,*

We marched up to it.

—of things, reasons, truth, &c. as,

*Ces choses sont bonnes d'elles-mêmes,*

These things are good in themselves.

*J'aime la vérité au point que je sacrifierais tout pour elle,*

I love truth to that degree, that I would sacrifice every thing for it.

*Ces raisons sont solides en elles-mêmes,*

Those reasons are solid in themselves.

After the verb *être*, they are applied only to persons, and likewise when they are followed by the relatives *qui* and *que*, as, *C'est à elle, c'est d'elles que je parle, c'est elle-même qui vient*.

The same may be said of the pronoun *eux*, which is also generally applied to persons only, yet custom allows us to say,

*Ce chien et ces oiseaux font tout mon plaisir; je n'aime qu'eux; eux seuls sont mon amusement; je ne songe qu'à eux,*

This dog and these birds are my only pleasure, I love nothing but them; they alone are my diversion: I think of nothing else.

*Lui* and *leur* are generally applied to persons, but are sometimes used in speaking of animals, plants, and even inanimate objects, as,

*Ces chevaux sont rendus, faites-leur donner un peu de vin,*

Those horses are exhausted, give them a little wine.

*Ces orangers vont périr, si on ne leur donne de l'eau,*

Those orange-trees will die unless they have a little water.

*Ces murs sont mal faits, on ne leur a pas donné assez de talus,* Those walls are not skilfully built, they are not sufficiently sloped upward.

Upon these previous observations then may be founded the following

RULE. The pronouns *elle, elles, eux, lui, and leur*, ought never to be applied to things, except when custom does not allow them to be replaced by the pronouns *y* and *en*.†

#### † EXERCISE.

1. Virtue is the first of blessings; it is *from it* alone we are to expect happiness.

2. The labyrinth had been built upon the lake Mæris, and they had given *it* a prospect proportioned to its grandeur.

3. Mountains are frequented on account of the air one breathes on them: how many people are indebted *to them* for the recovery of their health?

4. War brings in its train numberless evils.

5. It is a delicate affair which must not be too deeply investigated, it must be lightly passed over.

6. I have had my house repaired, and have given *it* quite a new appearance.

7. Those trees are too much loaded; strip *them* of part of their fruit.

8. This book cost me a great deal, but I am indebted *to it* for my knowledge.

9. Self-love is captious; we, however, take *it* for our guide; *to it* are all our actions directed, and *from it* we take counsel.

10. These arguments, although very solid *in themselves*, yet made no impression upon him, so powerful a chain is habit.

11. These reasons convinced me, and *by them* I formed my decision.

12. I leave you the care of that bird; do not forget to give *it* water.

(1.) *Blessings*, bien; *are*, devoir.

(2.) *Had been built*, on bâtir, ind-6; *prospect*, vue.

(3.) *On account*, à cause; *breathes*, respirer; *on them*, y; *are indebted for*, devoir; *recovery*, rétablissement.

(4.) *Brings*, entraîner; *in its train*, avec elle; *numberless*, bien de.

(5.) *Affair*, matière; *must*, ind-1; *be deeply investigated*, approfondir, inf-1; *be passed*, glisser; *over*, dessus.

(6.) *Have had*, faire, ind-4; *appearance*, air.

(7.) *Strip*, ôter; *of part*, une partie.

(8.) *A great deal*, cher; *knowledge*, instruction.

(9.) *We*, (it is *it* that we;) *to it* (it is *to it* that we direct all, &c.) *direct*, rapporter; *from it*, (and it is *from it* that, &c.)

(10.) *No*, ne aucun; *so strong*, &c. (so much habit is a, &c.) *habit*, habitude.

(11.) *And from*, (and it is from them that;) *by*, d'après; *formed my decision*, se décider

## IV.

DIFFICULTY RESPECTING THE PRONOUN *le* EXPLAINED.

*Le, la, les*, are sometimes pronouns, and sometimes articles. The article is always followed by a noun, *le roi, la reine, les hommes*; whereas the pronoun is always joined to a verb, *je le connais, je la respecte, je les estime*.

The pronoun *le* may supply the place of a substantive, or an adjective, or even of a member of a sentence.

There is no difficulty, when it relates to a whole member of a sentence; it is then always put in the masculine singular, as,

<p><i>On doit s'accommoder à l'humeur des autres autant qu'on le peut,</i>§</p>	<p>We ought to accommodate ourselves to the temper of others as much as we can.</p>
---	---

---

Nor is there any difficulty when *le* supplies the place of a substantive; it then always takes the gender and number of that substantive, as, *Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant?—Ou, je la suis.* Madame, are you the mother of that child?—Yes, I am. *Mesdames, êtes-vous les parentes dont Monsieur m'a parlé?—Oui, nous les sommes.*

REM. Though the word relating to the following questions, is not expressed in English, yet it must

## § EXERCISE.

1. The laws of nature and decency oblige us equally to defend the honour and interest of our parents, when we can do it without injustice.

2. We ought not to condemn, after their death, those that have not been *condemned* during their life.

---

(1.) Decency, bienséance.

(2.) We ought, falloir; *condemned*, le.



always be so in French: this word is *le*, which takes either gender, or number, according to its relation. ¶

It only remains, therefore, to lay down the following

**RULE.** The pronoun *le* takes neither gender nor number, when occupying the place of an adjective.

#### EXAMPLES.

Madame, êtes-vous enrhumée?—Oui, je le suis.

Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de ce discours?—Oui, nous le sommes.

Y eut-il jamais une femme plus malheureuse que je le suis?

**REM.** This rule is observed, when the substantives are used adjectively, as,

Madame, êtes-vous mère?—Oui, je le suis.

Mesdames, êtes-vous parentes?—Oui, nous le sommes.

Elle est fille, et le sera toute sa vie.

But not if the adjectives be used substantively, as,

Madame, êtes-vous la malade?—Oui, je la suis.

Therefore this question; *Etes-vous fille de M. le duc?* is to be answered, *Oui, je le suis*; but this, *Etes-vous la fille de M. le duc?*—*Oui, je la suis.* †

#### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. Is that your idea?—Can you doubt that it is?

2. Are you Mrs. Such-a-one?—Yes, I am.

3. Are those your servants?—Yes, they are.

(1.) *Idea*, pensée; *that it is*, ce être, subj-1.

(2.) *Mrs.*, Madame; *such-a-one*, un tel.

(3.) *Those*, ce là; *they*, ce.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. Ladies, are you glad to have seen the new piece?—Yes, we are.

2. I, a \* slave! I, born to command! alas! it is but too true that I am so.

3. She was jealous of her authority, and she ought to be so.

4. Was there ever a girl more unhappy, and treated with more ridicule than I am?

5. You have found me amiable: why have I ceased to appear so to you?

6. Have we ever been so quiet as we are?

7. Madam, are you married?—Yes, I am.

8. Madam, are you the bride?—Yes, I am,

(1.) *Ladies*, Mesdames.

(2.) *Slave*, esclave; *but*, ne que.

(3.) *Ought*, devoir, ind-2.

(4.) *With more ridicule*, plus ridiculement.

The same rule is likewise observed with the article placed before *plus*, or *moins*, and an adjective. It takes neither gender nor number, when there is no comparison, as,

*La lune ne nous éclaire pas autant que le soleil, même quand elle est le plus brillante,* The moon does not give us so much light as the sun, even when it shines brightest.

But it takes them when there is comparison, as,

*De toutes les planètes, la lune est la plus brillante pour nous,†* Of all the planets, the moon is the most brilliant to us.

## V.

### REPETITION OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

**RULE I.** Pronouns expressing the first and second persons, when the subject, must be repeated before all the verbs, if those verbs are in different tenses; it is always even better to repeat them, when the verbs are in the same tense.

### EXAMPLES.

*Je soutiens et je soutiendrai toujours,* I maintain, and (I) will always maintain.  
*Vous dites, et vous avez toujours dit,* You say, and (you) have always said.  
*Accablé de douleur, je m'écriai et je dis,* Overwhelmed with sorrow, I exclaimed and (I) said.  
*Nous nous promenions sur le haut du rocher, et nous voyions sous nos pieds, &c.* We were walking upon the summit of the rock, and we saw under our feet, &c.

### † EXERCISE.

1. This father could not bring himself to condemn his children, even when they were most guilty.

2. This woman has the art of shedding tears, even when she is least afflicted.

3. Out \* of so many criminals, only the most guilty should be punished.

4. Although that woman displays more fortitude than the others, she is not, on that account, the least distressed.

(1.) *Could*, ind-2; *bring himself*, se résoudre.

(2.) *Shedding*, répandre de; *even when*, dans le temps même que.

(3.) *Only the most*, &c. (one must punish only the most guilty;) *only*, ne que.

(4.) *Displays*, montrer; *fortitude*, fermeté; *on that account*, pour cela; *distressed*, affligé.

In all cases these pronouns must be repeated, though the tenses of the verbs do not change, if the first of these is followed by a regimen, as,

<i>Vous aimerez le Seigneur votre</i>	You shall love the Lord your
<i>Dieu, et vous observerez sa</i>	God, and (you shall) observe
<i>loi, ¶</i>	his law.

RULE II. The pronouns of the third person, when they form the subject, are hardly ever repeated before verbs, except when those verbs are in different tenses.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>La bonne grâce ne gâte rien ;</i>	A graceful manner spoils no-
<i>elle ajoute à la beauté, relève</i>	thing: it adds to beauty,
<i>la modestie, et y donne du lus-</i>	heightens modesty, and gives
<i>tre,</i>	it lustre.
<i>Il n'a jamais rien valu, et ne</i>	He never was good for any
<i>vaudra jamais rien,</i>	thing, and never will be.
<i>Il est arrivé ce matin, et il re-</i>	He arrived this morning, and
<i>partira ce soir,</i>	(he) will set off again this
	evening.

However, perspicuity requires the repetition of the pronoun, when the second verb is preceded by a long incidental phrase, as—*Il fond sur son ennemi, et après*

#### ¶ EXERCISE ON THE REPETITION OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUN.

1. My dear child, *I* love you, and *I* shall never cease to love you: but it is that very love that I have for you which obliges me to correct you for your faults, and to punish you when you deserve it.

2. *I* heard and admired these words, which comforted me a little, but my mind was not sufficiently at liberty to make him a reply.

3. *Thou* art young, and doubtless *thou* aimest at the glory of surpassing thy comrades.

4. God has said: *you* shall love your enemies, bless those that curse you, do good to those that persecute you, and pray for those who slander you. What a difference between this morality and that of philosophers!

(1.) *Correct for*, reprendre de.

(2.) *Heard*, écouter, ind-2; *words*, discours, sing.; *my mind*, &c. (I had not the mind, &c.) *sufficiently at liberty*, assez libre; *to make a reply*, répondre à.

(3.) *Aimest at*, aspirer à; *surpassing*, l'emporter, &c.

(4.) *Slander*, calomnier; *between*, de; *and that*, à celle.

*l'avoir saisi d'une main victorieuse, il le renverse, comme le cruel aquilon abat les tendres moissons qui dorent la campagne.†*

RULE III. Any personal pronoun, when the *subject* must be repeated before verbs, when passing from an affirmation to a negation, and *vice versâ*, or when the verbs are joined by any conjunction, except *et* and *ni*.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>Il veut et il ne veut pas,</i>	He will and he will not.
<i>Il donne d'excellens principes, parce qu'il sait que les progrès ultérieurs en dépendent,</i>	He lays down excellent principles, because he knows that upon them depends all further progress.
<i>Il donne et reçoit,</i>	He gives and receives.
<i>Il ne donne ni ne reçoit,‡</i>	He neither gives nor receives.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. *He* took the strongest cities, conquered the most considerable provinces, and overturned the most powerful empires.

2. *He* takes a hatchet, completely cuts down the mast which was already broken, throws it into the sea, jumps upon it amidst the furious billows, calls me by my name, and encourages me to follow him.

3. *He* marshals the soldiers, marches at their head, advances in good order towards the enemy, attacks and breaks them, and, after having entirely routed them, (he) cuts them to pieces.

(1.) *Overturned*, renverser.

(2.) *Completely cuts down*, achever de couper; *jumps upon it*, s'élancer dessus; *billows*, onde.

(3.) *Marshals*, ranger en bataille; *breaks*, renverser; *entirely routed*, achever de mettre en désordre; *cuts*, tailler.

#### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. It is inconceivable how whimsical she is; from one moment to another *she* will and *she* will not.

2. The Jews are forbidden to work on the sabbath; *they* are as it \* were \* locked in slumber; *they* light no fire, and carry no water.

3. For nearly a week *she* has neither eaten nor drunk.

4. The soldier was not repressed by authority, but stopped from satiety and shame.

(1.) (She is of a whimsical cast inconceivable) *whimsical cast*, bizarrerie, f.  
(2.) (It is forbidden to,) *forbidden*, défendre; *sabbath*, jour du sabbat; *locked*, enchaîné; *slumber*, repos; *light*, allumer.

(3.) *For*, depuis; *nearly*, près de; *a week*, huit jours; *has eaten....drunk*, ind-1

(4.) *Repressed*, réprimer; *stopped*, s'arrêter, ind-3; *from*, par.



RULE IV. Pronouns, when they form the regimen, repeated before any verb.

EXAMPLE.

*L'idée de ses malheurs le poursuit, le tourmente et l'accable,* The idea of his misfortunes pursues (him,) torments (him,) and overwhelms him.  
*Il nous ennuie et nous obsède sans cesse,* He wearies (us) and besets us unceasingly.

EXCEPTION. It is not repeated before such compound verbs as express the repetition of the same action, when the verbs are in the same tense, as,

Je vous le dis et redis, il le fait et refait sans cesse.†

VI.

RELATION OF THE PRONOUNS OF THE THIRD PERSON TO A NOUN AS EXPRESSED BEFORE.

RULE. The pronouns of the third person, *il, ils, elle, elles, le, la, les*, must always relate to a noun, whether subject or regimen, taken only in a definite sense, before expressed in the same tense, but they must not be applied to a subject and regimen at the same time.

EXAMPLE.

*La rose est la reine des fleurs, aussi est-elle l'emblème de la beauté,* The rose is the queen of flowers; therefore it is the emblem of beauty.

† EXERCISE.

1. It is taste that selects the expressions, that combines, arranges, and varies *them*, so as to produce the greatest effect.
2. Horace answered his stupid critics not so much to instruct *them*, as to expose their ignorance, and let *them* see that they did not even know what poetry was.
3. Man embellishes nature itself; he cultivates, extends, and polishes it.

(1.) So as to, de manière à ce qu'elles, subj-l.

(2.) Stupid, sot; not so much, moins; as to, que pour; show, (to them,) their, &c. let see, faire entendre; was, c'était que.

J'aime l'ananas; il est exquis, I like the pine-apple; it is delicious.

But the two following sentences would be equivocal;

Racine a imité Euripide, en tout ce qu'il a de plus beau dans sa Phèdre,	Racine has imitated Euripides in all that he has most beautiful in his Phedra.
Le légat publia une sentence d'interdit; il dura trois mois,	The legate published a sentence of interdiction; it lasted three months.

As in the first of these two sentences *il* may relate, either to *Racine* or to *Euripides*, and from the construction of the second sentence, *il* cannot, as it should, relate to *interdit*. Again, it is not altogether correct, to say,

Nulle paix pour l'impie; il la cherche, elle fuit, No peace for the wicked: he seeks it, it flies.

Because, from the construction, the pronouns *la* and *elle* seem to be used for *nulle paix*, whereas the meaning requires that they should supply the place of the substantive *paix*, in the affirmative. ¶

#### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. Poetry embraces all sorts of subjects; *it* takes in every thing that is most brilliant in history; *it* enters the fields of philosophy; *it* soars to the skies; *it* plunges into the abyss: *it* penetrates to the dead; *it* makes the universe its domain; and if this world be not sufficient, *it* creates new ones, which *it* embellishes with enchanting abodes, which *it* peoples with a thousand various inhabitants.

2. Egypt aimed at greatness; and wished to \* strike the eye at a distance, always pleasing *it* by the justness of proportion.

3. Egypt, satisfied with its own territory, where every thing was in abundance, thought not of conquests; *it* extended itself in another manner, by sending colonies to every part of the globe, and with *them* civilization and laws.

(1.) *Subjects*, matière; *takes in*, se charger de; *that is*, y avoir de; (in) *the fields*, soars to, s'élancer dans; *plunges*, s'enfoncer; *to*, chez; (its domain of the universe;) *be sufficient*, suffire; *ones*, monde; *enchanting*, enchanté; *abodes*, demeure; *various*, divers.

(2.) *Greatness*, grand; *wished*, vouloir; *eye*, pl.; *at a distance*, dans l'éloignement; (in) *pleasing*, contenter.

(3.) *Was in abundance*, abonder; *thought of*, songer à; *in*, de; *by*, en; *to*, par; *part of the globe*, terre.

## II.

## POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

*Explanation of some difficulties attendant on the use of the possessive pronouns.*

The possessive pronouns *son, sa, ses, leur, leurs*, relate either to pronouns, to things personified, or simply to things. If they relate to persons, or things personified, their place can never be supplied by others: but if they relate to things, the following rules must be observed.

The possessive pronouns are always employed,

1. When the object to which they relate is either named, or designated by a personal pronoun in the same member of a phrase.

## EXAMPLES.

L'Angleterre étend son commerce par toute la terre,	England extends her commerce over the whole globe.
Elle envoie ses flottes dans toutes les mers,	She sends her fleets into every part of the ocean.

2. Before a noun, when qualified even by a single adjective, unless the noun form the regimen.

## EXAMPLE.

Ses ressources immenses sont inépuisables,	Her immense resources are inexhaustible.
--	--

3. After every preposition.

## EXAMPLE.

C'est par sa position, jointe à la sagesse de son gouvernement, qu'elle réunit dans son sein de si grands avantages,	It is by her situation, joined to the wisdom of her government, that she unites such vast advantages within herself.
--	--

4. The Messiah is expected by the Hebrews; *he* comes and calls the Gentiles, as it had been announced by the prophecies; the people that acknowledge *him* as come, is incorporated with the people that expected *him*, without a single moment of interruption.

(4.) *Gentiles*, Gentil; (the prophecies had announced it;) *acknowledges*, *reconnaître*; *with*, *à*; *without*, sans qu'il y ait; *single*, seul.

4. Before all words which can govern the preposition *de*.

#### EXAMPLES.

Son parlement est le sanctuaire	Her parliament is the seat of
de la plus sage politique,	the wisest policy.
Son roi n'a de pouvoir que pour	Her king possesses power only
faire le bien,	to do good.

On all other occasions, the article, with the pronoun *en*, placed immediately before the verb, must be substituted.

#### EXAMPLE.

Tout enfin contribue à m'en	In short, every thing conspires
faire aimer le séjour ; j'en	to make me love that resi-
admire surtout l'exacte po-	dence : I particularly admire
lice, en même temps que les	the strictness of her police,
lois m'en paraissent extrême-	at the same time when her
ment sages,†	laws appear to me extremely
	wise.

#### † EXERCISE ON THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

1. A new custom was a phenomenon in Egypt: for which reason, there never was a people that preserved so long *its* customs, *its* laws, and even *its* ceremonies.

2. Solomon abandons himself to the love of women: *his* understanding declines, *his* heart weakens, and *his* piety degenerates into idolatry.

3. That superb temple was upon the summit of a hill: *its* columns were of Parian marble, and *its* gates of gold.

4. Laocoon is one of the finest statues in France: not only the whole, but all *its* features, even the least, are admirable.

5. The Thames is a magnificent river: *its* channel is so wide and so deep below London-bridge, that several thousands of vessels lie at their ease in it.

6. This fine country is justly admired by foreigners: *its* climate is delightful, *its* soil fruitful, *its* laws wise, and *its* government just and moderate.

7. The trees of that orchard have sun enough, yet *its* fruits are but indifferent.

(1.) *Phenomenon*, prodige ; for which reason, aussi ; a. de ; preserved, subj-3.

(2.) *Understanding*, esprit ; declines, baisser ; weakens, s'affaiblir.

(3.) *Summit*, haut ; hill, colline ; *Parian*, de Paros.

(4.) *In*, qu'il y ait en ; the whole, l'ensemble ; even, jusqu'à.

(5.) *Magnificent*, superbe ; channel, lit ; below, au dessous de ; lie at, être à ; their, art. ; in it, y.

(6.) Justly, avec raison ; soil, sol.

(7.) Have sun enough. être bien exposé ; but indifferent, assez mauvais.



Again, when there exists any doubt whether the possessive pronoun ought to be used, or not, before a noun that is the regimen, the following is the

**RULE.** The article, not the possessive pronoun, must be put before a noun forming the regimen, when a pronoun which is either subject, or regimen, sufficiently supplies the place of that possessive, or when there is no sort of ambiguity.

### EXAMPLES.

<i>J'ai mal à la tête,</i>	I have the head-ache.
<i>Il faudrait lui couper la jambe,</i>	It would be necessary to take off his leg.
<i>Ce cheval a pris le mors aux dents,†</i>	That horse has run away.

8. The Seine has *its* source in Burgundy, *its* mouth is at Havre-de-Grâce.

9. The pyramids of Egypt astonish, both by the enormity of *their* bulk, and the justness of *their* proportions.

10. Egypt alone could erect monuments for posterity; *its* obelisks are to this day, as well for *their* beauty as for *their* height, the principal ornaments of Rome.

11. History and geography throw mutual light on each other; a \* perfect knowledge of *them* ought to enter into the plan of good education.

(8.) *Mouth*, embouchure; *Havre*, le Havre.

(9.) *Both*, également et; *bulk*, masse; *and*, et par.

(10.) *Egypt alone could*, il n'appartenait qu'à l'Égypte de; *erect*, élever; *to this day*, encore aujourd'hui; *as well for*, autant par; *height*, hauteur.

(11.) *Throw mutual light*, &c. s'éclairer l'une par l'autre; *of them*, (their.)

### †EXERCISE.

1. During the whole winter he has had bad eyes.

2. I had a fall yesterday, and hurt *my* back and head.

3. It would be better for a man to lose *his* life than forfeit \* his honour by a criminal 2 action 1.

4. In this bloody battle, he received a wound by a shot in *his* right arm, and another in *his* left leg: by dint of care *his* arm was saved, but it was necessary to amputate *his* leg.

(1.) *Has had bad*, avoir mal à.

(2.) *Had a fall*, se laisser tomber; *hurt*, se faire mal à; *back*, reins, pl.

(3.) *Would be better*, valoir mieux, cond-1.

(4.) *A wound by a shot*, un coup de feu; *in*, à: *by dint*, à force; *his arm*, &c. (they saved the arm to him;) *was necessary*, falloir, ind-3; *to \* amputate*, \* to him.

But should either the personal pronoun, or circumstances, not remove all ambiguity, then the possessive pronoun must be joined to the noun, as,

Je vois que ma jambe s'enfle,	I see that my leg is swelling.
Il lui donna sa main à baiser,	He gave him his hand to kiss.
Elle a donné hardiment son bras au chirurgien,†	She courageously presented her arm to the surgeon.

*Ma*, not *la*, because I may also see the leg of another person swelling.

REM. 1. Although verbs which are conjugated with two pronouns of the same person generally remove every kind of amphibology, yet custom authorizes some familiar expressions, in which the possessive pronoun seems to be redundant, as,

Il se tient ferme sur ses pieds,	He stands firm upon his feet.
Je l'ai vu, de mes propres yeux.	I have seen it with my own eyes.

2. When speaking of an habitual complaint, the possessive pronoun is properly used, as,

Sa migraine l'a repris,	His head-ache is returned.
-------------------------	----------------------------

The possessive pronouns are subject to the same rules as the article; they must therefore be repeated before all substantives which are either subject or regimen, and before adjectives which express different qualities, as,

Son père, sa mère, et ses frères sont de retour,	His father, mother, and bro- thers are come back.
Je lui ai montré mes plus beaux et mes plus vilains habits,	I have shown him my finest and my ugliest dresses.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. In this interview, they made each other presents; she gave him *her* portrait, and he gave her *his* finest diamond.

2. A young surgeon preparing to bleed the great Condé, this prince said to him, smiling, do not you tremble to bleed me? I, my lord, no, certainly; it is not I, it is you who ought to tremble. The prince, charmed with the reply, immediately gave him *his* arm.

(1.) *Interview*, entrevuë; *made each other*, se faire mutuellement.

(2.) *Preparing*, se disposer; *bleed*, saigner; *smiling*, d'un air riant; *it is*, not I, (it is not me;) *it is you*, (it is to you;) *who ought to*, de; *reply*, répartie.

This rule, which is seldom observed in English, is common in French to all pronominal adjectives.†

### III.

#### RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

*Qui*, when it is the subject, may very properly relate both to persons and things.

#### EXAMPLES.

*L'homme qui joue perd son temps,* The man who games loses his time.

*Le livre qui plaît le plus, n'est pas toujours le plus utile,* The book which pleases most is not always the most useful.

But when it is the regimen, it can only be used of persons, or of things personified, whether the regimen be direct, or indirect.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Quand on est délicat et sage dans ses goûts, on ne s'attache pas, sans savoir qui l'on aime,* He who is wise and discriminate in his choice, does not form an attachment, without knowing the person he loves.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. Whatever he may do, he always finds himself safe.
2. Can you still doubt the truth of what I tell you? Would you ask a stronger proof than that I give you, it is that I heard it, yes, heard it with *my* own ears.
3. *My* gout does not allow me a moment's repose.
4. It is in vain that I exhort you to work and study: *your* idleness, that cruel disease under \* which you labour, renders useless all the exhortations of friendship.
5. If you wish to be beloved, fail not to perform the promises you have just made.
6. In the retreat that I have chosen for myself, *my* study and my garden are my greatest delight.
7. He brought me into his laboratory, and showed me *his* large and small vessels.

- 
- (1.) *Finds himself*, se retrouver; *safe*, sur ses jambes.
  - (2.) *Can*, cond-1; *doubt*, douter de; *ask*, exiger.
  - (3.) *Allow*, laisser.
  - (4.) *It is in vain that I*, je avoir beau; *you labour*, vous travailler.
  - (5.) *Fail not*, ne pas manquer; *perform*, remplir; *have just made*, venir de faire.
  - (6.) *For myself*, (to me;) *study*, cabinet; *are*, faire; *greatest*, plus cher.
  - (7.) *Brought*, mener; *laboratory*, laboratoire; *vessels*, vaisseau.

L'homme à qui *appartient ce beau jardin est très-riche*, The man to whom this fine garden belongs is very rich.  
 La femme de qui *vous parlez*, The woman of, whom you are speaking.

REM. When the regimen indirect is expressed by the preposition *de*, then *dont* should be preferred to *de qui*. It is better to say: *la femme dont vous parlez*; however, when the verb expresses a kind of transfer or conveyance, *de qui* must be used, as,

*Celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle*, The person from whom I had that intelligence.

RULE I. *Qui* must not be separated from its antecedent, when that antecedent is a noun.

#### EXAMPLE.

Un jeune homme qui *est docile aux conseils qu'on lui donne, et qui aime à en recevoir, aura infailliblement du mérite*, A young man who is obedient to the advice that is given him, and who loves to receive this, will infallibly have merit.

REM. In some phrases *qui* may be separated from the substantive, by several words: that is, when the sense obliges us to refer it to that substantive, as,

Il a fallu, avant toute chose, vous faire lire dans l'écriture sainte, *l'histoire* du peuple de Dieu, *qui* fait le fondement de la religion.

This sentence is very correct, because, as *du peuple* determines the kind of history, and *de Dieu* the kind of people, the mind necessarily goes back to the substantive *histoire*, to which it refers the incidental phrase.

*Qui* may likewise be separated from its antecedent, when this antecedent is a pronoun used as the regimen direct, as,

*Il la trouva qui pleurait à chaudes larmes*, He found her crying bitterly.  
*Je le vois qui joue*, I see him playing.

Because, in this case, the true place of the pronoun is before the verb, and it is the same as saying, *il trouva elle qui pleurait, &c. je vois lui qui joue*. Also in these kinds of sentences, which are real gallicisms,



Ceux-là *ne sont pas les plus malheureux, qui se plaignent le plus,*† Those are not the most unhappy who complain the most.

RULE II. The relative *qui* must always have a reference to a noun taken in a determinate sense.

### EXAMPLES.

*L'homme est un animal raisonnable, qui, &c. Il me reçut avec une politesse, qui, &c.*

But we cannot say, *l'homme est animal raisonnable, qui, &c. Il me reçut avec politesse, qui, &c.*

REM. Though in many phrases, the determinate nature of the nouns is not expressed, yet it is clearly understood. Thus, all these phrases are correct:

<i>Il n'a point de livre, qui ne soit de son choix,</i>	He has not <i>a book</i> that is not of his own selecting.
<i>Y a-t-il ville dans le royaume qui soit plus favorisée?</i>	Is there <i>a city</i> in the kingdom that is more favoured?
<i>Il se conduit en homme qui connaît le monde,</i>	He behaves himself like a man who knows the world.

### † EXERCISE.

1. A young man *who* loves vanity of dress, like a woman, is unworthy of wisdom and glory; glory is only due to a heart *that* knows how \* to \* suffer pain and trample upon pleasure.

2. Thyself, O my son, my dear son, thou \* thyself *that* now enjoyest a youth so cheerful and so full of pleasure, remember that this delightful age is but a flower *which* will be 1 withered 3 almost as soon 2 as blown.

3. Men pass away like flowers, *which* open in \* the morning, and at night are withered and trampled under foot.

4. You must have a man *that* loves nothing but truth and you, *that* will speak the truth in spite of you, *that* will force all your intrenchments; and this necessary character is the very man whom you have sent into exile.

5. We perceived him waiting for us, quietly seated under the shade of a tree.

(1.) *Vanity of dress*, à se parer vainement; *trample upon*, fouler aux pieds.

(2.) *Cheerful*, vif; *full of*, féconde en; *remember*, se souvenir; *delightful*, bel; *withered*, sécher; *blown*, éclore.

(3.) *Open*, s'épanouir; *and*, (which;) *at night*, le soir; *withered*, flétrir; *under*, à; *foot*, art. pl.

(4.) *You must have*, il vous falloir; *nothing but*, ne que; *will speak*, *will force*, subj.-1; *intrenchments*, retranchement; *character*, homme; *man*, même; *sent into exile*, exiler.

(5.) *Waiting for*, (who waited,) attendre; *under*, à.

*Il est accablé de maux, qui ne lui laissent pas un instant de repos,* He is overwhelmed with misfortunes, that do not allow him a moment's rest.  
*C'est une sorte de fruit, qui ne mûrit pas en Europe,* It is a sort of fruit that does not ripen in Europe.

From the translation of all the above examples, it is evident that *livre, ville, maux*, are really determinate, the meaning being: *il n'a pas un livre qui, &c. y a-t-il une ville qui, &c.* ¶

*Que* relates both to persons and things. It is always the regimen direct, and cannot subsist without an antecedent expressed, which it generally follows. *L'homme que je vois, la pêche que je mange.* We say, generally, because, in some instances, it may be separated from the antecedent by several words: that is, when the mind necessarily goes back to that antecedent, as in this sentence of Fléchier's,

*Qu'est-ce qu'une armée?—c'est un corps animé d'une infinité de passions différentes, qu'un homme habile fait mouvoir pour la défense de la patrie.*

REM. There are instances where *que* is apparently

#### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. He received us with such *goodness, civility, and grace*, as charmed us, and made us forget all we had suffered.
2. There is no *city* in the world *where* there are more riches and a greater population.
3. Is there a *man* can say, I shall live till to-morrow?
4. He has no *friend* but would make for him every kind of sacrifice.
5. He is surrounded by *enemies, who* are continually observing him, and would be very glad to detect him in a fault.
6. In his retreat, he lives like a *philosopher, who* knows mankind and mistrusts them.
7. The pine-apple is a *sort of fruit that* in Europe ripens only in hot-houses.
8. That man is a *sort of pedant, who* takes words for ideas, and facts confusedly heaped together for knowledge.

- (1.) *Such—as, un—qui*; *civility, politesse.* (2.) *There are*, subj.  
 (3.) *Man, (who;) can*, subj. (4.) *But, qui ne*; *would make*, subj-2.  
 (6.) *Like a, en*; *philosopher, sage*; *mistrusts, se défier de.*  
 (7.) *Pine-apple, ananas*; *hot-houses, serre chaude.*  
 (8.) *Heaped together, entasser*; *knowledge, savoir.*

used as regimen indirect for *à qui*, or *dont*, as: *C'est à vous que je parle ; c'est de lui que je parle ; de la façon que j'ai dit la chose.* But in this case, *que* is a conjunction.†

*Lequel* and *dont* relate both to persons and things. But *lequel* ought never to be used either as a subject, or object, except to avoid ambiguity ; for, whenever the sense is evident, *qui* or *que* must be used.

*Lequel*, with the preposition *de*, is either followed, or preceded by a noun, which it unites to the principal sentence. If it be followed, *dont* is preferable to *duquel*, both for persons and things. Thus:

*La Tamise dont le lit*, and not, *de laquelle*.

*Le prince dont la protection*, and not, *duquel*.

If *lequel* be preceded by the noun, we can only make use of *duquel* when speaking of things, as, *la Tamise, dans le lit de laquelle* ; and it is always better to use it when speaking of persons, as, *le prince à la protection duquel* ; *de qui* would not be so well.

With the preposition *à* *auquel*, when speaking of

#### † EXERCISE.

1. The *God whom* the Hebrews and Christians have always served, has nothing in common with the deities full of imperfection and even of vice worshipped by the rest of the world.

2. The Epic poem is not the panegyric of a *hero who* is proposed as a \* pattern, but the recital of great and illustrious *actions, which* are exhibited for imitation.

3. The *good which* we hope for \* presents itself to us, and disappears like an empty *dream, which* vanishes when we awake : to teach us, that the very *things which* we think we hold fast in our hands, may slip away in an instant.

4. Plato says, that, in writing, we ought to hide ourselves, to disappear, to make the world forget us, that we may present nothing but the *truths* we wish to impress.

(1.) (That the rest of the world worshipped.)

(2.) *Is proposed*, on propose ; *as, pour* ; *pattern*, modèle ; *is exhibited*, on donner ; *imitation*, exemple.

(3.) *Good*, bien ; *disappears*, s'envoler ; *empty*, vain ; *vanishes*, &c. le réveil fait évanouir ; *we \* hold fast*, tenir le mieux ; *in our hands* ; *slip away*, nous échapper.

(4.) *We*, on ; *to make the world forget*, se faire oublier ; *that we may present but*, pour ne produire que ; *wish*, vouloir ; *impress*, persuader.

things, as, *les places auxquelles il aspire*, but we ought to prefer *à qui*, when speaking of persons, as,

*Les rois à qui on doit obéir.*

*Auxquels* would not do so well.

So the relative *qui*, preceded by a preposition, never relates to things, but to persons only.‡

*Quoi* only relates to things. It is placed after the word to which it relates, but is always preceded by a preposition, and is generally followed by the subject of the phrase with which it is connected, as,

*La chose à quoi on pense ; voilà les conditions sans quoi la chose ne peut se faire.*

To this mode of expression are to be preferred, *lequel, duquel, auquel*, as being much better; for *quoi* is never used with any degree of propriety, but

#### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. The grand principle *on which* the whole turns is, that all \* the world is but one republic, *of which* God is the common father, and in *which* every nation forms, as it were, one great family.

2. Homer, *whose* genius is grand and sublime like nature, is the greatest poet, and perhaps the most profound moralist of antiquity.

3. The celebrated Zenobia, *whose* noble firmness you have admired, preferred dying with the title of queen, rather \* than accept the advantageous offers which Aurelian made her.

4. The Alps, on the summit *of which* the astonished eye discovers perpetual snow and ice, present, at sun-set, the most striking and most magnificent spectacle.

5. A king, *to whose* care we owe a good law, has done more for his own glory, than if he had conquered the universe.

6. The ambitious man \* sees nothing but pleasure in the possession of the offices *to which* he aspires with so much eagerness, instead of seeing the trouble that is inseparable from them.

7. Kings, *whom* religion makes it our duty to obey, are, upon earth, the true representation of the providence of God.

(1.) *Turns*, rouler; *every*, chaque; *as it were*, comme.

(2.) *Preferred*, aimer mieux; *than*, que de.

(4.) *Perpetual*, éternel; *snow, ice*, pl; *sun-set*, soleil couchant; *striking*, imposant.

(5.) *Care*, sollicitude.

(7.) (To) *whom*; *makes it our duty to*, faire un devoir de; *representation*, image.



when it relates to a vague and indefinite subject, such as *ce*, or *rien*, as,

*C'est de quoi je m'occupe sans cesse.*

*Il n'y a rien à quoi je sois plus disposé.*

*Où*, *d'où*, *par où*, relate only to things. They are never used, but when the nouns, to which they refer, express some kind of motion, or rest, at least metaphorically, as,

*Voilà le but où il tend,*

That is the end he aims at.

*C'est une chose d'où dépend le bonheur public,*

It is a thing upon which the public happiness depends.

*Les lieux par où il a passé,*

The places through which he has passed.

¶

#### IV.

##### ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

*Qui* relates only to persons presenting but a vague indeterminate idea, as,

##### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. *What* a young man, who begins the world, ought principally to attend *to*, is not to give it a high opinion of his understanding, but to gain numerous friends by the qualities of his heart.

2. A youth passed in idleness, effeminacy, and pleasure, lays up for \* us nothing but sorrow and disgust in old age; this, however, is *what* we little think of when we are young.

3. There is nothing *by which* we are more affected than the loss of fortune, although, being frail and perishable by its nature, it cannot contribute to our happiness.

4. A grove, *in which* I defy the burning heats of the dog-star, a retired valley, *where* I can meditate in peace, a high hill, *whence* my eye extends over immense plains, are the places *where* I spend the happiest moments of my life.

(1.) *To what*, *ce à quoi*; *begins*, *entrer dans*; *to attend*, *s'attacher*; *it*, *y*; *opinion*, *idée*; *understanding*, *esprit*; *to gain*, *se faire*; *numerous*, *beaucoup de*.

(2.) *Idleness*, *inutilité*; *effeminacy*, *mollesse*; *pleasure*, *volupté*; *lays up*, *préparer*; *of*, *à*; *we*, *on*.

(3.) *By*, *à*; *we*, *on*; *affected*, *sensible*; *frail*, *frêle*; *by*, *de*; *cannot*, *subj-1*; *our* (the.)

(4.) *Grove*, *bosquet*; *defy*, *braver*; *burning heats*, *ardeur*; *dog-star*, *canicule*; *spend*, *passer*.

*Qui sera assez hardi pour l'attaquer ?* Who will be bold enough to attack him ?

It is likewise used in the feminine, and in the plural, as,

*Qui est cette personne-là ?* Who is that person ?  
*Qui sont ces femmes-là ?* Who are those women ?

*Que* and *quoi* relate to things only, as,

*Que pouvait la valeur en ce combat funeste ?* What could valour do in that fatal combat ?  
*A quoi pensez-vous ?* What are you thinking of ?

*Que* is sometimes used for *à quoi*, *de quoi*, as,

*Que sert la science sans la vertu ?* What avails learning without virtue ?  
*Que sert à l'avare d'avoir des trésors ?* What use is it to the miser to possess treasures ?

that is, *à quoi sert*, &c. *de quoi sert*, &c.

*Quoi*, when relating to a whole sentence, is the only authorized expression that can be used, as,

*La vie passe comme un songe ; c'est cependant à quoi on ne pense guères.*

REM. *Que* and *quoi* require the preposition *de* before the adjective or substantive that follows them, as,

*Que dit-on de nouveau ? quoi de plus agréable !*  
*Que d'inconséquences dans sa conduite !*

*Quel* relates to both persons and things, as,

*Quel homme peut se promettre un bonheur constant ?*  
*Quelle grâce ! quelle beauté ! mais quelle modestie !*

*Où*, *d'où* *par où*, relate but to things.†

#### † EXERCISE ON ABSOLUTE PRONOUNS.

1. *Who* could ever persuade himself, did not daily experience convince us of it, that, out of a hundred persons, there are ninety who sacrifice, to the enjoyment of the present, all the best founded hopes of the future.

2. *Who* would not love virtue for its own sake, could he see it in all its beauty ?

(1.) *Did*, si ; *out of*, sur ; *future*, avenir.

(2.) *Its own sake*, elle-même ; *could he*, si on pouvoir, ind-2

## V.

## DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

*Ce*, joined to the verb *être*, always governs this verb in the singular, except when it is followed by the third person plural.

*C'est moi, c'est toi, c'est lui, c'est nous, c'est vous.*

But in different cases we must say,

*Ce sont eux, ce sont elles, Sont-ce les Anglais, qui ont fait cela ?  
Ce furent vos ancêtres qui, Est-ce les Anglais que vous aimez ?  
Fût-ce nos propres fils qui, Fût-ce nos propres fils que.*

*Ce*, when relating to a person, or thing mentioned before, supplies the place of *il*, or *elle*. *Ce* must always be used, when the verb *être* is followed by a substantive, accompanied by the article, or the adjective *un*.

3. He who does not know how \* to apply himself in his youth, does not know *what* to do when arrived at maturity.

4. He was a wise legislator, who, having given to his countrymen laws calculated to make them good and happy, made them swear not to violate any of those laws during his absence: after *which*, he went away, exiled himself from his country, and died poor in a foreign land.

5. *What* people of antiquity ever had better laws than the Egyptians? *What* other nation ever undertook to erect monuments calculated to triumph over both time and barbarism?

6. *What more instructive and entertaining* than to read celebrated authors in their own language? *What beauty, what delicacy, and grace*, which cannot be transcribed into a translation, are discovered in them!

7. When Ménage had published his book on the Origin of the French language, Christina, queen of Sweden, said: "Ménage is the most troublesome 3 man 1 in the world 2: he cannot let one word 2 go 1 without its passport: he must know *whence* it comes, *where* it has passed *through*, and *whither* it is going."

(3.) (To) *what*; *to do*, s'occuper; *when arrived*, &c., dans l'âge mûr.

(4.) *He, ce*; *calculated*, propre; *not to*, (that they would not;) *went away*, partir.

(5.) *Calculated to*, fait pour; *both*, également; *over*, de.

(6.) *Language*, langue; *delicacy*, finesse; *which cannot*, qu'on ne peut; *be transcribed*, faire passer; *translation*, traduction; *are*, &c. n'y découvre-t-on pas.

(7.) *When*, après que; *Christina*, Christine; *troublesome*, incommode; *the*, de, art.; *cannot*, ne saurait; *go*, passer; *must*, vouloir.

## EXAMPLES.

*Lisez Homère et Virgile : ce sont les plus grands poètes de l'antiquité,*

*La douceur, l'affabilité et une certaine urbanité, distinguent l'homme qui vit dans le grand monde ; ce sont là les marques auxquelles on le reconnaît,*

*Avez-vous lu Platon ? c'est un des plus beaux génies de l'antiquité,*

Read Homer and Virgil : they are the best poets of antiquity.

Gentleness, affability, and a certain urbanity, distinguish the man that frequents polite company ; these are marks by which he may be known.

Have you read Plato ? he is one of the greatest geniuses of antiquity.

But, when the verb *être* is followed by an adjective, or by a substantive taken adjectively, *il*, or *elle*, must be used.

## EXAMPLES.

*Lisez Démosthène et Cicéron ; ils sont très-éloquens,*

*J'ai vu l'hôpital de Greenwich ; il est magnifique et digne d'une grande nation,*

*Compteriez-vous sur Valère ? ignorez-vous qu'il est homme à ne jamais revenir de ses premières idées ?†*

Read Demosthenes and Cicero ; they are very eloquent.

I have seen Greenwich Hospital ; it is superb, and worthy of a great nation.

Would you rely upon Valère ? do you not know that he is a man who will never abandon his first opinions ?

*Ce*, followed by a relative pronoun, relates to things only. It is always masculine singular, as it only denotes

## † EXERCISE ON DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. It is *we* who have drawn that misfortune upon \* ourselves through our thoughtlessness and imprudence.

2. *It was* the Egyptians that first observed the course of the stars, regulated the year, and invented arithmetic.

3. Peruse attentively Plato and Cicero : *they are* the two philosophers of antiquity who have given us the most sound and luminous ideas upon morality.

4. If you are intended for the pulpit, read over and over again Bourdaloue and Massillon : *they are* both very eloquent ; but the aim of the former is to convince, and that of the latter to persuade.

(1.) *Have drawn*, s'attirer ; *thoughtlessness*, légèreté.

(2.) *First*, les premiers ; *stars*, astre.

(3.) *Peruse*, lire ; *sound*, sain ; *morality*, morale.

(4.) *Are intended for*, se destiner à ; *pulpit*, chaire ; *read over and over again*, lire et relire sans cesse ; *aim*, but.



a vague object, which is not sufficiently specified to know its gender and number.

## EXAMPLE.

*Ce qui flatte est plus dangereux* What flatters is more dangerous  
*que ce qui offense,* than what offends.

*Ce*, joined to the relative pronouns, *qui*, *que*, *dont*, and *quoi*, has, in some instances, a construction peculiar to itself. Both *ce* and the relative pronoun that follows it, form, with the verb which they precede, the subject of another phrase, of which the verb is always *être*. Now, *être* may be followed by another verb, an adjective, or a noun.

When *être* then is followed by another verb, the demonstrative *ce* must be repeated, as,

*Ce que j'aime le plus, c'est d'être* What I like most, is to be  
*seul,* alone.

When followed by an adjective, the demonstrative is not repeated, as,

*Ce dont vous venez de me parler* What you have been mention-  
*est horrible,* ing to me is horrid.

When it is followed by a substantive, the demonstrative may either be repeated, or not, at pleasure, except in the case of a plural, or a personal pronoun. Thus, we may say,

*Ce que je dis, est la vérité,* or, What I say is the truth.  
*c'est la vérité,*

Though the former is best. But we must say,

*Ce qui m'indigne, ce sont les* What provokes me, are the inju-  
*injustices, qu'on ne cesse de* ries which are continually  
*faire,* committed.

*Ce qui m'arrache au sentiment* What alleviates the grief that  
*qui m'accable, c'est vous,* oppresses me, is you.

Most of these rules contribute to the elegance of the language. ¶

## ¶ EXERCISE.

1. *What* is astonishing is not always *what* is pleasing.

(1.) *Is astonishing*, étonner; *is pleasing*, plaire.

There are two ways of employing *celui*. In the first it is followed by a noun, or pronoun, preceded by the preposition *de*.

## EXAMPLES.

*Celui de vous qui, &c.*

Whichever of you that, &c.

*Cette montre ressemble à celle de votre frère,*

That watch is like that of your brother.

In the second, it is followed by *qui, que, or dont*, as,

*Celui qui ne pense qu'à lui seul, dispense les autres d'y penser,*

He who thinks of nobody but himself, excuses others from thinking of him.

*Votre nouvelle est plus sûre que celle qu'on débitait hier,*

Your intelligence is more authentic than that which was circulated yesterday.

In these two cases it is applied both to persons and things.

In the latter of these instances, *celui* is sometimes omitted, and this turn gives strength and elegance to the expression, as,

*Qui veut trop se faire craindre, se fait rarement aimer,*

He who wishes to make himself too much feared, seldom makes himself beloved.

---

2. *What* the miser thinks least of, is to enjoy his riches.

3. *What* pleases us in the writings of the ancients, *is* to see that they have taken nature as a model, and that they have painted her with a noble simplicity.

4. *What* that good king has done for the happiness of his people, deserves to be handed down to the latest posterity.

5. *What* constitutes poetry *is not* the exact number and regular cadence of syllables: but *it is* the sentiment which animates every thing, the lively fictions, bold figures, and \* beauty and variety of the imagery: *it is* the enthusiasm, fire, impetuosity, force, a something in the words and thoughts which nature alone can impart.

6. *What* we justly admire in Shakspeare, *are* those characters always natural and always well \* sustained.

7. *What* keeps me attached to life, *is you*, my son, whose tender age has still need of my care and advice.

---

(2.) *What*, (that to which ;) miser, avare.

(3.) *As a*, pour.

(4.) *Deserves*, être digne ; *to be handed down*, être transmis ; *latest*, la plus reculée

(5.) *Constitutes*, faire ; *exact*, fixe ; *lively*, vif ; *imagery*, image, pl. ; *a something*, un je ne sais quoi ; *words*, parole ; *impart*, donner.

(6.) *We*, on ; *justly*, avec justice ; *natural*, dans la nature ; *sustained*, soutenu.

(7.) *Keeps attached*, attacher ; *care*, advice, pl.

*Ceci* and *cela* apply only to things; however, in the familiar style, custom authorizes us to say, in speaking of one person individually, or of many collectively; *cela est heureux ! cela croupit dans la fange ; cela est gueux et fier, &c.*†

---

## CHAP. VI.

### PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

Though *on* may generally be considered as a masculine pronoun, as in the phrase, *on n'est pas toujours maître de ses passions*, there are however occasions in which it is evidently feminine, as, *on n'est pas toujours jeune et jolie* : it may likewise be followed by a plural, as, *on se battit en désespérés ; est-on des traîtres ?*

This pronoun must be repeated before all the verbs

---

#### † EXERCISE.

1. *Whichever of you* shall be found to excel the others both in mind and body, shall be acknowledged king of the island.

2. There are admirable pictures; *these* are after the manner of Rubens, and *those* after the manner of Van-Huysum.

3. Why are the statues of the most celebrated modern sculptors, notwithstanding the perfection to which the arts have been carried, so much inferior *to those* of the ancients?

4. *He* whose soul, glowing, as it were, with divine fire, shall represent to himself the whole of nature, and shall breathe into objects that spirit of life which animates them, those affecting traits which delight and ravish us, will be a man of real genius.

5. *He that* judges of others by himself, is liable to many mistakes.

6. *He that* is easily offended, discovers his weak side, and affords his enemies an opportunity of taking advantage of it.

7. *He who* loves none but himself, deserves not to be beloved by others.

---

(1.) *Be found to excel the others*, on juger vainqueur; *both in*, et pour (repeated.)

(2.) *There are*, voilà de; *picture*, tableau; *are after*, être dans; *manner*, genre.

(3.) *Are*, (to be placed before *so much inferior*;) *have been carried*, (active voice,) with, on; *inferior*, au-dessous.

(4.) *Glowing with*, enflammé de; *as it were*, pour ainsi dire; *the whole of*, tout; *shall breathe into*, répandre sur; *affecting*, touchant; *delight*, séduire; *real*, vrai.

(5.) *By*, d'après; *liable*, exposé; *mistake*, méprise.

(6.) *Is offended*, s'offenser; *weak side*, faible; *affords*, fournir à; *of taking advantage*, profiter.

of a sentence, and refer to one and the same subject. Thus, the sentence,

*On croit être aimé et l'on ne nous aime pas.*

is incorrect; it should be,

*On croit être aimé et l'on ne l'est pas.*

*Quiconque* is generally masculine, however, it is feminine, when speaking of, or to females, as, *quiconque de vous, Mesdames, &c.* Though perhaps, *celle de vous, &c.* is preferable.†

*Chacun*, though always singular, may be followed, sometimes by *son, sa, ses*, and sometimes by *leur, leurs*, which, in many instances, is embarrassing.

There is no difficulty in those phrases where *chacun* is not contrasted with a plural number; for then *son, sa, ses*, must be used, as,

*Donnez à chacun sa part,*

Give to each his share.

*Que chacun songe à ses affaires,*

Let every one mind his own business.

RULE. In phrases where *chacun* is contrasted with a plural to which it refers, *son, sa, ses*, must be employed, when *chacun* is placed after the regimen; but

#### † EXERCISE ON PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

1. Do you sincerely think, said Emily to Lucilla, that when women are sensible and pretty, *they* are ignorant of \* it: nò, *they* know it very well; but if *they* are watchful over their character, *they* are not proud of these advantages.

2. *We* are not slaves, to receive such treatment.

3. Do you know what *they* do here? *They* eat, *they* drink, *they* dance, *they* play, *they* walk, in a word, *they* kill time in the gayest manner possible.

4. *Whoever* of you is bold enough to slander me, I will make him repent it.

5. *Whoever* of you is attentive and discreet, shall receive a reward that will flatter her.

(1.) *Sincerely*, de bonne foi; *Emily*, Emilie; *women*, on; *they*, on; *know*, savoir; *watchful over*, jaloux de; *character*, réputation; *are proud*, s'enorgueillir.

(2.) *We*, on; *slaves*, (des) esclaves; *to receive*, pour essayer de.

(3.) *They*, on; *in the gayest manner*, le plus gaiement; *possible*, (that they can.)

(4.) *Is*, ind-7; *to slander*, pour médire de; *it* (of it.)

(5.) *Is*, ind-7; *that will*, fait pour.



*leur, leurs*, must be used, when *chacun* is placed before the regimen.

#### EXAMPLES OF *son, sa, ses*.

<i>Remettez ces médailles chacune en sa place,</i>	Return those medals each into its proper place.
<i>Les hommes devraient s'aimer, chacun pour son propre intérêt,</i>	Men ought to love one another, each for his own interest.

#### EXAMPLE OF *leur, leurs*.

<i>Les hommes devraient avoir, chacun pour leur propre intérêt, de l'amour les uns pour les autres,</i>	Men ought for their own interest, to have an affection for each other.
---	--

REM. In phrases where *chacun* is contrasted with a plural, there are two senses, the *collective* and the *distributive*. When *chacun* is placed after the regimen, the collective sense expressed by the plural is finished; and the distributive *chacun* acts separately the part of each individual: but when *chacun* precedes the regimen, the collective sense remaining incomplete, must be carried on to the end; and then the pronoun which follows *chacun* is put in the plural, as,

*La reine dit elle-même aux députés, qu'il était temps qu'ils s'en retournassent chacun chez eux.*†

*Personne*, used as a pronoun, is always masculine;

#### † EXERCISE.

1. Go into my library, and put the books which have been sent back to me, *each* into *its* place.

2. They have all brought offerings to the temple, *every one* according to *his* means and devotion.

3. Thierry charged Uncelanus to carry his orders to the mutineers, and to make them retire *each* under *his* colours.

4. *Each* of them has brought *his* offering, and fulfilled *his* religious duty.

5. Had Ronsard and Balzac *each*, in his manner of writing, a sufficient degree of merit to form *after them* any very great man in verse and in prose?

6. After a day so usefully spent, we went back, *each* to *our* own home.

(2.) *Offerings*, offrande.

(3.) *To carry*, aller porter; *mutineers*, mutin; *colours*, drapeau.

(4.) (They have brought each their, &c.) *fulfilled*, remplir.

(5.) *Manner of writing*, genre; *a sufficient degree*, assez; *merit*, bon; *any*, un.

(6.) *Day*, journée; *went back*, retourner; *to*, chez; *our own home*, (pron. personal.)

of course the adjective relating to it must be of that gender, as,

*Personne n'est aussi heureux* Nobody is so happy as she.  
*qu'elle,*

*L'un et l'autre* require the verb they govern to be in the plural. See p. 267.

*Ni l'un ni l'autre* likewise generally govern the verb in the plural, when both may at the same time receive the action expressed by the verb; however, the two following modes

*Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont fait leur devoir,* or

*Ni l'un ni l'autre n'a fait son devoir,*

are authorized; but whenever this action applies only to a single object, the verb must be in the singular, as,

*Ni l'un ni l'autre n'est mon père; ni l'un ni l'autre ne sera nommé à cette ambassade.*

But when *ni l'un ni l'autre* elegantly stand after the verb, the verb is always in the plural, as,

*Ils ne sont morts ni l'un ni l'autre.†*

*Tout*, and *rien*, when the regimen direct, are placed after the verb, in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle, in compound tenses, as, *il*

7. Minds that possess any correctness, examine things with attention, in order to give a fair judgment of them; and they place each 2 of \* them 1 in the rank it ought to occupy.

(7.) Possess any, avoir de; correctness, justesse; give a fair judgment, juger avec connaissance; place, mettre; to occupy, avoir.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. Nobody is so severe, so virtuous in public, as some women who practise the least restraint in private.

2. Nobody could be happier than she; but as a consequence of that levity which you know she has, she has lost all the advantages that she had received from nature and education.

3. Racine and Fénélon will be always the delight of feeling minds: both 2 possessed 1 in the highest degree the art of exciting in us at pleasure the most tender and the most lively emotions.

(1.) Some, aussi; some, certain; practise the least restraint, être le moins retenu.

(2.) Could, ind-2; the, un; levity, légèreté, know she has, lui connaître.

(3.) Always, dans tous les temps; both, l'un et l'autre; in the, au; pleasure, gré.

*avoue tout ; il n'avoue rien ; il a tout avoué ; il n'a rien avoué.* But when they form the regimen indirect, they are always placed after the verb, both in simple and in compound tenses, as, *il rit de tout ; il ne se mêle de rien ; il a pensé à tout ; il n'a pensé à rien.*

*Tout* is sometimes used as an adverb, as,

*Il lui dit tout froidement,* He told him quite coolly.

Sometimes also, it represents *quoique, encore que, entièrement, quelque*, in which case the following rule must be observed,

**RULE.** *Tout* before an adjective, or a substantive which is used adjectively, never takes either gender, or number, except when immediately followed by an adjective feminine, beginning with a consonant, or *h* aspirated, as,

<i>Les enfans, tout aimables qu'ils sont,</i>	Children, amiable as they are.
<i>Ils sont tout interdits,</i>	They are quite disconcerted.
<i>La vertu tout austère qu'elle paraît,</i>	Virtue, austere as it may appear.
<i>Ces images tout amusantes qu'elles sont,</i>	These images, entertaining as they may be.
<i>C'est une tête toute vide,</i>	It is quite a vacant head.
<i>Ces dames, toutes spirituelles qu'elles sont,</i>	These ladies, witty as they may be.
<i>Ces fleurs sont tout aussi fraîches que celles que vous avez,</i>	These flowers are quite as fresh as those which you have.
<i>Ces dames sont, tout ainsi que vous, tout comme vous, belles jeunes et spirituelles,</i>	These ladies, as well as you, are handsome, young, and ingenious.

In this latter sense, *tout* is little more than a mere expletive. §

5. Balzac and Voiture enjoyed in their time great celebrity; but neither 2 has been read 1 since by good taste 1; the native and simple graces 3 are preferred 2 to the bombast of the former, and the affectation of the latter.

(4.) *Enjoyed*, incl-4; *neither*, ni l'un ni l'autre; *has been read*, (they read them no more;) *native*, du naturel; *simple*, de la simplicité; *are preferred*, (active voice) depuis que le bon goût a fait préférer les, &c.; *bombast*, bouffissure.

*Quelque*—*que*, joined to a substantive, either alone, or accompanied by an adjective, takes the sign of the plural.

## EXAMPLES.

Quelques richesses que vous ayez,	Whatever riches you may possess.
Quelques bonnes œuvres que vous fassiez,	Whatever good actions you may do.
Quelques peines affreuses que vous éprouviez,	However dreadful pains you may suffer.

But, when joined to an adjective, separated from its substantive, it does not take the sign of the plural.

## § EXERCISE.

1. Children, *amiable* as they are, have, nevertheless, many faults which it is of importance to correct.

2. The philosophers of antiquity, *although* very \* *enlightened*, have given us but very confused ideas of the Deity, and very vague notions about the principal duties of the law of nature.

3. Those flowers, *inodorous* as they are, are not the less esteemed.

4. Virtue, *austere* as it is, makes us enjoy real pleasures.

5. Fables, *although* very \* entertaining, yet 4 truly 5 interest 3 us 2 only, when they convey instruction to us, under the disguise of an ingenious allegory.

6. Although that absurd pedant is an incessant 2 scribbler 1; yet his head is *altogether empty*.

7. Far be from us those maxims of flattery, that kings are born with talents, and that their favoured souls come out of God's hands *completely wise and learned*.

8. Those fountains glide *quite* gently through a mead enamelled with flowers.

9. These peaches are *quite* as good as those of the south of France.

(1.) *Have nevertheless*, ne laisser pas d'avoir; *faults*, défaut; *of importance*, essentiel. (2.) *Enlightened*, éclairés qu'ils étaient; *of nature*, naturel.

(3.) *Inodorous*, inodore; *not*, n'en.

(4.) *Enjoy*, goûter de.

(5.) *Entertaining*, amusantes qu'elles sont; *truly*, véritablement; *only*, ne 1 que 6; *convey*, offrir; *disguise*, voile.

(6.) *Incessant*, infatigable; *scribbler*, écrivain; *his head is*, (he has not less the head :) *not*, n'en; *altogether*, tout.

(7.) *Far be*, loin; *of*, de, art.; *are born*, naître; *with talents*, habile; *favoured*, privilégié; *come out*, sortir; *learned*, savant.

(8.) *Glide*, couler; *gently*, doucement; *through a mead*, sur un gazon.

(9.) *South*, midi.



## EXAMPLES.

*Tous les hommes, quelque opposés qu'ils soient,* All men, however opposite they may be.  
*Ces actions, quelque belles qu'on les trouve,* Those actions, however brilliant they may be found.

*Quelque*—*que*, and *quel que*, joined to a substantive, (p. 120,) have the same meaning, although they are not used indifferently for each other. If the pronoun stands before the substantive, we make use of *quelque*—*que*; as,

*Quelques richesses que vous ayez ;*

But, if the verb intervene, then we make use of *quel que* in two separate words, as,

*Quelles que soient les richesses que vous ayez. ¶*

## ¶ EXERCISE.

1. *Whatever talents* you may possess, *whatever advantages* you may have received from nature and education, with \* *whatever perfections* you may be endowed, expect only the suffrage of a small number of men.

2. *However great services* you may have rendered mankind, rather look for their ingratitude than their acknowledgments.

3. *However useful, however well written* the works which you have published, yet think not that you will immediately reap the fruits of your labours; it is but by slow degrees that light introduces itself among men. The course of time is swift: but it seems to lag, when it brings reason and truth along with it.

4. *Whatever may be the obstacles* which ignorance, prejudice, and envy oppose to the true principles of an art, yet we ought never to be deterred from propagating them: the sun does not cease to shine, because its light hurts the eyes of night-birds.

5. *Whatever be your birth, whatever your riches and dignities*, remember that you are frustrating the views of Providence, if you do not make use of them for the good of mankind.

(1.) *Possess, avoir ; have received, tenir ; be endowed, posséder ; expect, ne s'attendre à ; but, que.*

(2.) *Mankind, homme, pl. ; rather look for, compter plutôt ; acknowledgments, reconnaissance, sing.*

(3.) *Immediately, de suite ; reap, recueillir ; by slow degrees, avec lenteur ; among, chez ; swift, rapide ; to lag, se traîner ; along with it, à sa suite.*

(4.) *We, on ; to be deterred, se rebuter ; propagating, répandre ; shine, s'éclairer ; its, the article ; hurts, blesser ; night-birds, oiseau de nuit.*

(5.) *Are frustrating, frustrer.*

## CHAP. V.

## OF THE VERB.

## AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

It has been observed that the verb which has two subjects, both singular, is put in the plural; but to this rule there are the following

## EXCEPTIONS.

1. A verb with two subjects, in the singular, is not put in the plural, when the two subjects are only joined together by the conjunctions, *ou, comme, aussi-bien que, autant que, &c.*

## EXAMPLES.

<i>La séduction, ou la terreur, l'a entraîné dans le parti des rebelles,</i>	Either persuasion, or terror, <i>has</i> drawn him into the party of the rebels.
<i>Le roi, aussi-bien que son ministère, veut le bien public,</i>	The king, <i>as well</i> as his ministry, <i>wishes</i> for the public good.
<i>Son honnêteté, autant que son esprit, le fait rechercher,</i>	His honesty, <i>as much as</i> his wit, <i>makes</i> him courted.
<i>L'envie, comme l'ambition, est une passion aveugle,</i>	Envy, <i>like</i> ambition, <i>is</i> a blind passion.

2. The verb is likewise put in the singular, though preceded by plurals, either when there is an expression which collects all the substantives into one, such as, *tout, ce, rien, &c.* or when the conjunction *mais* is placed before the last substantive, and this is in the singular.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Biens, dignités, honneurs, tout disparaît à la mort,</i>	Riches, dignities, honours, <i>every thing vanishes</i> at death.
<i>Jeux, conversations, spectacles, rien ne la distrait,</i>	Games, conversations, shows, <i>nothing diverts</i> her.
<i>Perfidies, noirceurs, incendies, massacres, ce n'est là qu'une faible image, &amp;c.</i>	Perfidies, enormities, conflagrations, massacres, <i>all this is</i> but a feeble representation, &c.
<i>Non-seulement toutes ses richesses et tous ses honneurs, mais toute sa vertu s'évanouit,†</i>	Not only all his riches and honours, <i>but all his virtue vanishes.</i>

## OF THE COLLECTIVE PARTITIVE.

The collectives general have nothing to distinguish them from substantives common, with regard to the laws of agreement; but the collectives partitive apparently deviate from those laws, in some instances.

**RULE.** The verb, which relates to a collective partitive, is put in the plural, when that partitive is followed by the preposition *de* and a plural; but it is put in the singular, either when the partitive is followed by a regimen singular, or when it expresses a determinate quantity, or lastly, when it presents an idea independent of the plural which follows it.

## + EXERCISE ON THE VERB.

1. Either fear *or* inability prevented them from moving.
2. The fear of death, *or* rather the love of life, began to revive in his bosom.
3. Alcibiades, *as well as* Plato, was among the disciples of Socrates.
4. Lysurgus, *like* Solon, was a wise legislator.
5. Euripides, *as much as* Sophocles, contributed to the glory of the Athenians.
6. Riches, dignities, honours, glory, pleasure, every thing loses its charms from the moment we possess it, because none of those things can fill the heart of man.
7. The gentle zephyrs which preserved, in that place, notwithstanding the scorching heat of the sun, a delightful coolness: streams gliding with a sweet murmur, through meadows interspersed with amaranths and violets; a thousand springing flowers which enamelled carpets ever green; a wood of those tufted trees that bear golden apples, and the blossom of which, renewed every season, yields the sweetest of all perfumes; the warbling of birds; the continual prospect of a fruitful country; in a word, nothing of what till then had made him happy, could assuage the feelings of his grief.

- (1.) *Inability*, impuissance; *moving*, remuer.
- (2.) *Began to revive*, se réveiller; *in*, au fond de; *bosom*, cœur.
- (3.) *Among*, au nombre de.
- (6.) *We*, on; *none*, rien, *those things*, tout cela.
- (7.) *Preserved*, entretenir; *scorching heat*, ardeur; *interspersed with*, parsemer de; *springing*, naissant; *carpets*, tapis; *tufted*, touffu; *golden*, (of gold;) *renewed*, (which renews,) se renouveler; (in) *every season*; *yields*, répandre; *prospect*, spectacle; *made*, rendre; *assuage*, l'arracher à; *feeling*, sentiment.

## EXAMPLES OF THE PLURAL.

La plupart des hommes sont <i>bien prompts dans leurs juge- ments,</i>	The greatest part of men are very hasty in their judg- ments.
Bien des philosophes <i>se sont trompés,</i>	Many philosophers have been mistaken.

## EXAMPLES OF THE SINGULAR.

Une infinité de peuple est <i>ac- courue,</i> (regimen singular,)	An immense number of people flocked together.
La moitié des soldats a <i>péri,</i> (determinate quantity,)	One half of the soldiers has perished.
Le plus grand nombre des troupes a <i>péri,</i> (idea inde- pendent of the plural.)	The greater number of the troops has perished.

Thus, the substantives partitive, *la plupart, une infinité, une foule, une nombre, la plus grande partie, une sorte, &c.* and words signifying quantity, such as *peu, beaucoup, assez, moins, plus, trop, tant, combien,* and *que* used for *combien*, followed by a noun joined to them by the preposition *de*, have not the least influence on the verb, and consequently, it is not with them that the verb agrees, but with the noun which follows them.

REMARK. The words *infinité* and *la plupart*, used by themselves, require the verb in the plural, as: *une infinité pensent, la plupart sont d'avis.*†

## † EXERCISE ON THE COLLECTIVE PARTITIVE.

1. *Many persons* experience that human life is, every where, a state in which much is to be endured, and little to be enjoyed.

2. *Many poets* think that poetry is the art of uniting pleasure with truth, by calling imagination to the help of reason.

3. *Few persons* reflect that time, like money, may be lost by unseasonable avarice.

4. *So many years* of familiarity were chains of iron which linked me to those men who beset me every hour.

5. *How many wise men* \* have thought that, to seclude one's self from the world, was to pull out the teeth of devouring ani-

(1.) *Much is, &c.* (one has a great deal of pains, and little of real enjoyments.)

(3.) *Unseasonable, hors de propos.*

(4.) *Familiarity, habitude; linked, lié; beset, obséder.*

(5.) *How many, que de; to seclude one's self, se retirer; pull out of, arracher à; to take away from, ôter à.*



## PLACE OF THE SUBJECT WITH REGARD TO THE VERB.

It has been seen that the subject of a verb is either a noun, or a pronoun, and that this subject must always be expressed in French. It remains to speak of the place of this subject with respect to the verb.

**RULE.** The subject, whether a noun, or pronoun, is generally placed before the verb.

L'ambition effrénée de quelques hommes, a, dans tous les temps, été la vraie cause des révolutions des états,	The boundless ambition of a few men has, in all ages, been the real cause of the revolutions of empires.
Quand nous nageons dans l'abondance, il est bien rare que nous nous occupions des maux d'autrui, ¶	When we roll in plenty, we seldom think of the miseries of others.

nals, to take away from the wicked the use of his poniard, from calumny its poisons, and from envy its serpents!

6. *A company of young Phœnicians* of uncommon beauty, clad in fine linen, whiter than snow, danced a \* long while the dances of their own \* country, then those of Egypt, and lastly, those of Greece.

7. *A troop of nymphs*, crowned with flowers, whose lovely tresses flowed over their shoulders, and waved with the wind, swam in shoals behind her car.

8. At the time of the invasion of Spain by the Moors, an *innumerable multitude of people* retired into the Asturias, and there proclaimed Pelagius king.

9. *A third part of the enemy* were left dead on the field of battle; the rest surrendered at discretion.

10. *The innumerable crowd of carriages* which are to be seen in London during the winter, astonishes foreigners.

(6.) *Company*, troupe; *clad in*, et vêtu de; *linen*, lin.

(7.) *Lovely*, beau; *tresses*, cheveu; *flowed*, pendre; *waved*, flotter; *with*, au gré de; *swam*, nager; *shoals*, foule; *car*, char.

(8.) *Moors*, Maure; *retired*, se retirer; *Asturias*, Asturias; *Pelagius*, Pélage.

(9.) *A third part*, un tiers; *enemy*, pl.; *surrendered*, se rendre.

(10.) *Crowd*, quantité; *which are*, (active voice, on.)

## ¶ EXERCISE.

1. *Youth* is full of presumption, *it* expects every thing from

(1.) *Full of presumption*, présomptueux; *expects*, se promettre; *itself all sufficient*, pouvoir tout; *that it has*, avoir.

## EXCEPTIONS.

1. In these interrogative phrases the question is made either with a pronoun, or a noun: if with a pronoun, this is always placed after the verb, as,

*Que dit-on? irai-je à la campagne? de qui parle-t-on?*

If with a noun, the noun is sometimes placed before, and sometimes after the verb; it stands before, when the pronoun personal which answers to it, asks the question, as,

*Cette nouvelle est-elle sûre? les hommes se rendent-ils toujours à la raison?*

It stands after, when a pronoun absolute, or an interrogative adverb, placed at the beginning of the phrase, allow the suppression of the personal pronoun, as,

*Que dit votre ami? à quoi s'occupe votre frère? où demeure votre cousin?*

REMARK. In interrogative sentences, when the verb which precedes *il, elle, on*, ends with a vowel, the

itself: although frail, *it* thinks itself all-sufficient, and that *it* has nothing to fear.

2. *Commerce* is like certain springs; if *you* attempt to \* divert their course, *you* dry them up.

3. *It* is enough that falsehood is falsehood, to be unworthy of a man who speaks in the \* presence of God, and who is to sacrifice every thing to truth.

4. The *ambition* and *avarice* of man are the sources of his unhappiness.

5. *They* punished, in Crete, three vices which have remained unpunished in all other nations: ingratitude, dissimulation, and avarice.

6. Like the Numidian lion, goaded by cruel hunger, and rushing upon a flock of feeble sheep, *he* tears, *he* slays, *he* wallows in blood.

(2.) *Springs*, source; *attempt*, vouloir; *dry up*, faire tarir.

(3.) *It is enough*, suffire; *falsehood*, mensonge; *is*, subj.; *in*, en; *is to sacrifice*, doit.

(5.) *Punished*, ind-2; *have remained*, être; *in*, chez.

(6.) *Like the*, semblable à un; *Numidian*, de Numidie; *goaded by*, &c. (that cruel hunger goads) dévorer; *rushing*, (which rushes upon,) entrerdans; *tears*, déchirer; *slays* égorger; *wallows*, nager.

letter *-t-* is put between that verb and the pronoun, as,

*Arrive-t-il ? viendra-t-elle ? aime-t-on les rauriens ?*

When *je* stands after a verb, which ends with *e* mute, that *e* mute is changed into *é* acute as, *aimé-je ? puissé-je ?* But when the transposition of *je* after the verb becomes harsh, euphony then requires another turn, so instead of *cours-je ? dors-je ?* which would be intolerable, we must say, *est-ce que je cours ? est-ce que je dors ?*†

2. Incidental sentences which express that we are quoting somebody's words, as,

*Je meurs innocent, a dit Louis* I die innocent, said Louis XVI.

*Je le veux bien, dit-il,* I am very willing, said he.

4. Impersonal verbs, and these words, *tel, ainsi, &c.*

*Il est arrivé un grand malheur,* A great misfortune has happened.

### + EXERCISE.

1. *Have you* forgotten all that Providence has done for you? how *have you* escaped the shafts of your enemies? how *have you* been preserved from the dangers which surrounded you on all sides? *could you be* so blind as not to acknowledge and adore the all-powerful hand that has miraculously saved you?

2. What *will posterity say* of you, if, instead of devoting to the happiness of mankind the great talents which you have received from nature, you make use of them only to deceive and corrupt them.

3. Do not *the misfortunes* which we experience often contribute to our \* prosperity?

4. Why are *the works of nature* so perfect? Because each work is a whole, and because she labours upon an eternal plan, from which she never deviates. Why, on the contrary, are *the productions* of man so imperfect? It is because the human mind being unable to create any thing, and incapable of embracing the universe at a single glance, can \* produce only after having been enriched by experience and meditation.

(1.) *Escaped*, échapper à; *shafts*, trait; *preserved*, garantir; *on all sides*, de toutes parts; *so as*, assez pour; *saved*, conserver.

(2.) *Devoting*, consacrer; *mankind*, homme, pl.; *deceive*, égarer.

(3.) *Experience*, éprouver; *contribute to*, tourner en.

(4.) *Because*, c'est que; *and because*, et que; *being unable*, ne pouvoir, incapable, (not being able;) *at, de; glance*, vue; *enriched*, fécondé.

<i>Tel était l'acharnement du soldat, que, &amp;c.</i>	Such was the fury of the soldier, that, &c.
<i>Ainsi finit cette sanglante tragédie,†</i>	Thus ended that bloody tragedy.

4. When the subjunctive is used to express a wish, or for *quand même* and a conditional, as,

<i>Puissent tous les peuples se convaincre de cette vérité,</i>	May all nations be convinced of this truth.
<i>Dussé-je y périr, j'irai,‡</i>	Should I perish there, I will go.

5. When the subject is followed by several words which are dependant upon it, and form an incidental sentence which, by its length, might obscure the relation of the verb to the subject; perspicuity then requires that the subject should be displaced.

Sometimes, however, this transposition of the subject is only the effect of taste, to avoid an inharmonious ca-

#### † EXERCISE.

1. True glory, *said he*, is founded in humanity; whoever prefers his own glory to the feelings of humanity, is a monster of pride, and not a man.

2. There have happened, for these \* ten years, *so many events* exceeding all probability, that posterity will find it very difficult to credit them.

3. *Such was that incorruptible Phocion*, who answered the deputies of Alexander, who were telling him that this powerful monarch loved him as the only honest man: well, then 2, let him allow me 1 to be and to appear so.

4. *Thus ended*, by the humiliation of Athens, *that dreadful war* of twenty-seven years, to \* which ambition gave rise, which hatred made atrocious, and which was as fatal to the Greeks, as their ancient confederation had proved advantageous to them.

(1.) *Is founded*, ne se trouver pas hors de; *feelings*, sentiment.

(2.) *There have happened for*, il se passer depuis; *exceeding*, hors de; *probability*, vraisemblance; *will find very difficult*, avoir bien de la peine; *to credit*, ajouter foi à.

(3.) *Loved*, chérir; *honest man*, homme de bien; *well*, ho!; *to be so*, d'être tel; *appear so*, le paraître.

(4.) *Ended*, se terminer; *gave rise*, faire naître; *made*, rendre; *had proved*, être.

#### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. The gods grant that you may never experience such misfortunes!

(1.) *Grant*, faire; *experience*, éprouver de.



dence: or it is used by an orator, who wishes to rouse the attention of his hearers by a bold and unexpected turn.¶

---

GOVERNMENT OF THE VERBS.

When the regimen of a verb is a noun, it is generally placed *after* the verb: but to this rule there is one exception, besides those which will hereafter be mentioned.

EXCEPTION. In an interrogative sentence, the regimen is placed before the verb, when this regimen is joined to an absolute pronoun.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Quel objet voyez-vous?</i>	What object do you see?
<i>A quelle science vous appliquez-vous?</i>	To what science do you apply yourself?
<i>De quelle affaire vous occupez-vous?</i>	About what business are you employed?

REMARK. In French, a verb can never have two regimens direct; therefore, when a verb has *two* regimens, *both nouns*, one of them must necessarily be preceded by a preposition.

---

2. May you, O wise old man! in a repose diversified by pleasing occupations, enjoy the past, lay hold of the present, and charm your latter days with the hope of eternal felicity.

3. What is not in the power of the gods! were you at the lowest depths, the power of Jupiter could draw you from thence: were you in Olympus, beholding the stars under your feet, Jupiter could plunge you to the bottom of the abyss, or precipitate you into the flames of gloomy Tartarus.

4. There, through meadows enamelled with flowers, glide a thousand various rivulets, distributing every where their pure (and) limpid waters.

5. Already, for the honour of France, there \* had come into administration a man more distinguished for his understanding and virtues than for his dignities.

---

(2.) *Old man*, vieillard; *lay hold of*, saisir; *with*, de.

(3.) *Is not in the power of*, ne peuvent; *were*, subj. 2; *lowest depths*, fond de l'abîme; *power*, puissance; *could*, pouvoir, cond. 1; *Olympus*, Olympe; *stars*, astre; *gloomy*, noir; *Tartarus*, Tartare.

(4.) *Through*, au milieu de; *with*, de; *glide*, serpenter; *rivulets*, ruisseau; *distributing*, (which distribute;) *their*, une.

(5.) *Had come*, être entré; *administration*, (of affairs;) *for*, par; *understanding*, esprit.

## EXAMPLES.

*Donnez ce livre à votre frère,* Give that book to your brother.  
*On a accusé Cicéron d'imprudence et de faiblesse,* Cicero has been accused of imprudence and weakness.

Though the natural order of the ideas seems to require that the regimen direct be placed before the indirect, the perspicuity of the sentence does not allow it in all cases.

**RULE.** When a verb has two regimens, the shorter is generally placed first; but if they be of equal length, the regimen direct will precede the indirect.

## EXAMPLES.

*Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer le vice des dehors de la vertu,* Hypocrites make it their study to deck vice with the exterior of virtue.

*Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer des dehors de la vertu les vices les plus honteux et les plus décriés,* Hypocrites make it their study to deck with the exterior of virtue the most shameful and most odious vices.

*L'ambition sacrifie le présent à l'avenir, mais la volupté sacrifie l'avenir au présent,†* Ambition sacrifices the present to the future, but pleasure sacrifices the future to the present.

**RULE.** A noun may be governed at once by two verbs, provided those verbs do not require different regimens.

## EXAMPLES.

*On doit aimer et respecter les rois,* We ought to love and respect kings.

*Ce général attaqua et prit la ville,* That general attacked and took the city.

## † EXERCISE ON THE GOVERNMENT OF THE VERBS.

1. Illustrious examples teach us, that God has hurled from their thrones princes who contemned his laws: he reduced to the condition of a beast the haughty Nebuchadnezzar, who wanted to usurp divine honours.

2. Wretched is \* the man who feeds his mind with chimeras.

3. Our interest should prompt us to prefer virtue to vice, wisdom to pleasure, and modesty to vanity.

(1.) *Illustrious*, fameux; *teach*, apprendre; *hurled*, renverser; *haughty*, superbe; *Nabuchodonosor*; *wanted*, vouloir.

(2.) *Feeds*, repaître.

(3.) *Should*, devoir, ind-1; *prompt*, porter; *pleasure*, volupté.

But we must not say,

*Cet officier attaqua et se rendit maître de la ville,* That officer attacked and made himself master of the city.

A different turn should be given to the sentence, by placing the noun after the first verb, and adding *en* before the second, as,

*Cet officier attaqua la ville et s'en rendit maître,†* That officer attacked the city, and made himself master of it.

#### OF THE USE PROPER, OR ACCIDENTAL, OF MOODS AND TENSES.

##### *Indicative.*

The *present* is used to express an existing state, as,

*Je suis ici,* I am here.

An invariable state, as,

*Dieu est de toute éternité,* God is from all eternity.

A future near at hand, as,

*Il est demain fête,* To-morrow is a holiday.

Or even a preterit, when, to give a sort of animated picture, we relate a thing past as passing. Thus, we find in Racine,

*J'ai vu votre malheureux fils traîné par ses chevaux,* I have seen your unhappy son dragged along by his horses.

#### † EXERCISE.

1. Luxury is like a torrent, which *carries away*, and *overthrows* every thing it meets.

2. Nothing can \* resist the operation of time: it, at length, *undermines*, *alters*, or *destroys* every thing.

3. Among the Spartans, public education had two objects: the first, to harden their bodies by fatigue; the second, to *excite* and *nourish* in their minds the love of their country, and an enthusiasm for what is great.

(1.) *Carries away*, entraîner; *overthrows*, renverser; *every thing*, tout ce que.

(2.) *Operation*, action; *at length*, à la longue; *undermines*, miner.

(3.) *Among the Spartans*, à Sparte; *to*, de; *harden*, endurcir; *by*, à; *their*, must be rendered by the article; *for what is great*, des grandes choses.

But suddenly passing from the preterit to the present, the speaker adds,

*Il veut les rappeler, et sa voix les effraie,* He calls out to stop them, but his voice frightens them.

In English, the verb *to be*, is frequently used with the participle present, as,

*I am reading, I am translating, I shall be writing.*

This construction is not adopted in French; and whenever found, it is to be translated in French simply by the verb, put in the tense expressed by the verb *to be*. Thus, *I am reading*, must be expressed by *je lis*; *I shall be writing*, must be rendered *j'écrirai*, &c. ¶

The *imperfect* is used—1. To denote the recurrency of an action at a time which is past, as,

*Quand j'étais à Paris, j'allais souvent aux Champs Elysées,* When I was at Paris, I often went to the *Champs Elysées*.

#### ¶ EXERCISE ON THE PROPER USE OF MOODS, &c.

1. *He is* in his chamber, where *he is relaxing* his mind from the fatigue of business, by some instructive and agreeable reading.

2. Truth, eternal by its nature, *is* immutable as God himself.

3. I never *let* a day *pass* without devoting an hour or two to reading the ancients.

4. It is this week that the new piece *comes out*.

5. The armies were in sight: nothing was heard on all sides but dreadful cries: the engagement began. Immediately a cloud of arrows *darkens* the air and *covers* the combatants; nothing *is* heard but doleful cries of the dying, or the clattering of the arms of those who *fall* in the conflict; the earth *groans* beneath a heap of dead bodies, and rivers of blood *stream* every where; there *is* nothing in this confused mass of men enraged against one another but slaughter, despair, revenge, and brutal fury.

(1.) *Is relaxing*, délasser; *reading*, lecture.

(2.) *By, de*; *immutable*, immuable.

(3.) *Let*\*; *devoting*, consacrer; *reading*, la lecture de.

(4.) *Come out*, on donner.

(5.) *Sight*, présence; *nothing was*, &c. on ne que, ind-2; *the engagement began*, on en venir aux mains, ind-3; *cloud*, nuée; *arrows*, trait; *darkens*, obscurcir; *nothing is*, &c. on ne plus que; *doleful*, plaintif; *clattering*, bruit; *conflict*, mêlée; *groans*, gémir, *beneath*, sous; *heap*, monceau; *rivers*, ruisseau; *stream*, couler; *there is nothing in*, &c. ce ne être dans; *mass*, amas; *enraged*, acharné; *but, que*; *slaughter*, massacre.



2. For a past which has some duration, especially in narrations, as,

*Rome était d'abord gouvernée par des rois,*†      Rome was at first governed by kings.

In French, the *preterit definite* and the *preterit indefinite* are not used indifferently.

The *preterit definite* is used, when speaking of a time which is entirely past, and of which nothing remains, as,

*Je fis un voyage à Bath le mois dernier,*      I took a journey to Bath last month.  
*J'écrivis hier à Rome,*      I wrote yesterday to Rome.

To authorize the use of this tense, there must be the interval of, at least, one day. It is the most used in the historic style, and for that reason called *parfait historique*.

#### + EXERCISE ON THE USE OF THE IMPERFECT.

1. When I *was* at Paris, I *went* every morning to take a walk in the *Champs Elysées*, or the *Bois de Boulogne*: afterwards I *came* home, where I employed myself till dinner, either in reading or writing; and, in the evening, I generally *went* for amusement to the French Theatre or the Opera.

2. When I *was* in the prime of life, like the light butterfly, I *fluttered* from object to object, without being able to settle to any thing: eager for pleasure, I *seized* every thing that *had* its appearance: alas! how far *was* I then from foreseeing that I should deplore with so much bitterness the loss of that precious time.

3. For a short time after Abraham, the knowledge of the true God still *appeared* in Palestine and Egypt. Melchisedec, king of Salem, *was* the priest of the Most High God I. Abimelech, king of Gerar, and his successor of the same name, *feared* God, *swore* by his name, and *reverenced* his power. But in Moses' time, the nations *adored* even beasts and reptiles. Every thing *was* God but God himself.

(1.) *Take a walk*, se promener; *in, à*; *came home*, rentrer chez soi; *was busy*, s'occuper; *reading*, (by the verb;) *for amusement*, me délasser; *French Theatre*, Comédie Française.

(2.) *Prime of life*, fleur de l'âge; *butterfly*, papillon; *fluttered*, voler; *being able*, pouvoir; *settle*, me fixer; *eager for*, avide de; *had its appearance*, m'en présentait l'image; *how*, que; *with so much bitterness*, (so bitterly.)

(3.) *Swore*, jurer; *reverenced*, admirer; *the nations*, on; *even*, jusqu'à; *but*, excepté.

The preterit *indefinite* is used either for a past indeterminate, or for a past of which something still remains, as,

<i>J'ai voyagé en Italie,</i>	I have travelled in Italy.
<i>J'ai déjeuné ce matin à Londres,</i>	I breakfasted this morning in
<i>et diné à Richmond,†</i>	London, and dined at Richmond.

The preterit *indefinite* is sometimes used instead of a future just approaching, as,

<i>Avez-vous bientôt fini ?</i>	Have you soon done ?
<i>Oui, j'ai fini dans le moment,</i>	Yes, I shall have done in a
†	moment.

### † EXERCISE ON THE PROPER USE OF THE PRETERIT.

Amenophis *conceived* the design of making his son a conqueror. He *set about* it, after the manner of the Egyptians, that is, with great ideas. All the children who were born on \* the same day as Sesostriis, *were brought* to court by order of the king: he *had* them educated as his own children, and with the same care as Sesostriis. When he *was* grown up, he made him serve his apprenticeship in a war against the Arabs: this young prince *learned* there to bear hunger and thirst, and *subdued* that nation, till then invincible. He afterwards *attacked* Lybia, and *conquered* it. After these successes, he *formed* the project of subduing the whole world. In consequence of this, \* he entered Ethiopia, which he *made* tributary. He *continued* his victories in Asia. Jerusalem *was* the first to feel the force of his arms: the rash Rehoboam *could* not resist him, and Sesostriis *carried* away the riches of Solomon. He *penetrated* into the Indies, farther than Hercules and Bacchus, and farther than Alexander did afterward. The Scythians *obeyed* him as far as the Tanais; Armenia and Cappadocia *were* subject to him. In a word, he *extended* his empire from the Ganges to the Danube.

*Making*, faire de; *set about it*, s'y prendre; *after*, à; *ideas*, pensée; *brought*, amener; *had educated*, faire élever; *grown up*, grand; *made serve*, fit faire; *apprenticeship*, apprentissage; *in*, par; *entered*, entrer dans; *made*, rendre; *as far as*, jusqu'à; *Cappadocia*, Cappadoce.

### † EXERCISE.

1. Enflamed with the desire of knowing mankind, I *have travelled*, not only among the most polished nations, but even among the most barbarous. I *have observed* them in the different degrees of civilization, from the state of simple nature to the

(1.) *With*, de; *mankind*, homme, pl.; *to*, chez; *polished nations*, peuple policé; *barbarous*, nation sauvage; *from*, depuis; *simple*, pur; *to*, jusqu'à;

The two preterits anterior differ in the same manner as the two preceding preterits, but they are always accompanied by a conjunction, or an adverb of time, as,

*Je suis sorti dès que j'ai eu diné,* I went out as soon as I had dined.

*J'eus fini hier à midi,* I had done yesterday at noon.

The *pluperfect* denotes that a thing took place before another, which had itself already taken place, as,

*J'avais soupé quand il entra,†* I had supped when he came in.

most perfect state of society, and wherever I went, the result *was* the same: that is to say, I *have* every where *seen* beings occupied in drying up the different sources of happiness that nature had placed within their reach.

2. I *have travelled* this year in Italy, where I *had* an \*opportunity of seeing several master-pieces of antiquity, and where I *made* a valuable collection of scarce medals. I there *admired* the perfection to which they *have brought* architecture, painting, and music; but what *pleased* me most there, was the beauty of the climate of Naples.

---

*wherever I went, dans tous les pays; the result was the same, (I had the same result;)* *in drying up, à tarir; within their reach, à leur portée.*

(2.) *Opportunity, occasion; master-pieces, chefs d'œuvre; scarce, rare; pleased me most, faire le plus de plaisir; was, ind-1.*

---

#### † EXERCISE.

1. As soon as I *had examined* this phenomenon, I tried to find out its causes.

2. As soon as we *had crossed* the river, we found ourselves in a wood where there was not a single foot-path traced.

3. As soon as the great Sesostris *had satisfied* his ambition by the conquest of so many empires, he returned into Egypt, where he devoted the whole of the day to administering strict justice to his people, and, in the evening, he recreated himself by holding conferences with the learned, or by conversing with the most upright people of his kingdom.

4. I *had only received*, like most of the grandees, an education in which I *had imbibed* nothing but sentiments of pride and insensibility; that is, they *had done* every thing in their power,

---

(1.) *As soon as, dès que; tried to find out, en rechercher.*

(2.) *Crossed, traverser; found ourselves, se trouver engagé; foot-path, sentier de.*

(3.) *The whole of the day, jour entier; administering, rendre, inf-1; strict, exact; recreated, délasser; by holding conferences, à s'entretenir; upright, honnête; people, gens.*

(4.) *Grandee, grand; imbibed, puiser; they, on; in their power, ce qu'on pouvoir ind-6; stifled, étouffer; benevolent, bienfaisant.*

As the use of these different preterits is attended with some difficulty, the following analysis is added, in order more clearly to explain the manner in which they are used.

We read in Marmontel the following extract;

*Célicour, à l'âge de quinze ans, avait été dans le monde ce qu'on appelle un petit prodige.* Célicour, at the age of fifteen, had been in the world what is called a little prodigy.

The author employs the pluperfect, as he speaks of a period of time anterior to all those which he is going to mention.

*Il fesait des vers les plus galans du monde; il n'y avait pas dans le voisinage une jolie femme qu'il n'eût célébrée: c'était dommage de laisser tant de talens enfouis dans une petite ville; Paris devait en être le théâtre.* He composed the most agreeable love-sonnets imaginable; there was not a pretty woman in the neighbourhood that he had not celebrated: it was a pity to let so many talents be buried in a little town; Paris was the theatre on which they ought to be exhibited.

Here the author makes use of the imperfect, because he speaks of the habitual employment of Célicour.

*Et l'on fit si bien, que son père se résolut de l'y envoyer.* And they contrived matters so that his father determined to send him there.

Now, the author passes to the preterit definite, because he is no longer speaking of what Célicour used to do, but what he did at a time past, and of which nothing remains.

*Ce père était un honnête homme, qui aimait l'esprit sans en avoir, et qui admirait, sans savoir pourquoi, tout ce qui venait de la capitale. Il avait même des relations littéraires, et du nombre de ses correspondans était un connoisseur nommé M. de Fintac.* This father was a good sort of man, who was fond of wit, without having any, and admired, without knowing why, every thing that came from the metropolis. Nay, he even had some literary connexions, and among his correspondents was a connoisseur of the name of Fintac.

---

to stifle in me happy and benevolent dispositions which I had received from nature.



Here, again, the author resumes the form of the imperfect, as he is now speaking of the habitual state of Célicour's father in his little town, and because, in this passage, he merely relates what that father was doing, at a time past, which has no kind of relation to the present.

*Ce fut principalement à lui* It was particularly to him that *que. Célicour fut recommandé,* Célicour was recommended.

The form of the preterit definite is now resumed, because this is an action passed, at a time of which nothing is left, &c.‡

There is this difference between the two future

### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. God, who *had created* his angels in holiness, *would* have their happiness depend upon themselves: they *could* ensure their felicity, by giving themselves willingly to their Creator; but they *delighted* in themselves, and not in God: immediately those spirits of light *became* spirits of darkness.

2. There is a letter which Philocles *has written* to a friend of his, about his project of making himself king of Carpathus. I *perused* that letter, and it *seemed* to me to be the hand of Philocles. They *had* perfectly *imitated* his writing. This letter *threw* me into a strange surprise. I *read* it again and again, and *could* not persuade myself that it *was* written \* by Philocles, when I recalled to my mind the affecting marks which he *had given* me of his disinterestedness and integrity.

3. Those who *had shown* the greatest zeal for the state and my person, *did not think* themselves obliged to undeceive me, after so terrible an example. I myself *was afraid* lest truth should break through the cloud, and reach me in spite of all my flatterers. I *felt* within myself that it would have raised in me bitter remorse. My effeminacy, and the dominion which a treacherous minister *had gained* over me, *threw* me into a kind of despair of ever recovering my \* liberty.

(1.) *Have* their happiness depend (that their happiness.) dépendre, subj-2; *could*, pouvoir; *delighted in*, se plaire en; *of light*, lumineux; *darkness*, ténèbres.

(2.) *There is*, voilà; *about*, sur; *Carpathus*, Carpathie; *to be*, de; *they*, on; *again and again*, sans cesse; *by*, de; *when I recalled to*, passer dans, inf-3; *integrity*, bonne loi.

(3.) *Did not think themselves obliged to*, se croire dispensé de; *was afraid* lest, craindre que; *break through*, percer. subj-2; *reach*, parvenir jusqu'à; *in spite of*, malgré; *raised in*, causer à; *effeminacy*, mollesse; *dominion*, ascendant; *treacherous*, perfide; *gained*, prendre; *threw*, plonger; *recovering*, rentrer en.

tenses, that the period of time expressed by the future absolute, may, or may not, be determined, as,

*J'irai à la campagne, or j'irai demain à la campagne,*  
while, in the future anterior, the time is necessarily determined, as,

*J'aurai fini, quand vous arriverez.* ¶

#### CONDITIONAL.

The conditional is used—1. To express a wish, as,

*Que je serais, or, que j'aurais été* How glad I should be, or should  
*content de réussir dans cette* have been, to succeed in that  
*affaire!* affair.

2. With *si*, if, whether, expressing a doubt, as,

*Demandez-lui s'il serait venu* Ask him whether he would have  
*avec nous supposé qu'il n'eût* come with us, had he not  
*pas eu affaire,* been busy.

3. Before, or after the imperfect, or pluperfect of the indicative, preceded by *si*, as,

*Nous nous épargnerions bien des* We should spare ourselves  
*peines, si nous savions modérer* much pain, did we know how  
*nos désirs,* to moderate our desires.

#### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. Remember that youth is but a flower, which *will wither* almost as soon as it \* opens. Thou *will see thyself* gradually changed. Smiling graces, sweet pleasures, strength, health, and joy, *will vanish* like a pleasing dream; nothing but the sad remembrance will be left thee.

2. I *shall* next year *take* a journey into Greece, and I am preparing myself for it by reading the travels of the young Anacharsis.

3. When you *have read* the celebrated discourse of Bossuet on Universal History, and *studied* in it the causes of the rise and fall of states, you *will be* less astonished at the revolutions more or less sudden, that modern empires have experienced, which appeared to you in the most flourishing state.

(1.) *Will wither*, (will be almost as soon withered,) *sécher*; *opens*, *éclore*; *gradually*, *insensiblement*; *lively*, *riant*; *pleasing*, *beau*; *nothing will be left*, *il n'en restera*.

(2.) *Take*, *faire*; *for it*, *y*; *reading*, *lecture de*; (*the travels*, *celui*.)

(3.) *Have read*, *ind-8*; *and*, *que vous*, *ind-7*; *in it*, *y*; *rise*, *grandeur*; *fall*, *chute*; *sudden*, *subite*; (*that have experienced the modern empires, which, &c.*) *appeared*, *ind-2*.

*Vous auriez été plus heureux, si vous aviez suivi mes conseils,* You would have been more happy, if you had followed my advice.

4. With *quand*, used instead of *si*, *quoique*, or *quand même*; the verb preceded by *quand* is generally in one of the conditionals, as,

*Quand l'avare posséderait tout l'or du monde, il ne serait pas encore content,* Were the miser to possess all the gold in the world, still he would not be satisfied.

5. Lastly, for various tenses of the indicative, as,  
*Croiriez-vous votre fils ingrat?* Could you think your son ungrateful?

which means, *croyez-vous*, &c.

*L'auriez-vous soupçonné d'un tel vice?* Could you have suspected him of such a vice?

which means, *l'avez-vous*, &c.

*Quelle raison pourrait m'empêcher d'aller vous voir?* What cause could prevent me from coming to see you?

which means, *quelle cause pourra*, &c.†

### † EXERCISE ON THE CONDITIONAL.

1. If it *were* even possible for men always to act conformably to equity, as it is the multitude that must judge their conduct, the wicked would always blame and contradict them from malignity, and the good sometimes from mistake.

2. What false steps I *should have made* but for you, at my entrance into the world!

3. But for your counsels, I *should have failed* in this undertaking.

4. How satisfied I *should have been*, if you had sooner informed me of your happiness!

5. If we gave to infancy none but just and clear notions, *there would not be* by far so many false wits in the world.

6. *Had* Alexander conquered the whole world, his ambition

(1.) *If even*, quand même; *were*, cond-1; *for men*, (that men;) *to act*, sub-2; *judge*, juger de; *would blame*, ind-7; *contradict*, croiser, ind-7.

(2.) *What*, que de; *steps*, démarche; *but for*, sans.

(3.) *But for*, sans; *failed*, échouer.

(4.) *How*, que.

(5.) *We*, on; *there would not be by far so many*, il y aurait bien moins de.

(6.) (When Alexander would have conquered;) *straitened*, trop à l'étroit.

## REMARK ON THE USE OF THE CONDITIONAL AND FUTURE.

Foreigners are very apt to use the future, or the conditional, after *si*, when meaning *supposé que*. They say,

*J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il* I shall go into the country to-  
*fera beau,* tomorrow, if the weather be fine  
*Vous auriez vu le roi, si vous* You would have seen the king  
*seriez venu,* if you had come.

The impropriety of this construction will be obviated by attending to the following

RULE. When a verb is preceded by *si*, meaning *supposé que*, the present is used instead of the future absolute; the preterit indefinite instead of the future anterior; the imperfect instead of the conditional present, and the pluperfect instead of the conditional past.

## EXAMPLES.

*J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il* I shall go to-morrow into the  
*fait beau,* country, if it be fine weather.  
*Il aura eu l'avantage, s'il a suivi* He will have had the advan-  
*vos conseils,* tage, if he has followed your  
*Je serais content, si je vous voyais* I should be pleased, if I saw  
*appliqué,* you apply to study.  
*J'aurais été content, si je vous* I should have been pleased, if  
*avais vu appliqué,* I had seen you attentive to  
your studies.

would not have been satisfied; he would still have found himself straitened in it.

7. Could you believe him vain enough to aspire to that high degree of honour?

8. Could you ever have thought him capable of deserting the good cause, to go and side with rebels?

9. Would you renounce being useful to the present generation, because envy fastens on you?

(8.) *Deserting*, abandonner; *to go and side with*, pour se ranger sous les drapeaux de.

(9.) *Renounce*, renoncer à; *fastens*, s'attacher; *on you*, à vos pas



REMARK. This rule does not hold good, either when *si* is placed between two verbs, the first of which implies doubt, uncertainty, as,

*Je ne sais s'il viendra,*

Or, with the second conditional past, as,

*Vous m'eussiez trouvé, si vous fussiez venu ce matin.‡*

#### SUBJUNCTIVE.

There are conjunctions which govern the indicative, (p. 300,) and others which govern the subjunctive, (p. 301.) We call *principal proposition* the phrase which is followed by the conjunction, and *incidental*, or *sub-*

#### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. A young man who is just entering the career of letters, *will conciliate* the good will of the public, *if he consider* his first successes only as an encouragement to do better.

2. That absurd criticism *will have amused* only fools or malicious people, \* *if attention has been paid* to the spirit that pervades the whole, and the manner in which it is written.

3. Life *would possess* many more sweets and charms, *if men*, instead of tearing one another to pieces, *formed* but one society of brethren.

4. The Athenians *would have found* in the young Alcibiades the only man capable of ensuring their superiority in Greece, *had not* that vain thoughtless people *forced* him, by an unjust, or, at least, imprudent sentence, to banish himself from his country.

5. I know not *whether* reason *will soon triumph* over prejudice and ignorance, but I am certain it will be the case sooner or later.

6. Rome *would have never attained* that high degree of splendour and glory which astonishes us, *had it not extended* its conquests as much by its policy as by its arms.

(1.) *Is just entering*, débiter dans; *career*, carrière; *conciliate* s'attirer; *good will*, bienveillance; *consider*, regarder.

(2.) *Fools*, sot; *malicious*, méchant; *paid*, faire; *pervades the whole*, régner d'un bout à l'autre; *in which*, dont.

(3.) *Possess*, avoir; *tearing one another to pieces*, s'entredéchirer.

(4.) *Superiority*, prépondérance; *thoughtless*, léger; *sentence*, condamnation.

(5.) *Know*, savoir; *it will be the case*, cela être.

(6.) *Attained*, parvenir à; *policy*, politique.

*ordinate proposition*, that which is placed after the conjunction. In this sentence,

*Je crois que vous aimez à jouer.*

*Je crois* is the principal proposition, and *vous aimez à jouer* is the subordinate proposition: *que* is the conjunction that unites the two phrases.

**GENERAL RULE.** The verb of the *subordinate* proposition must be put in the *indicative*, when the verb of the *principal* proposition expresses affirmation, in a direct, positive, and independent manner; but it is put in the *subjunctive*, when that of the *principal* proposition expresses doubt, wish, or uncertainty.

<i>Je sais qu'il est surpris,</i>	I know he is surprised.
<i>Je crois qu'il viendra,</i>	I believe he will come.
<i>Je doute qu'il soit surpris,</i>	I doubt his being surprised.
<i>Je doute qu'il vienne,</i>	I doubt his coming.
<i>Je souhaite qu'il réussisse,</i>	I wish he may succeed.
<i>Je tremble qu'il ne succombe,</i> ¶	I tremble lest he should fail.

#### ¶ EXERCISE ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

1. The glory which has been ascribed to the Egyptians, of being the most grateful of all men, *shows* that *they were* likewise the most sociable.

2. In Egypt, when it *was proved* that the conduct of a dead man *\* had been* bad, they condemned his memory, and he was denied burial.

3. I *am sure* that by moderation, mildness, and politeness, you *will disarm* even *\* envy* itself.

4. The new philosophers *say* that colour *is* a sensation of the soul.

5. I *believe* you are as honest and disinterested as you seem to be.

6. I *doubt* whether the Romans *would ever have triumphed* over the Gauls, if the different chiefs of this warlike people had not been disunited.

7. I *could wish* that the love, which we ought to have for one another, *were* the principle of all our actions, as it is the basis of all virtues.

(1.) Which has, &c. qu'on; ascribed, donner; grateful, reconnaissant, sing.; men, peuple. (2.) Was denied, priver de; burial, sépulture.

(3.) By, avec; politeness, honnêteté.

(5.) Seem to be, le paraître.

(6.) Whether, que.

*Do, did, will, would, should, can, could, may, and might*, are sometimes, with respect to the French language, simply signs of tenses, at others they are real verbs.

There can be no difficulty about *do* and *did*; these are mere expletives, denoting interrogation, negation, or merely emphasis, when they are joined to a verb.

<i>I do love,</i>	<i>J'aime.</i>
<i>I did love,</i>	<i>J'aimais, or, j'aimai.</i>
<i>Do I love?</i>	<i>Aimé-je?</i>
<i>Did I love?</i>	<i>Aimais-je, or, aimai-je?</i>
<i>I do not love,</i>	<i>Je n'aime pas.</i>
<i>I did not love,</i>	<i>Je n'aimais pas, or, je n'aimai pas.</i>

In all these cases they are not expressed in French. But when they are followed by a noun, or a pronoun, then they are real verbs, and mean, *faire*.

<i>Do me that favour,</i>	<i>Faites-moi ce plaisir.</i>
<i>He did it,</i>	<i>Il le fit.</i>

In short, by any thing else, except the verb with which they are necessarily connected, as,

<i>He did more than could have been expected,</i>	<i>Il fit plus qu'on n'eût pu espérer.</i>
---	--

*Should* is only a sign of the conditional, when it expresses a thing which may happen upon some condition.

<i>I should like a country life, if my affairs would permit me to indulge my inclination,</i>	<i>J'aimerais la vie champêtre, si mes affaires me permettaient de suivre mon goût.</i>
---	---

But when it implies duty or obligation, it is a verb, and must be expressed by the verb *devoir*, as,

8. *Fear*, lest it *should be said* that you feed upon chimeras, and that you take the shadow for the reality.

9. The new philosophers *will have* colour *to be* a sensation of the soul.

10. I *will have* you *to be* as honest and disinterested as you seem to be.

(8.) *It, on ne ; feed upon, se repaître de.*

(9.) *Will have, vouloir ; colour to be, (that colour be.)*

*We should never swerve from the path of virtue,*      *Nous ne devrions jamais nous écarter du sentier de la vertu.*

*Can, could, may, and might*, are not so difficult as they appear at first sight; because, in almost every instance, there is no impropriety in rendering them by the verb *pouvoir*. In general the first two imply a power, a possibility, a capability, &c. and the others, a permission, probability, &c.

*Do, did, shall, will, &c.* in English, are sometimes used elliptically in the answers to interrogative sentences. The French answer with the repetition of the verb, accompanied with a pronoun expressive of the idea of the interrogative sentence, as,

*Will you do your exercise to-day?—Yes, I will.*      *Ferez-vous votre thème aujourd'hui?—Oui, je le ferai.*

#### RELATIONS BETWEEN THE TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE.

**RULE.** When the first verb is in the imperfect, the preterit, or the pluperfect, and the second denotes a temporary action, this second verb is put in the imperfect, if we mean to express a present.

##### EXAMPLE.

*Je croyais, j'ai cru, j'avais cru que vous étudiez les mathématiques,*      *I thought, I have thought, I had thought that you were studying mathematics.*

—In the pluperfect, if we mean to express a past.

##### EXAMPLE.

*Il m'assura qu'il n'avait jamais tant ri,*      *He assured me that he had never laughed so much.*

—And in the present of the conditional, if we mean to express a future absolute.

##### EXAMPLE.

*On m'a dit que votre frère viendrait à Londres l'hiver prochain,*      *I was told your brother would come to town next winter.*

But, although the first verb may be in some of these



tenses, yet the second is put in the present, when this second verb expresses a thing which is true at all times.

## EXAMPLE.

*Je vous disais, je vous ai dit, je vous avais dit, que la santé fait la félicité du corps, et le savoir celle de l'âme,* I told you, I have told you, I had told you, that health constitutes the happiness of the body, and knowledge that of the soul.

REMARK. In phrases where the imperfect is preceded by *que*, it denotes, sometimes a past, sometimes a present, with respect to the preceding verb. It denotes a past, when the verb which is joined to it by the conjunction *que* is in the present, or future.

## EXAMPLE.

*Vous savez, or vous saurez que le peuple Romain était aussi avide qu'ambitieux,* You know, or you must know, that the Romans were a people as covetous as they were ambitious.

But it denotes a present, when the verb, which precedes it, is in the imperfect, one of the preterits, or the pluperfect.

## EXAMPLE.

*On disait, on a dit, on avait dit que Phocion était le plus grand et le plus honnête homme de son temps,* It was said, it has been said, it had been said, that Phocion was the greatest and most upright man of his age.  
*Dès qu'on eut appris à Athènes qu' Alcibiade était à Lacédémone, on se repentit de la précipitation avec laquelle on l'avait condamné,* As soon as it was known at Athens that Alcibiades was at Lacedemon, the Athenians repented of the precipitation with which they had condemned him.

Nevertheless, the imperfect denotes the past, in this last instance, when it signifies an action which was past before that which is expressed by the first verb.

## EXAMPLE.

*En lisant l'histoire des temps héroïques, vous devez avoir remarqué que ces hommes dont on a fait des demi-dieux, étaient des chefs féroces et barbares, dignes à peine du nom d'homme,†* In reading the history of heroic times, you must have remarked that those men who have been made demi-gods, were ferocious and barbarous chiefs, scarcely deserving the name of men.

## RELATIONS BETWEEN THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE AND THOSE OF THE INDICATIVE.

RULE I. When the verb of the principal proposition is in the present, or future, that of the subordinate proposition is put in the present of the subjunctive, to express a present, or future; but in the preterit, to express a past. We say,

## † EXERCISE.

1. *I thought you were not ignorant* that, to teach others the principles of an art or science, it is necessary to have experience and skill.

2. *I have been told* that your sweetest occupation *was* to form your taste, your heart, and your understanding.

3. Darius, in his flight, being \* reduced to the necessity of drinking water muddy and infected by dead bodies, *affirmed* that he never *had drunk* with so much pleasure.

4. *Care has been taken* to inculcate in me, from infancy, that *I should succeed* in the world, only in proportion as I should join to the desire of pleasing, a great deal of gentleness and civility.

5. *Ovid has said*, that study *softens* the manners and *corrects* every thing that is found in us rude and barbarous.

6. *You know* that those pretended heroes, whom Pagan antiquity has made gods, *were* only barbarous and ferocious kings, who overran the earth, not so much to conquer as to ravage it, and who left every where traces of their fury and of their vices.

7. *It has been said of* Pericles, that his eloquence was like a thunderbolt, which nothing could resist.

8. As soon as Aristides *had said*, that the proposal of Themistocles *was* unjust, the whole people *exclaimed*, that they must not think of it any longer.

9. Had you read the history of the early ages, *you would know* that Egypt *was* the most enlightened country in the universe, and the original spot \* whence knowledge *spread* into Greece and the neighbouring countries.

(1.) *Were ignorant*, ignorer; *teach*, instruire dans; *it is necessary*, avoir besoin; *skill*, habileté. (2.) *I have*, &c. (by the active voice) on.

(3.) *Flight*, déroute; *muddy*, bourbeux; *affirmed*, assurer.

(4.) *Care has*, &c. (active voice) on avoir; *in me*, me; *in proportion*, autant; *civility*, honnêteté. (5.) *Corrects*, effacer; *is found*, se trouver de.

(6.) *Overran*, parcourir; *not so much*, moins.

(7.) *It*, on; *thunderbolt*, foudre, m.; (to) *which*.

(8.) *Exclaimed*, s'écrier; *they must*, falloir, ind-2; *of it*, y; *any longer*, plus.

(9.) *Ages*, temps; *the original spot* \* whence, celui d'où; *neighbouring*, circonvoisin; *countries*, lieu.

*Il faut que celui qui parle se mette à la portée de celui qui l'écoute,*

*Il voudra que votre frère soit de la partie,*

But we must say,

*Pour s'être élevé à ce point de grandeur, il faut que Rome ait eu une suite non interrompue de grands hommes,*

He that speaks should accommodate himself to the understanding of him that listens.

He will wish your brother to be one of the party.

To have risen to that pitch of grandeur, Rome must have had an uninterrupted succession of great men.

EXCEPTION. Though the first verb be in the present, or future, yet the second may be put in the imperfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, when some conditional expression is introduced into the sentence.

*Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait, qui ne fût très-mortifié, s'il savait tout ce qu'on pense de lui,*

There is no man, whatever merit he may have, that would not feel very much mortified, were he to know all that is thought of him.

*Où trouvera-t-on un homme qui ne fit la même faute, s'il était exposé aux mêmes tentations?*

Where will you find the man who would not have committed the same error, had he been exposed to the same temptations?

*Je doute que votre frère eût réussi sans votre assistance †*

I doubt whether your brother would have succeeded, had it not been for your assistance.

### ‡ EXERCISE.

1. He who wishes to teach an art, must *know* it thoroughly, he must *give* none but clear, precise, and well-digested notions of it: he must *instil* them, one by one, into the minds of his pupils, and, above all, he must not overburden their memory with useless, or unimportant rules.

2. He must *yield* to the force of truth, when they *shall have suffered* it to appear in its real light.

3. There is no work, however perfect people may suppose it, that would not be liable to criticism, if it were examined with severity, and in every point of view.

(1.) *It must* (that he who, &c. know it;) *he must*, (not repeated,) *que*; *instil*, faire entrer; *by*, à; *overburden*, surcharger; *unimportant*, insignificant.

(2.) (It must, ind-7, that he;) *yield*, se rendre; *suffered*, permettre; *it to appear*, (that it appear;) *real light*, vrai jour.

(3.) *Would be liable*, preter, subj-2; *with severity*, à la rigueur; *in*, sous; *point of view*, face.

**RULE II.** When the first verb is in the imperfect, either of the preterits, the pluperfect, or either of the conditionals, the second is put in the imperfect of the subjunctive, if we mean to express a present, or future; but it is put in the pluperfect, if we wish to express a past.

*Je voulais, j'ai voulu, j'eus voulu, je voudrais, or j'eusse voulu que vous finissiez cette affaire.*

*Je ne savais pas, je n'ai pas su, &c. que vous eussiez étudié les mathématiques.*

**REMARK.** With the preterit indefinite the second verb is put in the present, if it expresses an action which is, or may be done at all times, as,

<i>Dieu a entouré les yeux de tuniques fort minces, transparentes au dehors, afin qu'on puisse voir à travers,</i>	God has surrounded the eyes with very thin tunics, transparent on the outside, that we may see through them.
--	--

And in the preterit, if we mean to express a past, as;

<i>Il a fallu qu'il ait sollicité ses juges, ¶</i>	He must have been obliged to solicit his judges.
--	--

4. I doubt whether his piece would have had the approbation of *connoisseurs*, if he had not determined to make in it the changes you judged necessary.

(4.) *Approbation, suffrage; had determined, se décider; in it, y; judged, ind-4.*

### ¶ EXERCISE.

1. Mr. de Turenne never *would* buy any thing on credit, of tradesmen, for fear, he used to say, they *should lose* a great part of their demand, if he happened to be killed. All the workmen who were employed about his house, had orders to bring in their bill, before he set out for the campaign, and they were regularly paid.

2. It *would be better*, for a man who truly loves himself, to *lose* his life, than to forfeit his honour by some base and shameful action.

3. Lycurgus, in one of his laws, *had forbidden* to light home \*

(1.) *Would, vouloir, ind-2; buy on credit, prendre à crédit; of, chez; happened, venir; were employed, travailler; about, pour; bills, mémoire; he, on; set out for, se mettre en.*

(2.) *To lose, (that he would lose;) forfeit, ternir.*

(3.) *In, par; to light, que on éclairer, subj-2; that, afin que; reach their houses, se rendre chez eux; getting intoxicated, s'enivrer.*



In interrogative and negative sentences, the second verb is generally put in the subjunctive, as,

*Quel est l'insensé qui tienne pour sûr qu'il vivra demain ?*  
*Vous ne nous persuadiez pas que les choses pussent tourner si mal.*

The verb is likewise in the subjunctive after the superlative relative, and frequently after an impersonal verb, as,

*Le meilleur cortège qu'un prince puisse avoir, c'est le cœur de ses sujets.*

The subjunctive is elegantly used in elliptical phrases, where the principal proposition is omitted, as,

<i>Qu'il vive ! (je souhaite qu'il,)</i>	May he live !
<i>Qu'il se soit oublié jusqu'à ce point ! (je suis surpris qu'il,)</i>	That he should have so far forgotten himself !
<i>Qui m'aime, me suive ! (je veux que celui qui,)</i>	Whoever loves me let him follow me.
<i>Heureux l'homme qui peut, ne fût-ce que dans sa vieillesse, jouir de toute la force de sa raison ! (quand ce ne serait que,)+</i>	Happy the man that can, were it only in his old age, enjoy the whole strength of his reason.

those who came from a feast in the evening, that the fear of not being able to reach their houses might *prevent* then from getting intoxicated.

4. People *used* the bark of trees, or skins, to write upon, \* before paper *was* known.

5. Go and \* ask that old man ; for whom are you planting ? he will answer you : for the immortal gods, who *have ordered* both that I *should profit* by the labour of those that have preceded me, and that those who should come after me, *should profit* by mine.

(4.) *People*, on ; *bark*, écorce ; *skins*, peau ; *known*, en usage.

(5.) *Have ordered*, vouloir ; *both*, et ; *by*, de.

### † EXERCISE.

1. *Is there any one* who does not *feel* that nothing is more degrading in a writer, than the pains he takes to express ordinary and common things in a singular and pompous style.

2. *Do you think that*, in forming the republic of bees, God *has*

(1.) *Is degrading in*, dégrader ; *in*, de.

(2.) *Had in view*, vouloir.

REMARK. The relative pronouns *qui, que, quel, dont,* and *où,* govern the subjunctive in similar circumstances. ‡

---

*Further Observations upon the* CONDITIONAL *and*  
SUBJUNCTIVE.

We have said the English auxiliaries *should, would, could, may, and might,* are not always to be considered as essentially and necessarily appertaining to the conditional and subjunctive. Indeed it seldom happens that the French tenses are the same as the English, at

---

*not had* in view to teach kings to govern with gentleness, and subjects to obey with love ?

3. You *will never be at peace,* either with yourself or with others, unless you seriously endeavour to restrain your natural impetuosity.

---

(3.) *Be at peace, avoir la paix ; either, ni ; or, ni ; endeavour, s'appliquer.*

---

‡ EXERCISE.

1. *Who is the writer* that does not sometimes *experience* moments of sterility and languor ?

2. *There is not in the heart of man* a good impulse that God does not *produce.*

3. *Choose a retreat* where you *may be quiet,* a post whence you *may defend* yourself.

4. The most flattering reward that a man can reap from his labours, is the esteem of an enlightened public.

5. May he live, reign, and long constitute the happiness of a nation, which he loves, and by which he is adored !

6. That he should thus degrade himself, is what posterity will find very difficult to believe.

7. A man just and firm is not shaken, either by the clamours of an inconsiderate mob, or by the threats of an imperious tyrant: though \* the whole world *were* to fall into ruins, he would be struck by it, but not moved.

---

(2.) *Impulse, mouvement.*

(3.) *May, pouvoir.*

(6.) (*May he, repeated before every verb ;*) *constitute, faire ; which he loves, chérir.*

(6.) *Find difficult, avoir de la peine ; believe, se persuader.*

(7.) *Is shaken, ébranler ; inconsiderate, insensé ; mob, populace ; imperious, fier ; were, devoir ; to fall into ruins, s'écrouler.*

least in subordinate, though they may be in the principal propositions. For instance,

*I wish you would come to-night,*

Cannot be translated by

*Je souhaite que vous viendriez ce soir,*

Because, "when the verb of the principal proposition is in the present, the verb of the subordinate proposition is put in the present of the subjunctive, if we mean to express a future." Therefore we must say,

*Je souhaite que vous veniez.*

Or, "if the first verb is in either of the conditionals, the second must be in the imperfect of the subjunctive." For which reason we must also say,

*Je voudrais que vous vinssiez.* (See Rule II.)

Now, in the first example, *que vous veniez* is marked in the conjunction of the verb by *that you may come*, and in the second, *que vous vinssiez*, by, *that you might come*, neither of which is in the examples given. Again,

*Il n'y a personne qui le croie.*

Cannot be translated by, *there is nobody who* may believe it, although *may* is the sign of the subjunctive in the meaning; but the meaning is,

*There is nobody that believes it, or simply, nobody believes it.*

#### RELATIONS BETWEEN THE TENSES OF THE DIFFERENT MOODS.

REMARK. Our intention is not to give the relations which all the tenses bear to each other, but simply to mention some of the principal.

##### *Relations of the Indicative.*

To the imperfect are subjoined three tenses.

STANDARD.—*Je lisais* { *quand vous écriviez*  
                                  { *quand vous avez écrit*  
                                  { *quand vous écrivîtes.*

The preterit anterior requires the preterit definite, as,  
*quand j'eus fini, vous entrâtes.*

To the pluperfect are subjoined the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the preterit anterior, and the imperfect.

STANDARDS.—*J'avais lu* { *quand vous entrâtes*  
*quand vous êtes entré*  
*quand vous fûtes entré*  
*quand vous entriez.*

To the preterit anterior indefinite is subjoined the preterit indefinite, as, *quand j'ai eu dîné, vous êtes entré.*

In conjunction with *si*, for *supposé que*, the future absolute requires the present, and the future anterior, the preterit indefinite.

STANDARD.— { *Vous partirez, si je veux.*  
*Il sera parti, si vous l'avez voulu.*

### *Relations to the Conditional and of the Conditional.*

In conjunction with *si*, for *supposé que*, the conditional present is accompanied by the imperfect, and the first conditional past by the pluperfect, or by the second conditional past.

STANDARDS.— { *Vous partiriez, si je le voulais.*  
*Vous seriez parti* { *si je l'avais voulu*  
*si je l'eusse voulu.*

The tenses of the conditional present, and of the two conditionals past, are likewise accompanied by themselves.

STANDARDS.— { *Quand l'avare posséderait tout l'or du monde,*  
*il ne serait pas encore content.*  
*Quand Alexandre aurait conquis tout l'univers,*  
*il n'aurait pas été content.*  
*Vous fussiez parti, si je l'eusse voulu.*

It has been observed that when two words are joined by the conjunction *que*, the second verb is put sometimes in the indicative and sometimes in the subjunctive.

### *Relations of the Present and Future Absolute, of the Indicative to the Tenses of their own Mood, and of the Conditional.*

These two tenses may be accompanied by all the tenses of the indicative and conditional.



STANDARD.—	{	<i>On dit</i> <i>On dira</i> }	que	<i>vous partez aujourd'hui</i>
				<i>vous partirez demain</i>
				<i>vous serez parti, quand, &amp;c.</i>
				<i>vous partiez hier</i>
				<i>vous partîtes hier</i>
				<i>vous êtes parti ce matin</i>
				<i>vous fûtes parti hier, quand, &amp;c.</i>
				<i>vous étiez parti hier, quand, &amp;c.</i>
				<i>vous partiriez aujourd'hui, si, &amp;c.</i>
				<i>vous seriez parti hier, si, &amp;c.</i>
				<i>vous fussiez parti plus tôt, si, &amp;c.</i>

REMARK. The same relation subsists when the sentence is negative; except that for the present absolute of the indicative, the present of the subjunctive is substituted. Instead of, *on ne dit pas que vous partez aujourd'hui*; the genius of the French language requires that we should say, *on ne dit pas que vous partiez aujourd'hui*.

The imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, and the pluperfect, are accompanied either by the imperfect, or by the pluperfect.

STANDARDS.—	{	<i>On disait</i> <i>On dit hier</i> <i>On a dit</i> <i>On avait dit</i> }	que	<i>vous partiez aujourd'hui</i>
				<i>vous étiez parti.</i>

The future anterior requires the preterit indefinite, as, *on aura dit que vous avez menti*.

The conditional present may be accompanied by the present, the imperfect, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, the future of the indicative, as well as by the three conditionals.

STANDARDS.—	<i>On croirait.</i>	{	<i>qu'il se trompe</i>
			<i>qu'il se trompait</i>
			<i>qu'il s'est trompé</i>
			<i>qu'il s'était trompé</i>
			<i>qu'il se trompera</i>
			<i>qu'il se tromperait, si, &amp;c.</i>
			<i>qu'il se serait trompé, si, &amp;c.</i>
			<i>qu'il se fût trompé, si, &amp;c.</i>

The first conditional past may be accompanied by the imperfect, the pluperfect, as well as by the two other conditionals.

STANDARDS.—*On auroit cru*  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{qu'il tombait} \\ \textit{qu'il était tombé} \\ \textit{qu'il serait tombé} \\ \textit{qu'il fût tombé.} \end{array} \right.$

The second conditional past may be accompanied by the same tenses.

### *Principal Relations with the Subjunctive.*

To the present, the future-absolute, and the future anterior of the indicative, is generally subjoined the present of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Il veut} \\ \textit{Il voudra} \\ \textit{Il aura voulu} \end{array} \right\} \textit{que vous partiez.}$

To the imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, and the preterit anterior, may be subjoined the imperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Je voulais} \\ \textit{Je voulus} \\ \textit{J'ai voulu} \\ \textit{J'avais voulu} \\ \textit{J'eus voulu} \end{array} \right\} \textit{que vous partissiez.}$

To the future anterior the preterit of the subjunctive, as: *Il aura voulu qu'il soit parti.*

The conditional present is accompanied either by the imperfect, or by the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Je voudrais que} \end{array} \right\} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{vous partissiez.} \\ \textit{vous fussiez parti.} \end{array} \right.$

To the first and second conditionals past is subjoined the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARD.— $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{J'aurais voulu} \\ \textit{J'eusse voulu} \end{array} \right\} \textit{que vous fussiez parti.}$   
&c. &c. &c. &c.

### *Of the Infinitive.*

The preposition *to* before an infinitive, is, according to circumstances, rendered either by *pour*, by *à*, or by *de*; sometimes even, it is not expressed at all.

When *to* means *in order to*, it is expressed in French, by *pour*, as,

*He came to speak to me,*

*Il vint pour me parler.*

As for the other two cases, there is hardly any fixed rule to distinguish whether *à* or *de* is to be used; the regimen which the preceding French verb requires after it is the only guide. Thus,

*He likes to play*, will be expressed by *il aime à jouer*; *he told me to go*, by *il me dit d'aller*; and *he preferred dying*, by *il aimait mieux mourir*.

The participle present is used in English both as a substantive and an adjective, and frequently instead of the present of the infinitive.

*His ruling passion is hunting*,      *Sa passion dominante est la chasse.*

*He is gone a walking*,      *Il est allé se promener.*

*Prevent him from doing mischief*,      *Empêchez-le de faire le mal.*

*There is a pleasure in silencing great talkers*,      *Il y a plaisir à fermer la bouche aux grands parleurs.*

It likewise takes almost every other preposition. In the first of the above examples it is translated by the substantive; in the second by the verbal adjective; and in the others by the present of the infinitive. But sometimes it must be expressed by the relative *qui*, with the verb in the indicative, especially when a different mode might create any ambiguity in the sense; as,

*I met them riding post*,      *Je les ai rencontrés qui courraient la poste.*

Sometimes it must be expressed by the conjunction *que*, with the verb in the indicative, or in the subjunctive, as circumstances may require: this is when the participle present is preceded by a possessive pronoun, as,

*The fear of his coming vexed us*,      *La crainte qu'il ne vint nous tourmentait.*

*I doubt his being faithful*,      *Je doute qu'il soit fidèle, &c.*

It may be proper to observe that, in French, the preposition *en* alone is followed by the participle present. All other prepositions require the present of the infinitive.

Foreigners are apt to mistake in the use of the participle present, because they do not consider that, as it expresses an incidental proposition, it must evidently relate to the word which it restrains and modifies.

**RULE.** The participle present always forming a phrase

incidental and subordinate to another, must necessarily relate to the subject of the principal phrase, when it is not preceded by another noun, as in this sentence:

*Je ne puis vous accompagner à la campagne, ayant des affaires qui exigent ici ma présence,* I cannot accompany you into the country, having some business that requires my presence here.

The participle present *ayant* relates to the subject *je*, since the subordinate proposition, formed by *ayant*, could have no kind of relation to the principal proposition, if it could not be resolved into this, *parce que j'ai des affaires qui*, &c. But, in this sentence;

*Combien voyons-nous de gens, qui, connaissant le prix du temps, le perdent mal-à-propos!* How many people do we see, who, knowing the value of time, waste it improperly!

*Connaissant* relates to the substantive *gens*, because this is the word which it restrains and modifies, and because the relative *qui*, placed between that substantive as the regimen, and the participle present, obviates every kind of ambiguity.

REMARK 1. Two participles ought never to be used together without being united by a conjunction, as, &c.

*C'est un homme aimant et craignant Dieu,* He is a man loving and fearing God.

2. The relative *en* ought never to be put either before a participle present, or before a gerund. We cannot say:

*Je vous ai remis mon fils entre les mains, en voulant faire quelque chose de bon.*

Because the sense would be ambiguous: for, the meaning is not:

*As I wish to do something good, or, as I wish to do well, I have put my son into your hands,*

But,

*I have put my son into your hands, as I wish to make something of him.*

We should say: *Voulant en faire*, &c.

Likewise this sentence would be improper:

*Le prince tempère la rigueur du pouvoir, en en partageant les fonctions,*

on account of the repetition of the word *en*, used in two



different senses, viz., as a preposition and a relative. Another turn must be then adopted, as,

*C'est en partageant les fonctions du pouvoir, qu'un prince en tempère la rigueur.*

## CHAP. VI.

### OF PREPOSITIONS.

The office of prepositions is to bring the two terms between which they are placed, into a state of relation. And that relation is generally expressed by their own signification, as,

*Avec, sur, pendant, dans, &c.*

But, *à, de, and en*, express it, either by their primitive and proper meaning, or figuratively, and by extension; so that, in this last case, they are merely prepositions serving to unite the two terms; whence it happens, that they often express, either the same relations that others do, or opposite relations. For instance, in these two sentences:

*Approchez-vous du feu,*

Come near the fire.

*Eloignez-vous du feu,*

Go from the fire.

*De* merely establishes a relation between the two terms, without expressing in the first, the relation of approximation, or in the second, the relation of distance. In order, therefore, to form a just idea of *these three* propositions, it is of importance to consider only their primitive and proper signification.

*En* and *dans* have nearly the same meaning; but they differ in this, that the former is used in a more vague, the latter in a more determinate sense, as:

*J'étais en Angleterre, dans la province de Middlesex.*

From what has just been said, it follows then, that *en*, on account of its indeterminate nature, ought not to be followed by the article, except in a small number of phrases sanctioned by usage; such are,

*En la présence de Dieu; en la grand' chambre du parlement; en l'absence d'un tel; en l'année mil huit cent dix-sept, &c.*

with respect to the expressions

*En l'honneur, en l'âge*, it is better to say, *à l'honneur, à l'âge.*

*Avant* is a preposition in this phrase :

*Avant le jour,* Before day-light.

But it is an adverb in this :

*N'allez pas si avant,* Do not go so forward.

Some other prepositions are likewise occasionally adverbs.

*Autour* and *alentour*, must not be confounded ; *autour* is a preposition, and *alentour* an adverb, thus ;

*Tous les grands étaient autour du trône,* All the grandees stood round the throne.

*Le roi était sur son trône, et les grands étaient alentour,* The king was upon the throne, and the grandees stood round.

*Avant* and *auparavant* are not used indifferently.

*Avant* is followed by a regimen, as,

*Avant Pâques,* Before Easter.

*Avant ce temps,* Before that time.

*Auparavant* is followed by no regimen, as,

*Si vous partez, venez me voir auparavant,* If you set off, come and see me first.

*Prêt à* and *près de*, are not the same expressions. *Prêt* is an adjective :

*Je suis prêt à faire ce que vous voudrez,* I am ready to do what you please.

But *près* is a preposition :

*Mon ouvrage est près d'être fini,* My work is nearly finished.

*Au travers* and *à travers* differ in this ; the first is followed by the preposition *de*, the second is not, as,

*Il se fit jour au travers des ennemis,* He fought his way through the enemy.

*Il se fit jour à travers les ennemis,*

*Avant* denotes priority of time and order, as,

*Il est arrivé avant moi, l'article se met avant le nom.*

*Devant* is used for *en présence*, *vis-à-vis*, as,

*Il a paru devant le juge ; il loge devant l'église.*

REMARK. *Devant* is likewise a preposition marking order, and is the opposite of *après*, as,

*Il a le pas devant moi,*                      He has precedence of me.  
*Si vous êtes pressé, courez de-*      If you are in a hurry, run be-  
*vant,*    fore.

## THE USE OF THE ARTICLE WITH PREPOSITIONS.

Some prepositions require the article before their regimen; others do not; and others again, sometimes admit, sometimes reject it.

RULE I. The following prepositions, generally require the article before the noun which they govern.

<i>avant,</i>	<i>depuis,</i>	<i>envers,</i>	<i>nonobstant,</i>	<i>selon,</i>
<i>après,</i>	<i>devant,</i>	<i>excepté,</i>	<i>parmi,</i>	<i>suivant,</i>
<i>chez,</i>	<i>derrière,</i>	<i>hors,</i>	<i>pendant,</i>	<i>touchant,</i>
<i>dans,</i>	<i>durant,</i>	<i>hormis,</i>	<i>pour,</i>	<i>vers,</i>
<i>avant l'aurore,</i>	<i>chez le prince,</i>	<i>envers les pauvres,</i>		
<i>après la promenade,</i>	<i>dans la maison,</i>	<i>devant l'église, &amp;c.</i>		

There are however exceptions, as,

<i>avant terme,</i>	<i>avant diner,</i>	<i>pour lit une pailleasse,</i>
<i>avant midi,</i>	<i>après diner,</i>	<i>depuis minuit, &amp;c.</i>

RULE II. A noun governed by the preposition *en*, is not, in general, preceded by the article, as,

*En ville, en campagne, en extase, en songe, en pièces, &c.*

REMARK. *L'armée est entrée en campagne*, means the army has taken the field; but *Mr. N. est allé à la campagne*, means Mr. N. is gone into the country.

RULE III. These eleven prepositions, *à, de, avec, contre, entre, malgré, outre, par, pour, sur, sans*, sometimes admit, sometimes reject the article, before their regimen.

If the article is used in these phrases:

*Jouer sur le velours,*  
*St. Paul veut de la subordination entre la femme et le mari.*  
*Sans les passions, où serait le mérite?*

It is suppressed in,

*Etre sur pied; un peu de façons ne gâte rien entre mari et femme.*

*Vivre sans passions, c'est vivre sans plaisirs, et sans peines.*

## REPETITION OF THE PREPOSITION.

RULE I. The prepositions *de, à, and en*, must be repeated before all the nouns which they govern, as,

*Voyons qui l'emportera de vous, de lui, ou de moi,*  
*Elle a de l'honnêteté, de la douceur, des grâces, et de l'esprit,*  
*La loi, que Dieu a gravée au fond de mon cœur, m'instruit de tout ce que je dois à l'auteur de mon être, au prochain, à moi-même,*

Let us see which of us will excel, you, he, or I.  
 She has politeness, sweetness, grace, and abilities.  
 The law which God has deeply engraven on my heart, instructs me in every thing I owe to the author of my being, to my neighbour, and to myself.

*En Asie, en Europe, en Afrique, et jusqu'en Amérique, on trouve le même préjugé,*

In Asia, in Europe, in Africa, and even in America, we find the same prejudice.

**RULE II.** The other prepositions, especially those consisting of two syllables, are generally repeated—before nouns, which have meanings totally different; but seldom before nouns that are nearly synonymous.

*Rien n'est moins selon Dieu et selon le monde,*

Nothing is less according to God and according to the world.

*Cette action est contre l'honneur et contre toute espèce de principes,*

That action is contrary to honour, and to every kind of principle.

But we ought to say,

*Il perd sa jeunesse dans la mollesse et la volupté,*

He wastes his youth in effeminacy and pleasure.

*Notre loi ne condamne personne sans l'avoir entendu et examiné,*

Our laws condemn nobody without having heard and examined him.

#### OF THE GOVERNMENT OF PREPOSITIONS.

Some prepositions govern nouns without the help of another preposition, as,

*Devant la maison,*  
*Hormis son frère,*  
*Sans son épée,*

Before the house.  
 Except his brother.  
 Without his sword, &c.

Others require the help of the preposition *dé*, as,

*Près de la maison,*  
*A l'insu de son frère,*  
*Au-dessus du pont,*

Near the house.  
 Unknown to his brother.  
 Above the bridge, &c.

These four, *jusque*, *par rapport*, *quant*, and *sauf*, are followed by the preposition *à*, as,

*Jusqu'au mois prochain,*  
*Quant à moi,*

Till the next month.  
 As for me, &c.



Practice alone can teach these different regimens.

**RULE.** A noun may be governed by two prepositions, provided they do not require different regimens; thus we say with propriety,

*Celui qui écrit selon les circonstances, pour et contre un parti, est un homme bien méprisable,*

He who writes according to circumstances, both for and against a party, is a very contemptible man.

But it would be wrong to say,

*Celui qui écrit en faveur et contre un parti, &c.*

because *en faveur* requires the preposition *de*.

**RULE.** Prepositions which, with their regimen, express a circumstance, are generally placed as nearly as possible to the word to which that circumstance relates, as,

*On voit des personnes qui, avec beaucoup d'esprit, commettent de très-grandes fautes,*

We see persons who, with a great deal of wit, commit very great faults.

*J'ai envoyé à la poste les lettres que vous avez écrites,*

I have sent to the post-office the letters which you have written.

*Croyez-vous pouvoir ramener par la douceur ces esprits égarés?*

Do you think you can reclaim by gentleness, those mistaken people?

If we attempt to alter the place of these prepositions, we shall find that the sentences will become ambiguous.

## CHAP. VII.

### OF THE ADVERB.

#### OF THE NEGATIVE *ne*.

Negation is expressed in French by *ne*, either alone or accompanied by *pas* or *point*. On this point the Academy has examined the four following questions:

1. Where is the place of the negatives?
2. When is *pas* to be used in preference to *point*, and *vice versa*?
3. When may both be omitted?
4. When *ought* both to be omitted?

As this subject is of very material importance, we shall treat it upon the plan of the Academy, and agreeably to their views.

FIRST QUESTION. Where is the place of the negatives?

*Ne* is always prefixed to the verb; but the place of *pas* and *point* is variable.

When the verb is in the infinitive, these are placed indifferently before, or after it; for we say,

*Pour ne point voir, or, pour ne voir pas.*

In the other moods, except the imperative, the tenses are either simple, or compound. In the simple tenses; *pas* or *point* is placed after the verb.

*Il ne parle pas; ne parle-t-il pas?*

In the compound tenses, it is placed between the auxiliary and the participle.

*Il n'a pas parlé; n'a-t-il pas parlé?*

In the imperative, it is placed after the verb.

*Ne badinez pas. Ne vous en allez pas.*

SECOND QUESTION. When is *pas* to be used in preference to *point*, and *vice versa*?

*Point* is a stronger negative than *pas*: besides, it denotes something permanent: *Il ne lit point*, means, he never reads.

*Pas* denotes something accidental: *Il ne lit pas*, means, he does not read now, or he is not reading.

*Point de* denotes an absolute negation. Thus:

*Il n'a point d'esprit*, is to say, he has no wit at all.

*Pas de* allows the liberty of a reserve. So:

*Il n'a pas d'esprit*, is to say, he has nothing of what can be called wit.

Hence, the Academy concludes, that *pas* is more proper,

1. Before *plus, moins, si, autant*, and other words denoting comparison, as,

*Milton n'est pas moins sublime qu'Homère,* Milton is not less sublime than Homer.

2. Before nouns of number, as,

*Il n'y a pas dix ans,* It is not ten years ago.

*Point* is elegantly used,

1. At the end of a sentence, as,

*On s'amusait à ses dépens, et il ne s'en apercevait point,* They were amusing themselves at his expense, and he did not perceive it.

## 2. In elliptical sentences, as,

*Je croyais avoir affaire à un honnête homme ; mais point,* I thought I had to deal with an honest man ; but no.

## 3. In answer to interrogative sentences, as,

*Irez-vous ce soir au parc?— point,* Shall you go this evening to the park?—no.

The Academy also observes, that when *pas*, or *point*, is introduced into interrogative sentences, it is with meanings somewhat different. We make use of *point*, when we have any doubt on our minds, as

*N'avez-vous point été là?* Have you not been there?

But we use *pas*, when we are persuaded. Thus,

*N'avez-vous pas été là?* But you have been there, have not you?

THIRD QUESTION. When may both *pas* and *point* be omitted?

They may be suppressed,

1. After the words *cesser*, *oser*, and *pouvoir*; but this omission is only for the sake of elegance, as,

*Je ne cesse de m'en occuper,* I am incessantly attentive to it.  
*Je n'ose vous en parler,* I dare not speak to you about it.  
*Je ne puis y penser sans frémir,* I cannot think of it without shuddering.

We likewise say, but only in familiar conversation,

*Ne bougez,* Do not stir.

## 2. In expressions of this kind,

*Ya-t-il un homme dont elle ne médise?* Is there a man that she does not slander?  
*Avez-vous un ami qui ne soit des miens?* Have you a friend that is not likewise mine?

FOURTH QUESTION. When ought both *pas* and *point* to be omitted?

They are omitted,

1. When the extent which we mean to give to the negative is sufficiently expressed either by the words which restrict it, by words which exclude all restriction, or lastly, by such as denote the smaller parts of a whole, and which are without the article.

To exemplify the first part of this remark, we say,

<i>Je ne sors guère,</i>	I go out but seldom.
<i>Je ne sortirai de trois jours,</i>	I shall not go out for three days.

To exemplify the second, we say,

<i>Je n'y vais jamais,</i>	I never go there.
<i>Je n'y pense plus,</i>	I think no more of it.
<i>Nul ne sait s'il est digne d'amour, ou de haine,</i>	Nobody knows whether he be deserving of love, or hatred.
<i>N'employez aucun de ces stratagèmes,</i>	Use none of these stratagems.
<i>Il ne plaît à personne,</i>	He pleases nobody.
<i>Rien n'est plus charmant,</i>	Nothing is more charming.
<i>Je n'y pense nullement,</i>	I do not think of it at all.

To exemplify the third, we say,

<i>Il n'y voit goutte,</i>	He cannot see at all.
<i>Je n'en ai cueilli brin,</i>	I did not gather a sprig.
<i>Il ne dit mot,</i>	He speaks not a word.

But if to *mot* we join an adjective of number, *pas* must be added, as,

<i>Il ne dit pas un mot qui n'intéresse,</i>	He speaks not a word but what is interesting.
<i>Dans ce discours, il n'y a pas trois mots à reprendre,</i>	In that speech, there are not three words that are exceptionable.

*Pas* is likewise used with the preposition *de*, as,

<i>Il ne fait pas de démarche inutile,</i>	He does not take any useless step.
--	------------------------------------

REMARK. If, after the sentences we have just mentioned, either the conjunction *que*, or the relative pronouns *qui* or *dont*, should introduce a negative sentence, then in this last *pas* and *point* are omitted, as,

<i>Je ne fais jamais d'excès que je n'en sois incommodé,</i>	I never commit any excess, without being ill after it.
<i>Je ne vois personne qui ne vous loue,</i>	I see nobody but what commends you.

2. When two negatives are joined by *ni*, as,

<i>Je ne l'aime ni ne l'estime,</i>	I neither love nor esteem him.
-------------------------------------	--------------------------------

And when the conjunction *ni* is repeated, either in the subject, as,

<i>Ni l'or ni la grandeur ne nous rendent heureux,</i>	Neither gold nor greatness can make us happy.
--	---

Or, in the attribute, as,

<i>Il n'est ni prudent ni sage,</i>	He is neither prudent nor wise.
-------------------------------------	---------------------------------



Or, in the regimen, as,

*Il n'a ni dettes ni procès,*

He has neither debts nor law-suits.

REMARK. *Pas* is preserved, when *ni* is not repeated, and when this last serves only to unite two members of a negative sentence, as,

*Je n'aime pas ce vain étalage  
d'érudition, prodiguée sans  
choix et sans goût, ni ce luxe  
de mots qui ne disent rien,*

I do not like that vain display of erudition, lavished without choice and without taste, nor that pomp of words which have no meaning.

3. With the verb which follows *que*, used instead of *pourquoi*, and with *à moins que*, or *si*, used instead of it, as,

*Que n'êtes-vous aussi posé que  
votre frère ?*

Why are you not as sedate as your brother ?

*Je ne sortirai pas, à moins que  
vous ne veniez me prendre,*

I shall not go out, unless you come to fetch me.

*Je n'irai pas chez lui, s'il ne m'y  
engage,*

I shall not go to his house, if he do not invite me.

4. With *ne—que* used instead of *seulement*, as,

*Une jeunesse, qui se livre à ses  
passions, ne transmet à la  
vieillesse qu'un corps usé,*

Youth, which abandons itself to its passions, transmits to old age nothing but a worn-out body.

When before the conjunction *que*, the word *rien* is understood, as,

*Il ne fait que rire,*

He does nothing but laugh.

Or when that conjunction may be changed into *sinon*, or *si ce n'est*, as,

*Il ne tient qu'à vous de réussir,*

The success wholly depends upon you.

*Trop de maîtres à la fois ne  
servent qu'à embrouiller l'es-  
prit,*

Too many masters at once only serve to perplex the mind.

5. With a verb in the preterit, preceded by the conjunction *depuis que*, or by the verb *il y a*, denoting a certain duration of time, as,

*Comment vous êtes-vous porté  
depuis que je ne vous ai vu ?*

How have you been since I saw you ?

*Il y a trois mois que je ne vous  
ai vu,*

I have not seen you for these three months.

But they are not omitted, when the verb is in the present, as,

*Comment vit-il depuis que nous ne le voyons point?* How does he live now we do not see him?

*Il y a six mois que nous ne le voyons point,* We have not seen him these six months.

6. In phrases where the conjunction *que* is preceded by the adverbs of comparison *plus*, *moins*, *mieux*, &c. or some other equivalent term, as,

*On méprise ceux qui parlent autrement qu'ils ne pensent,* We despise those who speak differently from what they think.

*Il écrit mieux qu'il ne parle,* He writes better than he speaks.

*C'est pire qu'on ne le disait,* It is worse than was said.

*C'est autre chose que je ne croyais,* It is different from what I thought.

*Peu s'en faut qu'on ne m'ait trompé,* I have been very near being deceived.

7. In sentences united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *douter*, *désespérer*, *nier*, and *disconvenir*, forming a negative member of a sentence, as,

*Je ne doute pas qu'il ne vienne,* I doubt not that he will come.

*Ne désespérez pas que ce moyen ne vous réussisse,* Do not despair of the success of these means.

*Je ne nie pas, or je ne disconviens pas que cela ne soit,* I do not deny that it is so.

The Academy says, that after the two last verbs, *ne* may be omitted, as,

*Je ne nie pas, or, je ne disconviens pas que cela soit.*

8. With a verb united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *empêcher* and *prendre garde*, meaning to take care, as,

*J'empêcherai bien que vous ne soyez du nombre,* I shall prevent your being of the number.

*Prenez garde qu'on ne vous séduise,* Take care that they do not corrupt you.

REMARK. The Academy observes, that in the above acceptation, *prendre garde* is followed by a subjunctive; but when it means to *reflect*, the indicative is used with *pas* or *point*, as,

*Prenez garde que vous ne m'entendez pas,* Mind, you do not understand what I mean.

9. With a verb united by the conjunction *que* to the verb *craindre*, and those of the same meaning, when we do not wish the thing expressed by the second verb, as,

*Il craint que son frère ne l'abandonne,* He is afraid his brother should forsake him.

*Je crains que mon ami ne meure,* I fear my friend will die.

But *pas* is not omitted, when we wish the thing expressed by the second verb, as,

*Je crains que mon père n'arrive pas,* I am afraid my father will not come.

10. With the verb which follows *de peur que*, *de crainte que*, in similar circumstances with *craindre*. Thus, when we say,

*De crainte qu'il ne perde son procès,*

We wish that he may gain it; and, when we say,

*De crainte qu'il ne soit pas puni,*

We wish that he may be punished.

REMARK. In these phrases,

*Je crains que mon ami ne meure,* I am afraid my friend will die.  
*Vous empêchez qu'on ne chante.* You prevent them from singing.

The expression *ne* is not a negation; it is the *ne*, or *quin* of the Latins introduced into the French language, as may be seen by the English translation.

11. After *savoir*, whenever it has the meaning of *pouvoir*, as,

*Je ne saurais en venir à bout,* I cannot accomplish it.

When it means *être incertain*, it is the best to omit *pas* and *point*, as,

*Je ne sais où le prendre,* I do not know where to find him.  
*Il ne sait ce qu'il dit,* He does not know what he says.

REMARK. But *pas* and *point* must be used when *savoir* is taken in its true meaning, as,

*Je ne sais pas le Français,* I do not know French.

12. We also say,

*Ne vous déplaît, ne vous en déplaît,* By your leave, under favour, or, let it not displease you.

*Plus* and *davantage* must not be used indifferently. *Plus* is followed by the preposition *de*, or the conjunction *que*, as,

*Il a plus de brillant que de solide,* He has more brilliancy than solidity.  
*Il se fie plus à ses lumières qu'à celles des autres,* He relies more upon his own knowledge than upon that of others.

*Davantage* is used alone and at the end of sentences, as,  
*La science est estimable, mais la vertu l'est davantage,* Learning is estimable, but virtue is still more so.

Though *davantage* cannot be followed by the preposition *de*, it may be preceded by the pronoun *en*, as,  
*Je n'en dirai pas davantage,* I shall not say any more about it.

It is incorrect to use *davantage* for *le plus*. We must say,

*De toutes les fleurs d'un parterre, l'anémone est celle qui me plaît le plus,* Of all the flowers of a parterre the anemone is that which pleases me most.

*Si, aussi, tant, and autant,* are always followed by the conjunction *que*, expressed or understood.

*Si* and *aussi* are joined to adjectives, adverbs, and participles; *tant* and *autant* to substantives and verbs.

*L'Angleterre n'est pas si grande que la France,* England is not so large as France.

*Il est aussi estimé qu'aimé,* He is as much esteemed as he is beloved.

*Elle a autant de beauté que de vertu,* She has as much beauty as virtue.

REMARK. *Autant* may, however, be substituted for *aussi*, when it is preceded by one adjective, and followed by *que* and another adjective, as,

*Il est modeste autant que sage,* He is as modest as wise.

*Aussi* and *autant* are used in the affirmative; *si* and *tant* in negative and interrogative sentences. The two last are, however, alone to be used in affirmative sentences, when they are put for *tellement*, as,

*Il est devenu si gros, qu'il a de la peine à marcher,* He is become so bulky that he can hardly walk.

*Il a tant couru qu'il en est hors d'haleine,* He has been running so fast that he is out of breath.

*Jamais* takes sometimes the preposition *à*, and *toujours* the preposition *pour*, as,

*Soyez à jamais heureux,* Be for ever happy.  
*C'est pour toujours,* It is for ever.



## CHAP. VIII.

## OF GRAMMATICAL CONSTRUCTION.

GRAMMATICAL construction is the order which the genius of a language has assigned, in speech, to the different sorts of words into which it is distinguished. Construction is sometimes mistaken for syntax; but there is this difference, the latter consists in the rules which we are to observe, in order to express the relations of words one to another, whereas grammatical construction consists in the various arrangements which are allowed while we observe the rules of syntax. Now this arrangement is irrevocably fixed, not only as phrases may be interrogative, imperative, or expositive, but also as each of these kinds may be affirmative or negative.

In sentences simply interrogative, the subject is either a noun or pronoun.

If the subject be a noun, the following is the order to be observed: first, the noun, then the verb, then the corresponding personal pronoun, the adverb, if any, and the regimen in the simple tenses: in the compound tenses, the pronoun and the adverb are placed between the auxiliary and the participle, as,

<i>Les lumières sont-elles un bien</i>	Are sciences an advantage to
<i>pour les peuples ? ont-elles</i>	nations? Have they ever con-
<i>jamais contribué à leur bon-</i>	tributed to their happiness?
<i>heur ?</i>	

If the subject be a pronoun, the verb begins the series, and the other words follow in the order already pointed out, as,

<i>Vous plairez-vous toujours à</i>	Will you always take pleasure
<i>médire ?</i>	in slandering ?
<i>Aurez-vous bientôt fini ?</i>	Shall you have soon done ?

N. B. When the verb is reflected, the pronoun forming the regimen begins the series; this pronoun always preserves its place before the verb, except in sentences simply imperative.

In interrogative sentences, with negation, the same order is observed; but *ne* is placed before the verb, and *pas*, or *point*, after the verb in the simple tenses, and be-

tween the auxiliary and the participle in the compound tenses, as,

*Votre frère ne viendra-t-il pas demain ?* Will not your brother come to-morrow ?

*N'aurez-vous pas bientôt fini ?* Shall you not have soon done ?

REMARK. There are in French several other ways of interrogating.

1. With an absolute pronoun, as,

*Qui vous a dit cela ?* or,

*Qui est-ce qui vous a dit cela ?* Who told you that ?

2. With the demonstrative pronoun *ce*, as,

*Est-ce vous ?* Is it you ? *Est-ce qu'il pleut ?* Does it rain ?

3. With an interrogative verb, as,

*Pourquoi ne vient-il pas ?* Why does he not come ?

*Comment vous trouvez-vous ?* How do you find yourself ?

Hence we see that the absolute pronouns and the interrogative adverbs always begin the sentence: but the demonstrative pronoun always follows the verb.

In sentences, simply imperative, the verb is always placed first, in the first and second persons; but in the third, it comes after the conjunction *que* and the noun or pronoun, as,

*Allons là,*

Let us go there.

*Venez ici,*

Come here.

*Qu'ils y aillent,*

Let them go there.

*Que Pierre aille à Londres,*

Let Peter go to London.

With negation *ne* and *pas* are placed as in interrogative sentences.

For the place of the pronouns, (see p. 247.)

Sentences are expositive, when we speak without either interrogating, or commanding. The following is the order of the words in those which are affirmative: the subject, the verb, the adverb, the participle, the regimen, as,

*Un bon prince mérite l'amour de ses sujets, et l'estime de tous les peuples,*

A good prince deserves the love of his subjects, and the esteem of all nations.

*César eût inutilement passé le Rubicon, s'il y eût eu de son temps des Fabius,*

Cæsar would have crossed the Rubicon to no purpose, had there been Fabii in his time.

The negative sentences differ from this construction, only as *ne* is always placed before the verb, and *pas*, or

*point*, either after the verb, or between the auxiliary and the participle, as,

<i>Un homme riche ne fait pas toujours le bien qu'il pourrait,</i>	A rich man does not always do all the good he might.
<i>Cicéron n'eût peut-être pas été un si grand orateur, si le désir de s'élever aux premières dignités n'eût enflammé son âme,</i>	Cicero would not perhaps have been so great an orator, had not the desire of rising to the first dignities inflamed his soul.

Sentences are either simple, or compound. They are simple, when they contain only one subject and one attribute, as,

<i>Vous lisez,</i>	You read.
<i>Vous êtes jeune,</i>	You are young.

They are compound, when they associate several subjects with one attribute, or several attributes with one subject, or several attributes with several subjects, or several subjects with several attributes.

This sentence, *Pierre et Paul sont heureux*, is compound by having several subjects; this, *cette femme est jolie, spirituelle et sensible*, is compound by having several attributes; and this, *Pierre et Paul sont spirituels et savans*, is composed at once of several subjects and several attributes.

A sentence may be compound in various other ways; by the subject, by the verb, or by the attribute.

By the subject, when this is restricted by an incidental proposition, as,

*Dieu, qui est bon.*

By the verb, when it is modified by some circumstance of time, order, &c., as,

*Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais.*

By the attribute, when this attribute is modified by a regimen which is itself restricted, as,

*Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais les hommes, qui mettent sincèrement leur confiance en lui.*

These simple or compound sentences, may be joined to others by a conjunction, as,

<i>Quand on aime l'étude, le temps passe sans qu'on s'en aperçoive,</i>	When we love study, time flies without our perceiving it.
---	---

The two partial phrases here form but one.

**RULE.** When a sentence is composed of two partial phrases, joined by a conjunction, harmony and perspicuity generally require the shortest to go first.

#### EXAMPLES.

<i>Quand les passions nous quittent,</i>	When our passions leave us, we
<i>nous nous flattons en vain, que</i>	in vain flatter ourselves that
<i>c'est nous qui les quittons,</i>	it is we that leave them.
<i>On n'est point à plaindre, quand,</i>	He is not to be pitied, who for
<i>au défaut de plaisirs réels, on</i>	want of real pleasure, finds
<i>trouve le moyen de s'occuper de</i>	means to amuse himself with
<i>chimères,</i>	chimeras.

Periods result from the union of several partial phrases, the whole of which make a complete sense. Periods, to be clear, require the shortest phrases to be placed first. The following example of this is taken from Fléchier.

N'attendez pas, Messieurs,

1. Que j'ouvre une scène tragique ;
2. Que je représente ce grand homme étendu sur ses propres trophées ;
3. Que je découvre ce corps pâle et sanglant, auprès duquel fume encore la foudre qui l'a frappé ;
4. Que je fasse crier son sang comme celui d'Abel, et que j'expose à vos yeux les images de la religion et de la patrie éplorée.

This admirable period is composed of four members, which go on gradually increasing. It is a rule not to give more than four members to a period, and to avoid multiplying incidental sentences.

Obscurity in style is generally owing to those small phrases which divert the attention from the principal sentences, and make us lose sight of them.

The construction which we have mentioned is called direct, or regular, because the words are placed in those sentences according to the order which has been pointed out. But this order may be altered in certain cases, and then the construction is called indirect, or irregular. Now, it may be irregular, by *inversion* by *ellipsis*, by *pleonasm*, or by *syllipsis* ; these are what are called the four figures of words.

---

#### OF INVERSION.

*Inversion* is the transportation of a word into a place, different from that which by usage is properly assigned



to it. This ought never to be done except when it introduces more perspicuity, energy, or harmony into the language; for it is a defect in construction, whenever the relation subsisting between words is not easily perceived.

There are two kinds of inversion: the one, by its boldness, seems to be confined to poetry: the other is frequently employed even in prose.

We shall speak here of the latter kind only.

The following inversions are authorized by custom.

The subject by which a verb is governed may with propriety be placed after it, as,

*Tout ce que lui promet l'amitié des Romains,* All that the friendship of the Romans promises him.

REMARK. This inversion is a rule of the art of speaking and writing, whenever the subject is modified by an incidental sentence, long enough to make us lose sight of the relation of the verb governed to the subject governing.

The noun governed by the prepositions *de* and *à* may likewise be very properly placed before the verb, as,

*D'une voix entrecoupée de sanglots, ils s'écrièrent,* In a voice interrupted by sobs, they exclaimed.  
*A tant d'injures, qu'a-t-elle répondu?* To so much abuse, what answer did she give?

The verb is likewise elegantly preceded by the prepositions *après, dans, par, sous, contre, &c.* with their dependencies, as well as by the conjunction *si, quand, parce que, puisque, quoique, lorsque, &c.* as,

*Par la loi du corps, je tiens à ce monde qui passe,* By the law of the body, I am connected with this passing world.

*Puisqu'il le veut, qu'il le fasse.* Since he wishes it, let him do it.

#### OF THE ELLIPSIS.

*Ellipsis* is the omission of a word, or even several words which are necessary to make the construction full and complete. In order to form a good ellipsis, the mind must be able easily to supply the words omitted, as,

*J'accepterais les offres de Darius, si j'étais Alexandre:— et moi aussi, si j'étais Parménion,* I would accept the offers of Darius, if I were Alexander:— and so would I, if I were Parmenio.

Here the mind easily supplies the words *je les accepterois* in the second member.

The ellipsis is very common in answers to interrogative sentences, as,

*Quand viendrez-vous? — de- main,* When will you come?—to-morrow.

that is, *je viendrai demain.*

In order to know whether an ellipsis be good, the words that are understood must be supplied. It is correct, whenever the construction completely expresses the sense denoted by the words which are supplied; otherwise it is not exact.

#### OF THE PLEONASM.

*Pleonasm*, in general, is a superfluity of words; in order to constitute this figure good, it must be sanctioned by custom, which never authorizes its use, but to give greater energy to language, or to express, in a clearer manner, the internal feeling with which we are affected.

Et que m'a fait à moi cette Troie où je cours!

Je me meurs. S'il ne veut pas vous le dire, je vous le dirai, moi.

Je l'ai vu de mes propres yeux.

Je l'ai entendu de mes propres oreilles.

—*A moi*, in the first sentence;—*me*, in the second;—*moi*, in the third;—*de mes propres yeux*, in the fourth; and —*de mes propres oreilles*, in the fifth, are employed merely for the sake of energy, or to manifest an internal feeling. But this manner of speaking is sanctioned by custom.

REMARK. Expletives must not be mistaken for pleonasm, as,

<i>C'est une affaire, où il y va du salut de l'état,</i>	It is an affair in which the safety of the state is concerned.
--	--

Which is better than *c'est une affaire, où il va*, &c. by omitting *y*, which is in reality useless on account of *où*: but *y* here, is a mode of expression from which it is not allowable to deviate.

## OF THE SYLLEPSIS.

The syllepsis is a figure by which a word relates more to our meaning, than to the literal expressions, as in these :

Il est onze heures : l'an mil sept cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf.

When using it, the mind, merely intent upon a precise meaning, pays no attention to either the number, or the gender of *heure* and *an*.

There is likewise a syllepsis in these sentences :

Je crains qu'il ne vienne,  
J'empêcherai qu'il ne vous nuise.  
J'ai peur qu'il ne m'oublie, &c.

Full of a wish that the event may not take place, we are willing to do all we can, that nothing should present an obstacle to that wish. This is the cause of the introduction of the negative, which, although unnecessary to complete the sense, yet must be preserved for the idiom.

There is again a very elegant syllepsis in sentences like the following from Racine :

Entre le *peuple* et vous, vous prendrez Dieu pour juge ;  
Vous souvenant, mon fils, que caché sous ce lin,  
Comme *eux* vous fûtes pauvre, et, comme *eux*, orphelin.

The poet forgets that he has been using the word *peuple* : nothing remains in his mind but *des pauvres* and *des orphelins*, and it is with that idea of which he is so fully impressed that he makes the pronoun *eux* agree. For the same reason, Bossuet and Mézengui have said,

Quand le *peuple Hébreu* entra dans la terre promise, tout y célébrait *leurs* ancêtres.—BOSSUET.

Moïse eut recours au Seigneur, et lui dit : que ferai-je à *ce peuple* ? bientôt *ils* me lapideront.—MEZENGUI.

*Leurs* and *ils* stand for *les Hébreux*.

## CHAP. IX.

OF GRAMMATICAL DISCORDANCES, AMPHIBOLOGIES,  
AND GALLICISMS.

We have chiefly to notice two incorrect modes of construction, which are contrary to the principles laid down

in the preceding chapters—grammatical discordances, and amphibologies.

#### OF DISCORDANCES.

In general, there is a discordance in language, when the words which compose the various members of a sentence, or period, do not agree with each other, either because their construction is contrary to analogy, or because they bring together dissimilar ideas, between which the mind perceives an opposition, or can see no manner of affinity.

The following examples will serve to illustrate this;

Notre réputation ne dépend pas des louanges qu'on nous donne, mais des actions louables que nous fesons.

This sentence is not correct, because the first member being negative, and the second affirmative, cannot come under the government of the same verb. It ought to be:

Notre réputation dépend, non	<i>Our reputation depends, not up-</i>
des louanges qu'on nous	<i>on the praises which are be-</i>
donne, mais des actions	<i>stowed on us, but upon the</i>
louables que, &c.	<i>praiseworthy actions which we</i>
	<i>perform.</i>

But the most common discordances are those which arise from the wrong use of tenses, as in this sentence:

Il regarde votre malheur comme une punition du peu de complaisance que *vous avez eue* pour lui, dans le temps qu'il vous *pria*, &c.

Because the two preterits, definite and indefinite, cannot well agree together; it should be:

Que vous eûtes pour lui dans le temps qu'il vous pria.

There is discordance in this sentence:

On en ressentit autant de joie que d'une victoire complète dans un autre temps,

Because the verb cannot be understood after the *que* which serves for the comparison, when that verb is to be in a different tense; it should be:

On en ressentit autant de joie qu'on en aurait senti, &c.

This line of Racine,

Le flot, qui l'apporta, recule épouvanté,  
is also incorrect, because the form of the present cannot



associate with that of the preterit definite; it should have been: *qui l'a apporté*.

---

OF AMPHIBOLOGIES.

Amphibology in language is when a sentence is so constructed as to be susceptible of two different interpretations: this must be carefully avoided. As we speak only to be understood, perspicuity is the first and most essential quality of language; we should always recollect that *what is not clearly expressed in any language, is no language at all*.

Amphibologies are occasioned, 1. By the misuse of—moods, and—tenses. 2. Of—the personal pronouns, *il, le, la, &c.* 3. Of the possessive pronouns, *son, sa, ses, &c.* 4. By giving a wrong place to nouns.

EXAMPLE

*Of an Amphibology of the first Kind.*

Qu'ai-je fait, *pour venir* accabler en ces lieux

Un héros, sur qui seul j'ai pu tourner les yeux?—RACINE.

*Pour venir* forms an amphibology, because we do not know whether it relates to the person who speaks, or to the person spoken to: it should have been. *Pour que vous veniez*.

EXAMPLE

*Of an Amphibology of the second Kind.*

César voulut premièrement surpasser Pompée; les grandes richesses de Crassus *lui* firent croire, qu'*il* pourrait partager la gloire de ces deux grands hommes.

This sentence is faulty in its construction, because the pronouns *il* and *lui* seem to relate to *César*, although the sense obliges us to refer them to *Crassus*,

EXAMPLE

*Of an Amphibology of the third Kind.*

Valère alla chez Léandre; il y trouva *son* fils.

The pronoun *son* is ambiguous, because we do not know to which it relates, to *Valère*, or to *Léandre*.

EXAMPLE

*Of an Amphibology of the fourth Kind.*

J'ai envoyé les lettres, que j'ai écrites, a la poste.

*A la poste*, thus placed, is equivocal, because we do not

know whether it is meant that the letters have been *written* at the post-office, or *sent* to the post-office.

---

OF GALLICISMS.

We have distinguished in our "Grammaire Philosophique et Littéraire," four sorts of gallicisms: we shall only mention here those of construction.

The gallicisms of construction are, in general, irregularities and deviations from the customary rules of syntax: there are some, however, which are mere ellipses, and others which can only be attributed to the caprice of custom.

**GENERAL PRINCIPLE.** Every gallicism of construction which obscures the meaning of the sentence, ought to be condemned. Those only ought to be preserved which do not impair perspicuity, by introducing irregularity of construction, and which are, at the same time, sanctioned by long practice.

According to this principle, this elliptic gallicism is now rejected:

Et qu'ainsi ne soit, *meaning*: ce que je vous dis est si vrai que, because it obscures the sentence. For instance:

J'étais dans ce jardin, *et qu'ainsi ne soit*, voilà une fleur que j'y ai cueillie, *that is*: Et pour preuve de cela, voilà une fleur, &c.

Molière and La Fontaine seem to have been the last great writers that have used this expression.

One of the most common gallicisms is that in which the impersonal verb *il y a*, is used for *il est*, *il existe*. These expressions:

Il y avait une fois un roi;—il y a cent à parier contre un, are gallicisms. There are two in the following sentence:  
*Il n'y a pas jusqu'aux enfans, Even children will meddle with*  
*qui ne s'en mêlent, it.*

The verb *falloir* forms a sort of gallicism with the pronoun *en*, when it is conjugated like pronominal verbs with the double pronouns, *il se*; as,

Il s'en faut, il s'en fallait, &c.

It then means *to be wanting*, and when preceded by an adverb of quantity, the first pronoun is omitted, as,

Peu s'en faut, tant s'en faut.

These several manners of using the verb *falloir* will be found in the following sentences :

### EXAMPLES.

Il s'en faut bien qu'il soit aussi habile qu'il croit l'être,

*He is far from being so clever as he thinks.*

Peu s'en est fallu qu'il n'ait succombé dans cette entreprise,

*He was very near failing in that undertaking.*

Il ne s'en est presque rien fallu qu'il n'ait été tué,

*He was as near as possible being killed.*

Vous dites qu'il s'en faut vingt livres que la somme entière n'y soit, mais vous vous trompez, il ne peut pas s'en falloir tant,

*You say it wants twenty pounds to complete the sum, but you are mistaken, it cannot want so much.*

Son rhume est entièrement guéri, ou peut s'en faut,

*His cold is entirely well, or very near.*

Que s'en est-il fallu que ces deux amis ne se soient brouillés ?

*How near were these two friends quarrelling ?*

Je ne suis pas content de votre application à l'étude, tant s'en faut,

*I am not satisfied with your application to study, far from it.*

Tant s'en faut que cette comédie me plaise, elle me semble au contraire détestable,

*So far from this play pleasing me, I think it insufferable.*

Il s'en fallait beaucoup que je vous approuvasse dans cette circonstance,

*I was far from approving your conduct on that occasion.*

The sentences :

*Il n'est rien moins que généreux, Vous avez beau dire,*

*He is far from being generous. You may say what you please, but, &c.*

*A ce qu'il me semble,*

*By what I can see, as the matter appears to me, &c.*

*Nous voilà à nous lamenter,*

*We began to lament, here we are lamenting, crying, &c.*

*Qu'est-ce que de nous,*

*What wretched beings we are ! &c. &c.*

are also gallicisms.

The use which is made of the preposition *en*, in many sentences, is likewise another source of gallicisms ; some of this kind will be found in the following expressions :

*A qui en avez-vous?  
Où en veut-il venir?*

Whom are you angry with?  
What does he aim at? what  
would he be at?

*Il lui en veut,*

He has a quarrel with him, &c.

The preposition *en* changes also, sometimes, the signification of verbs, and then gives rise to gallicisms.

The conjunction *que* produces as great a number of gallicisms; as,

*C'est une terrible passion que le jeu,* Gaming is a terrible passion.

*C'est donc en vain que je travaille,* It is in vain then that I work.

*Ce n'est pas trop que cela,* That is not too much.

*Il n'est que d'avoir du courage,* There is nothing like having courage.

Many others will be found in the use which is made of the prepositions *à, de, dans, après, &c.* but enough has been said on the subject.

Gallicisms are of very great use in the simple style, therefore La Fontaine and Mad. de Sévigné abound in them. The middling style has not so many, and the solemn oratorical but few, and these even of a peculiar nature. Only two examples of this kind, both taken from the tragedy of Iphigenia, by Racine, will be here inserted.

*Avez-vous pu penser qu'au sang d'Agamemnon  
Achille préférât une fille sans nom,  
Qui de tout son destin ce qu'elle a pu comprendre,  
C'est qu'elle sort d'un sang, &c.*

And,

*Je ne sais qui m'arrête et retient mon courroux,  
Que par un prompt avis de tout ce qui se passe.  
Je ne coure des dieux divulguer la menace.*

In the first instance, *qui* is the subject, though without relating to any verb; and in the second, *je ne sais qui m'arrête que je ne coure*, is contrary to the rules of common construction. "But," says Vaugelas, "these extraordinary phrases, far from being vicious, possess the more beauty, as they belong to a particular kind of language."



## FREE EXERCISES.

### I.

#### MADAME DE MAINTENON TO HER BROTHER.

WE can only be I unhappy by our own fault; this shall always be my text, and my reply to your lamentations. Recollect 2, my dear brother, the voyage to America, the misfortunes of our father, of our infancy and our youth 3; and you will bless Providence instead of murmuring against fortune. Ten years ago, we were both very far (below our present situation 4;) and our hopes were so feeble 5, that we limited our wishes to an (income of three thousand livres 6.) At present we have four times that sum 7, and our desires are not yet satisfied! we enjoy the happy mediocrity which you have so often extolled 8; let us be content. If possessions 9 come to us, let us receive them from the hand of God, but let not our views be 10 too extravagant 11. We have (every thing necessary 12) and comfortable 13; all the rest is avarice 14; all these desires of greatness spring from 15 a restless heart. Your debts are all paid, and you may live elegantly 16, without contracting more 17. What have you to desire? must 18 schemes 19 of wealth and ambition occasion 20 the loss of your repose and your health? read the life of St. Louis; you will see how unequal 21 the greatness of this world is to the desires of the human heart; God only can satisfy them 22. I repeat it, you are only unhappy by your own fault. Your uneasiness 23 destroys your health, which you ought to preserve, if it were 24 only because I love you. Watch 25 your temper 26: if you can render it less splenetic 27 and less gloomy, (you will have gained a great advantage 28.) This is not the work of reflection only; exercise, amusement, and a regular life, (are necessary for the purpose 29.) You cannot think well (whilst your health is affected 30;) when the body is debilitated 31, the mind is without vigour. Adieu! write to me more frequently, and in a style less gloomy.

---

1 On ne être...que. 2 Songer à. 3 The misfortunes of our infancy and those of our, &c. 4 Du point où nous sommes aujourd'hui. 5 Si peu de chose. 6 Trois mille livres de rente. 7 That sum, en...plus. 8 Have so often extolled, vanter si fort, ind-2. 9 Possessions, biens. 10 Let us not have views. 11 Trop vaste. 12 Le nécessaire. 13 Le commode. 14 Avarice, cupidité. 15 Spring from, partir du vide de. 16 Délicieusement. 17 Contracting more, en faire de nouvelles. 18 Must, faut-il que. 19 Projet. 20 Occasion, coûter, subj-1. 21 Unequal, au-dessous de. 22 Satisfy them, le rassasier. 23 Uneasiness, inquiétude pl. 24 If it were, quand ce être, cond-1. 25 Travailler sur. 26 Humeur. 27 Bilieux. 28 Ce être un grand point de gagné. 29 Il y faut de. 30 Tant que vous se porter mal. 31 Debilitated, dans l'abattement.

## II.

## THE CONVERT.

## AN EASTERN TALE.

Divine mercy 1 had brought a vicious man into a society of sages, whose morals were holy and pure. He was affected by their virtues; it was not long 2 before 3 he imitated them, and lost his old habits: he became just, sober, patient, laborious, and benevolent. His deeds nobody could deny, but they were attributed 4 to odious motives. They praised his good actions, without loving his person: they would always judge him by what he had been, not by what he was become. This injustice filled him with grief; he shed tears in the bosom of an ancient sage, more just and more humane than the others. "Oh my son," said the old man to him, "thou art better than thy reputation; be thankful "to God for it. Happy the man who can say, my enemies and "my rivals censure in me vices of which I am not guilty. What "matters 5 it, if thou art good, that men persecute thee as wicked? Hast thou not, to comfort thee, the two best witnesses of "thy actions, God and thy conscience?" SAINT-LAMBERT.

Mr. de Montausier has written a letter to Monseigneur upon the taking of Philipsburgh, which very much pleases me. "Monseigneur, I do not compliment you on the capture of Philipsburgh: you had a good army, bombs, cannon, and Vauban; "neither shall I compliment you upon your valour: for that is "an hereditary virtue in your family. But I rejoice that you "are liberal, generous, humane, and that you know how to "recompense the services of those who behave well: it is for "this that I congratulate you." SEVIGNE.

## III.

## THE GOOD MINISTER.

## AN EASTERN TALE.

The great Aaron Raschild began to suspect that his vizier Giafar was not deserving of the confidence which he had reposed in him. The women of Aaron, the inhabitants of Bagdad, the courtiers, the dervises, censured the vizier with bitterness. The calif loved Giafar; he would not condemn him upon the clamours of the city and the court: he visited his empire; every where he saw the land well cultivated, the country smiling, the cottages opulent, the useful arts honoured, and youth full of gayety. He visited his fortified cities and sea-ports, he saw numerous ships,

1 Miséricorde. 2 Ne pas tarder. 3 A, inf-1. 4 On donner des motifs. 5 Importer.

which threatened the coasts of Africa and of Asia; he saw warriors disciplined and content; these warriors, the seamen, and the peasantry, exclaimed: "O God, pour thy blessings upon the faithful, by giving them a calif like Aaron, and a vizier like Giafar." The calif, affected by these exclamations, enters a mosque, falls upon his knees, and cries out: "Great God, I return thee thanks; thou hast given me a vizier of whom my courtiers speak ill, and my people speak well."

SAINT-LAMBERT.

Providence conducts us with so much goodness through the different periods of our life, that we (do not perceive our progress 1.) This loss takes place gently 2, it is imperceptible, it is the shadow of the sun-dial whose motion we do not see. If, at twenty years of age, we could see 3 in a mirror, the face we shall have at three score, we (should be shocked at the contrast 4,) and terrified at our own figure; but it is day by day we advance: we are to-day as we were yesterday, and shall be to-morrow as we are to-day; so we go forward without perceiving it, and this is a miracle of that Providence whom I adore.

SEVIGNE.

#### IV.

#### THE MAGNIFICENT PROSPECT.

This beautiful house was on the declivity of a hill, from whence you beheld the sea, sometimes clear and smooth as glass, sometimes idly 1 irritated against the rocks on which it broke, bellowing 2 and swelling its waves like mountains. On another side was seen a river, in which were islands bordered with blooming limes, and lofty poplars, which raised their proud heads to the very clouds. The several channels, which formed those islands, seemed sporting 3 in the plain. Some rolled their limpid waters with rapidity; some had a peaceful and still course; others, by long windings, ran back again, to reascend as it were to their source, and seemed not to have power to leave these enchanting borders. At a distance were seen hills and mountains, which were lost in the clouds, and formed, by their fantastic figure, as delightful a horizon (as the eye could wish to behold 4.) The neighbouring mountains were covered with verdant (vine branches, 5) hanging in festoons; the grapes, brighter than purple, could not conceal themselves under the leaves, and the vine 6 was overloaded with its fruit. The fig, the olive, the pomegranate, and all other trees, overspread the plain, and made it one large garden.

FENELON.

1 Ne le sentir presque pas. 2 Va doucement. 3 On nous faire voir. 4 Tomber à la renverse.

1 Follement. 2 En gémir. 3 Se jouer. 4 A souhait pour le plaisir de. 5 Pampre, m. 6 Vigne, f.

Long hopes wear out 7 joy, as long illness wears out pain.

All philosophic systems are only good when one (has no use for them 8.)

SEVIGNE.

## V.

### A GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

With what magnificence does nature shine 1 upon earth! A pure light, extending from east to west, gilds successively the two hemispheres of this globe; an element transparent and light, surrounds it; a gentle fecundating heat animates, gives being 2 to the seeds of life; salubrious running streams contribute to their preservation and growth; eminences diversified over the level land, arrest the vapours of the air, make these springs inexhaustible and always new; immense cavities made to receive them, divide the continents. The extent of the sea is as great as that of the earth; it is not a cold, barren element; it is a new empire, as rich, as populous as the first. The finger of God has marked their boundaries.

The earth, rising above the level of the sea, is secure 3 from its eruptions: its surface, enamelled with flowers, adorned with ever-springing verdure, peopled with thousands and thousands of species of different animals, is a place of rest, a delightful abode, where man, placed in order to second nature, presides over all beings. The only one among them all, capable of knowing and worthy of admiring, God has made him spectator of the universe, and a witness of his wonders. The divine spark with which he is animated, enables him to participate in the divine mysteries; it is by this light that he thinks and reflects; by it he sees and reads in the book of the universe, as in a copy of the Deity.

Nature is the exterior throne of the divine Majesty; the man who contemplates, who studies it, rises by degrees to the interior throne of Omnipotence. Made to adore the Creator, the vassal of heaven, sovereign of the earth, he ennobles, peoples, enriches it; he establishes among living beings, order, subordination, harmony; he embellishes nature herself; he cultivates, extends, and polishes it; lops off the thistle and the brier, and multiplies the grape and the rose.

BUFFON.

## VI.

### ANOTHER GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

Trees, shrubs, and plants, are the ornaments and clothing 1 of the earth. Nothing is so melancholy 2 as the prospect of a coun-

7 User. 8 N'en avoir que faire.

1 Ne briller pas. 2 Faire éclore. 3 A l'abri de.

1 Vêtement. 2 Triste.



try naked and bare 3, exhibiting to the eye nothing but stones, mud, and sand. But, vivified by nature, and clad 4 in its nuptial robe, amidst the course of streams and the singing of birds, the earth presents to man, in the harmony of the three kingdoms, a spectacle full of life, of interest and charms, the only spectacle in the world of which his eyes and heart are never weary 5.

The more a (contemplative man's soul is fraught with sensibility 6,) the more he yields to the ecstasies which this harmony produces in him. A soft and deep melancholy then takes possession of his senses, and in an intoxication of delight, he loses himself in the immensity of that beautiful system, with which he feels himself identified. Then every particular object escapes him, he sees and feels nothing but in the whole. Some circumstance must contract his ideas, and circumscribe his imagination, before 7 he can observe by parcels that universe which he was endeavouring to embrace.

J. J. ROUSSEAU.

## VII.

### CULTIVATED NATURE.

How beautiful is cultivated nature! by the labours of man, how brilliant it is, and how pompously adorned! He himself is its chief ornament, its noblest part; by multiplying himself, he multiplies the most precious germ; she also seems to multiply with him: by his art, he (brings forth to view 1) all that she concealed 2 in her bosom. How many unknown treasures! What new riches! Flowers, fruits, seeds brought to perfection, multiplied to infinity; the useful species of animals transported, propagated, increased without number; the noxious species reduced, confined, banished; gold, and iron more necessary than gold, extracted from the bowels of the earth; torrents confined 3, rivers directed, contracted 4; the sea itself subjected, explored 5, crossed, from one hemisphere to the other; the earth accessible in every part, and every where rendered equally cheerful and fruitful: in the valleys, delightful meadows; in the plains, rich pastures and still richer harvests; hills covered with vines and fruits: their summits crowned with useful trees and young forests; deserts changed into cities inhabited by an immense population, which, continually circulating, spreads itself from these centres to their extremities; roads opened and frequented, communications established every where, as so many witnesses of the strength and union of society; a thousand other monuments of power and glory sufficiently demonstrate that man, possessing dominion over the earth, has changed, renewed the whole of its surface, and that, at all times, he shares the empire of it with nature.

3 Pelé. 4 Revêtu. 5 Se laisser. 6 Contemplateur avoir l'âme sensible. 7 Pour qu'il.

1 Mettre au jour. 2 Recéler. 3 Contenu. 4 Resserre. 5 Reconnu.

## VIII.

## THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

However, man only reigns by right of conquest ; he rather enjoys than possesses, and he can preserve only by means of continual labour. If this ceases, every thing droops, every thing declines, every thing changes, and again returns 1 under the hand of nature ; she reassumes her rights, erases the work of man, covers with dust and moss his most pompous monuments, destroys them in time, and leaves him nothing but the regret of having lost, through his fault, what his ancestors had conquered by their labours. Those times, in which man loses his dominion, those barbarous 2 ages, during which every thing is seen to perish, are always preceded by war, and accompanied by scarcity and depopulation. Man, who can do nothing but by number, who is strong only by union, who can be happy only by peace, is mad enough to arm himself for his misery, and to fight for his ruin. Impelled by an insatiable thirst of having, blinded by ambition still more insatiable, he renounces all the feelings of humanity, turns all his strength against himself, seeks mutual destruction, actually 3 destroys himself : and, after these periods of blood and carnage, when the smoke of glory has vanished, he contemplates with a sad eye, the earth wasted, the arts buried, nations scattered, the people weakened, his own happiness ruined, and his real power annihilated.

BUFFON.

## IX.

## INVOCATION TO THE GOD OF NATURE.

Almighty God ! whose presence alone supports nature, and maintains the harmony of the laws of the universe : Thou, who, from the immoveable throne of the empyrean, seest the celestial spheres roll under thy feet, without shock or confusion : who, from the bosom of repose, reproducest every moment their immense movements, and alone governest, in profound peace, that infinite number of heavens and worlds ; restore, restore at length tranquillity to the agitated earth ! let it be silent at thy voice ; let discord and war cease their proud clamours ! God of goodness, author of all beings, thy paternal eye takes in 1 all the objects of the creation ; but man is thy chosen being ; thou hast illumined 2 his soul with a ray of thy immortal light : complete the measure of thy kindness by penetrating his heart with a ray of thy love : this divine sentiment, diffusing itself every where, will reconcile opposite natures ; man will no longer dread the sight of man ; his hand will no longer wield the murderous steel 3 ; the devouring flames of war will no longer dry up 4 the

1 Rentrer. 2 De barbarie. 3 En effet.

1 Embrasser. 2 Eclairer. 3 Le fer.....armer sa main. 4 Tarir-

sources of population : the human species, now weakened, mutilated, mowed down in the blossom, will spring anew 5 and multiply without number ; nature, overwhelmed under the weight of scourges 6, will soon re-assume, with a new life, its former fruitfulness ; and we, beneficent God, will second it, we will cultivate it, we will contemplate it incessantly, that we may every moment offer thee a new tribute of gratitude and admiration.

BUFFON.

## X.

Happy they who are disgusted with 1 turbulent pleasures, and know how to be contented 2 with the sweets of an innocent life ! Happy they who delight in being instructed 3, and who take a pleasure 4 in storing their minds with knowledge ! Wherever adverse fortune may throw them, they always carry entertainment with them ; and the disquiet which preys upon others, even in the midst of pleasures, is unknown to those who can employ themselves in reading. Happy they who love to read, and are not like me deprived of the ability. As these thoughts were passing in my mind, I went into a gloomy forest, where I immediately perceived an old man, holding a book in his hand. The forehead of this sage was broad, bald, and a little wrinkled : a white beard hung down to his girdle ; his stature was tall and majestic ; his complexion still fresh and ruddy, his eyes lively and piercing, his voice sweet, his words plain and charming. I never saw so venerable an old man. He was a priest of Apollo, and officiated 5 in a marble temple, which the kings of Egypt had dedicated to that God in this forest. The book which he held in his hand was a collection of hymns in honour of the Gods. He accosted me in a friendly manner ; and we discoursed together. He related things past so well, that they seemed present, and yet with such brevity, that his account never tired me. He foresaw the future by his profound knowledge, which made him know men and the designs of which they are capable. With all this wisdom he was cheerful and complaisant, and the sprightliest youth has not so many graces as this man had at so advanced an age. He accordingly loved young men when they were teachable 6, and had a taste for study and virtue.

FENELON.

## XI.

### THOUGHTS ON POETRY.

Wherever I went, I found that poetry was considered as the

5 Germer de nouveau. 6 Fléau.

1 Se dégouter de. 2 Se contenter de. 3 S'instruire. 4 Se plaire. 5 Servir. 6 Docile.

(highest learning 1) and regarded with a veneration (somewhat approaching to 2,) that which men would pay to angelic nature.

It yet fills me with wonder that, in almost all countries, the most ancient poets are considered as the best; whether (it be that 3) every kind of knowledge is an acquisition gradually attained, and poetry is a gift conferred at once; or that the first poetry of every nation surprised them as a novelty, and retained the credit by consent, which it received by accident at first; or whether, as the province 4 of poetry is to describe nature and passion, which are always the same, the first writers (took possession 5) of (the most striking objects for description 6,) and (the most probable occurrences for fiction 7,) and left nothing to those that followed them, but transcription 8 of the same events, and new combinations 9 of the same images. Whatever be the reason, it is commonly observed, that the early writers are in possession of nature, and their followers 10 of art: that the first excel in strength and invention, and the latter in elegance and refinement.

I was desirous to add my name to this illustrious fraternity 11. I read all the poets of Persia and Arabia, and was able to repeat by memory the volumes that are suspended in the mosque of Mecca. But I soon found that no man was ever great by imitation. My desire of excellence 12 impelled 13 me to transfer 14 my attention to nature and life 15. Nature was to be my subject, and men to be my auditors: I could never describe what I had not seen; I could not hope (to move those with delight or terror 16) whose interests and opinions I did not understand 17.

## XII.

### THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

Being now resolved to be a poet, I saw every thing (with a new purpose 18;) my sphere of attention was suddenly magnified: no kind of knowledge (was to be overlooked 19.) I ranged mountains and deserts for 20 images and resemblances, and (pictured upon my mind 21) every tree of the forest and flower of the valley. I observed with equal care the crags of the rock and the pinnacles of the palace. Sometimes I wandered along the mazes of the rivulet, and sometimes watched the changes of the summer-clouds. To a poet nothing can be useless. What-

1 Partie la plus sublime de la littérature. 2 Qui tenoit de. 3 Cela vienne de ce que. 4 But. 5 S'emparer. 6 Objets qui fournissaient les plus riches descriptions. 7 Evénemens qui prêtaient le plus à la fiction. 8 De copier. 9 Faire de nouvelles combinaisons. 10 Successeurs. 11 Famille. 12 Exceller. 13 Engager. 14 Reporter...sur. 15 Tableau de la vie. 16 Réveiller le plaisir ou la terreur dans ceux. 16 Ne connaître ni. 18 Sous un nouveau jour. 19 Je ne devais négliger. 20 Pour recueillir. 21 Pénétrer mon esprit du tableau de.



ever is beautiful, and whatever is dreadful, must be familiar to his imagination: he must (be conversant 22) with all that (is awfully vast or elegantly little 23.) The plants of the garden, the animals of the wood, the minerals of the earth, and the meteors of the sky, must all concur to store his mind with inexhaustible variety: for every idea is useful for the (enforcement or decoration 24) of moral or religious truth; and he who knows most, will have most power 25 of diversifying his scenes 26, and gratifying his reader with remote allusions and unexpected instruction.

All the appearances of nature I was, therefore, careful to study 27, and every country which I have surveyed has contributed something to my poetical powers.

In so wide a survey, interrupted the prince, you must surely have left much unobserved. I have lived, till now, within the circuit of these mountains, and yet cannot walk abroad without the sight of something which I had never beheld before, or never heeded 28.

### XIII.

#### THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

The business of a poet, said Imlac, is to examine, not the individual, but the species; to remark general properties and (large appearances 29:) he does not number the streaks of the tulip, or describe the different shades in the verdure of the forest. He is to exhibit, in his portraits of nature, such prominent and striking features, as 30 recall the original to every mind; and must neglect the minuter discriminations 31, which one may have remarked, and another neglected, for those characteristics 32 which are alike obvious 33 to vigilance 34 and carelessness 35.

But the knowledge of nature is only half 36 the task of a poet: he must be acquainted likewise with all the modes 37 of life. His character requires that he estimate 38 the happiness and misery of every condition: observe the power of all the passions, in all their combinations, and trace the changes 39 of the human mind, as they are modified by various institutions, and accidental influences of climate or custom; from the sprightliness of infancy to the despondence of decrepitude. He must divest himself 40 of the prejudices of his age or country; he must consider right and wrong 41 in their abstracted and invariable state 42; he must disregard present laws and opinions, and rise to general

22 Bien connaître. 23 Etonné par sa grandeur, ou charme par son élégante petitesse. 24 Fortifier, ou embellir. 25 Ressources pour. 26 Tableau. 27 Etudier avec soin toutes les, &c. 28 Remarquer. 29 Considérer les objets en grand. 30 De ces traits saillans et frappans qui, &c. 31 Ces petits détails. 32 Pour s'appliquer à caractériser, &c. &c. 33 Frappe également. 34 Œil observateur. 35 Esprit insouciant. 36 The half of. 37 Tous les différens aspects. 38 Apprécier. 39 Suivre les vicissitudes. 40 Se dépouiller. 41 Ce qui est juste ou injuste. 42

and transcendent truths, which will always be the same; he must, therefore, (content himself with the slow progress of his name 43,) condemn the applause of his own time, and commit his claims to the justice of posterity. He must write as the interpreter of nature, and the legislator of mankind, and consider himself as presiding 44 over the thoughts and manners of future generations, as a being superior to time and place.

His labour is not yet at an end: he must know many languages, and many sciences; and, that his style may be worthy of his thoughts, he must, by incessant practice, familiarize himself to every delicacy of speech and grace of harmony. S. JOHNSON.

## XIV.

First follow nature, and your judgment frame,  
 By her just standard, which is still the same;  
 Unerring nature, still divinely bright,  
 One clear, unchanged, and universal light, 1  
 Life, force, and beauty, must to all impart; 2  
 At once the source, and end, and test of art.  
 Art, from that fund, each just supply provides;  
 Works without show, and without pomp presides;  
 In some fair body thus th' informing soul,  
 With spirit feeds, with vigour fills the whole;  
 Each motion guides, and every nerve sustains  
 Itself unseen, but in th' effect remains. 3  
 Some, to whom heav'n in wit has been profuse,  
 Want as much more to turn it to its use:  
 For wit and judgment often are at strife,  
 Tho' meant each other's aid, like man and wife. 4  
 'Tis more to guide, than spur the muse's steed,  
 Restrain his fury, than provoke his speed: 5  
 The winged courser, like a gen'rous horse,  
 Shows most true mettle, when you check its course. 6

POPE.

Abstraction faite de ces divers préjugés. 43 Se résigner à voir son nom percer difficilement. 44 Influencer.

1. Light, clear, immutable, and universal nature, which never errs, and shines always with a divine splendour, must impart to all she does, life, force, and beauty. 2 She is at once the source, &c.

3 So in a fair body, unseen itself, but always sensible by its effects, the soul continually acting, feeds the whole with spirits, fills it with vigour, guides every motion of it, and sustains every nerve.

4 Some to whom heaven has given wit with profusion, want as much yet to know the use they ought to make of it; for wit and judgment, though made, like man and wife, to aid each other, are often in opposition.

9 It is more difficult to guide than spur the courser of the muses, and to restrain its ardour than to provoke its impetuosity.

6 The winged courser is like a generous horse: the more we strive to stop it in its rapid course, the more it shows unconquerable vigour.

# EXAMPLES OF PHRASES

ON THE

## PRINCIPAL DIFFICULTIES OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

### *Sur les Collectifs Partitifs.*

La plupart des fruits verts sont d'un goût austère.

La plupart des gens ne se conduisent que par intérêt.

La plupart du monde se trompe.

Il méprise par philosophie les honneurs, que la plupart du monde recherche.

Il devait me fournir tant d'arbres ; mais j'en ai rejeté la moitié qui ne valait rien.

Un grand nombre de spectateurs ajoutait à la beauté du spectacle.

Toute sorte de livres ne sont pas également bons.

Beaucoup de personnes se sont présentées.

Bien des personnes se font des principes à leur fantaisie.

*Sur quelques Verbes qu'on ne peut conjuguer avec Avoir sans faire des barbarismes.*

Il lui est échue une succession du chef de sa femme.

Il est bien déchu de son crédit.

Ne sommes-nous pas convenus du prix ?

N'est-il pas intervenu dans cette affaire, comme il l'avait promis ?

Il est survenu à l'improviste.

La neige, qui est tombée ce matin, a adouci le temps.

Que de neige il est tombé ce matin !

Toutes les dents lui sont tombées.

Ce propos n'est pas tombé à terre.

Etes-vous allé voir votre ami ?

Ils sont arrivés à midi et sont repartis de suite.

Ces fleurs sont à peine écloses.

Il est né de parens vertueux, qui n'ont rien négligé pour son éducation.

Mademoiselle votre sœur est-elle rentrée ?

Madame votre mère n'est-elle pas encore venue ?

### *Sur les Mots de Quantité.*

Il a beaucoup d'esprit, mais encore plus d'amour-propre.

Il a assez d'argent pour ses menus plaisirs.

Il y avait bien du monde à l'Opéra.

Il y avait hier au Parc je ne sais combien de gens.

Il boit autant d'eau que de vin.

Il a tant d'amis qu'il ne manquera de rien.

Personne n'y a plus d'intérêt que lui.

Il n'a pas plus d'esprit qu'il n'en faut.

Trop de loisir perd souvent la jeunesse.

J'y ai bien moins d'intérêt que vous.

### *Sur les Pronoms Personnels.*

Sors et te retire.

Cours vite et ne t'amuse point.

### *On the Collective Partitives.*

The greater part of green fruit is of a harsh taste.

Most people are guided only by interest.

The greater part of mankind live in error.

As a true philosopher he despises those honours which mankind in general court.

He was to furnish me so many trees, but I refused half of them which were good for nothing.

A considerable number of spectators added to the splendour of the scene.

Every kind of books are not equally good.

Many people presented themselves.

Many persons form principles to themselves, according to their fancy.

On some Verbs which cannot be conjugated with the verb *Avoir*, without making barbarous phrases.

An estate fell to him in right of his wife.

He has lost much of his credit.

Have we not agreed about the price ?

Did he not interfere in that affair as he had promised ?

He came up unawares.

The snow which fell this morning has softened the weather.

How much snow has fallen this morning ?

All his teeth have fallen out.

That remark was not allowed to escape.

Have you been to see your friend ?

They arrived at noon and set out again immediately.

These flowers are scarcely blown.

He was born of virtuous parents, who bestowed on him the best education.

Is your sister returned ?

Is not your mother come yet ?

### *On Words of Quantity.*

He has a great deal of sense, but still more vanity.

He has sufficient pocket-money.

There were a great many people at the Opera.

There were I do not know how many people in the Park yesterday.

He drinks as much water as wine.

He has so many friends that he will wait for nothing.

Nobody has more interest there than he.

He is not overburdened with sense.

Too much leisure time is frequently the destruction of youth.

I am much less concerned in it than you.

### *On the Personal Pronouns.*

Go out and retire, withdraw.

Go quick and do not loiter.

Il dit aujourd'hui une chose et demain il se démentira.

Il s'est démenti lui-même.

La jeunesse est naturellement emportée ; elle a besoin de quelque entrave qui la retienne.

Il ne peut voir personne dans la prospérité sans lui porter envie.

Ce que vous me dites est une énigme pour moi.

C'est un homme extrême en tout ; il aime et il hait avec fureur.

Si vous n'y avez jamais été, je vous y mènerai.

Je l'ai connu doux et modeste ; il s'est bien gâté dans le commerce de ses nouveaux amis.

Elle n'est pas encore revenue du saisissement, que lui causa cette nouvelle.

Il menace de l'exterminer, lui et toute sa race.

Si vous n'avez que faire de ce livre-là, prêtez-le-moi.

Je lui avais envoyé un diamant, il l'a refusé, je le lui ai renvoyé.

Il apprend facilement et oublie de même.

Je lui pardonne facilement d'avoir voulu se faire auteur ; mais je ne saurais lui pardonner toutes les puérilités dont il a farci son livre.

Je me plains à vous de vous-même.

Si vous ne voulez pas être pour lui, au moins ne soyez pas contre.

Quand sera-ce que vous viendrez nous voir ?

*Sur soi, lui, soi-même, et lui-même.*

Quand on a pour soi le témoignage de sa conscience, on est bien fort.

L'estime de toute la terre ne sert de rien à un homme qui n'a pas le témoignage de sa conscience pour lui.

Un homme fait mille fautes, parce qu'il ne fait point de réflexions sur lui.

On fait mille fautes, quand on ne fait aucune réflexion sur soi.

Il aime mieux dire du mal de lui, que de n'en point parler.

L'égoïste aimera mieux dire du mal de soi, que de n'en point parler.

On a souvent besoin d'un plus petit que soi.

Un prince a souvent besoin de beaucoup de gens plus petits que lui.

C'est un bon moyen de s'élever soi-même, que d'exalter ses pareils ; et un homme adroit s'élève ainsi lui-même.

*Sur les Pronoms Relatifs.*

Il n'y a rien de si capable d'effrimer le courage, que l'oisiveté et les délices.

Il faut empêcher que la division, qui est dans cette famille, n'éclate.

Il y a bien des évènements que l'on suppose se passer pendant les entr'actes.

Je le trouvais qui s'habillait.

Qui le tirera de cet embarras, le tirera d'une grande misère.

*He advances a thing to-day, and will contradict himself to-morrow.*

*He has contradicted himself.*

*Youth is naturally hasty, it needs some check to restrain it.*

*He can see the prosperity of nobody without envying them.*

*What you tell me is a perfect riddle to me.*

*He is a man that carries every thing to excess ; he is alike violent in his love and in his hatred.*

*If you have never been there, I will take you.*

*I knew him when he was mild and modest ; he has been much corrupted by associating with his new acquaintances.*

*She is not yet recovered from the consternation into which that intelligence threw her.*

*He threatens to exterminate him and all his family.*

*If you have done with this book, lend it me.*

*I had sent him a diamond, and he refused it, but I sent him it back again.*

*He learns easily and forgets the same.*

*I can easily pardon him for having attempted to turn author ; but I cannot pardon him all the absurdities with which he has filled his book.*

*I complain to you of yourself.*

*If you will not be for him, at least do not be against him.*

*When will you come to see us ?*

*On soi, lui, soi-même, and lui-même.*

*The approbation of our conscience imparts great courage.*

*The good opinion of the whole world is of no use to a man who has not the approbation of his own conscience.*

*A man commits a thousand faults, because he does not reflect on future consequences.*

*We commit a thousand faults, when we neglect to reflect on ourselves.*

*He had rather speak ill of himself than not talk of himself at all.*

*The egotist prefers speaking ill of himself rather than not be the subject of his own conversation.*

*We frequently want the assistance of one who is below ourselves.*

*A prince frequently needs the assistance of many persons inferior to himself.*

*It is an excellent method of exalting ourselves to exalt our equals, and a man of address by this means exalts himself.*

*On the Relative Pronouns.*

*Nothing is so calculated to enervate the mind as idleness and pleasure.*

*The dissension in that family must be prevented from becoming public.*

*There are many events in a piece which are supposed to happen between the acts.*

*I found him dressing.*

*Whoever extricates him from this difficulty will relieve him from much distress.*



Ceux là sont véritablement heureux, qui croient l'être.

Il n'y a que la vertu, qui puisse rendre un homme heureux en cette vie.

Il n'y a règle si générale, qui n'ait son exception.

C'est un orateur qui se possède, et qui ne se trouble jamais.

Il n'y a pas dans le cœur humain de repli que Dieu ne connaisse.

On n'a trouvé que quelques fragmens du grand ouvrage qu'il avait promis.

La faute, que vous avez faite, est plus importante que vous ne pensez.

Les premières démarches qu'on fait dans le monde, ont beaucoup d'influence sur le reste de la vie.

Cette farce est une des plus risibles qu'on ait encore vues.

Amassez-vous des trésors que les vers et la rouille ne puissent point gâter, et que les voleurs ne puissent point dérober.

L'incertitude, où nous sommes de ce qui doit arriver, fait que nous ne saurions prendre des mesures justes.

Je m'étonne qu'il ne voie pas le danger où il est.

L'homme dont vous parlez, n'est plus ici.

Celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle ne vous est pas connu.

Celui à qui ce beau château appartient ne l'habite presque jamais.

Ce sont des événemens auxquels il faut bien se soumettre.

C'est ce à quoi vous ne pensez guère.

*Sur les Pronoms Démonstratifs.*

Ne point reconnaître la divinité, c'est renoncer à toutes les lumières de la raison.

Mentir, c'est mépriser Dieu et craindre les hommes.

Il y a des épidémies morales, et ce sont les plus dangereuses.

Je crois que ce que vous dites est bien éloigné de ce que vous pensez.

Les hommes n'aiment ordinairement que ceux qui les flattent.

Celui qui persuade à un autre de faire un crime, n'est guère moins coupable que celui qui le commet.

Penser ainsi, c'est s'aveugler soi-même.

Ce qu'on rapporte de lui est inconcevable.

Ce qui m'afflige, c'est de voir le triomphe du crime.

Connaissez-vous la jeune Emilie? c'est une enfant dont tout le monde dit du bien.

Imitez en tout votre amie : elle est douce, agréable, honnête et compatissante.

*Sur le Verbe avoir employé à l'Impersonnel.*

Remarque. Quand le verbe avoir s'emploie à l'impersonnel, c'est dans le sens d'être, et alors il se joint toujours avec y.

Il y a un an que je ne vous ai vu.

Y a-t-il des nouvelles?

Non, il n'y en a pas, du moins que je sache.

Those are really happy who think themselves so.

Virtue alone can render a man happy in this life.

There is no rule so general but it admits of exceptions.

He is an orator who is master of himself, and who is never embarrassed.

There is no recess of the human heart but God perceives it.

Only some fragments of the great work he had promised have been found.

The error you have committed is of more consequence than you imagine.

The first steps we take on entering the world have considerable influence on the rest of our lives.

That farce is one of the most truly comic that ever was seen.

Lay up for yourselves treasures which neither moth nor rust can corrupt, and which thieves cannot steal.

Our uncertainty as to what shall happen makes us incapable of properly providing against it.

I am astonished he does not see the danger he is in.

The man whom you are speaking of is not here now.

The person from whom I received the intelligence is not known to you.

The proprietor of that beautiful seat seldom resides there.

These are events to which we must submit.

It is what you seldom think of.

*On the Demonstrative Pronouns.*

Not to acknowledge the divinity, is totally to renounce the light of reason.

To lie is to despise God and to fear man.

There are moral contagious disorders, and these are the most dangerous.

What you advance is, I think, widely different from your sentiments.

Men in general love only those who flatter them.

He who persuades another to the commission of a crime, is hardly less guilty than he who commits it.

To think in this manner is to be wilfully blind.

The reports concerning him are hardly conceivable.

What distresses me is to see guilt triumphant.

Do you know little Emily? she is a child of whom every body speaks well.

Imitate your friend in every thing; she is mild, assiduous, polite, and compassionate.

*On the Verb avoir, to have, employed impersonally.*

When the verb avoir is used impersonally it signifies être, to be, and in this sense it is always accompanied by the adverb y.

It is a twelvemonth since I saw you.

Is there any news?

No, there is none, at least that I know.

N'y a-t-il pas cinquante-quatre milles de Londres à Brighton ?

*Il y avait déjà beaucoup de monde lorsque j'arrivai.*

Il n'y avait hier presque personne au parc.

Y avait-il de grands débats ?

N'y avait-il pas beaucoup de curieux ?

Je l'avais vu il y avait à peine vingt quatre heures.

Il n'y avait pas deux jours qu'il avait dîné chez moi.

Y avait-il si long-temps que vous ne l'aviez vu ?

*Il y eut hier un bal chez M. un tel.*

Il n'y eut pas hier de spectacle.

Y eut-il beaucoup de confusion et de désordre ?

N'y eut-il pas un beau feu d'artifice ?

*Il y a eu aujourd'hui une foule immense à la promenade.*

Il n'y a pas eu de bal, comme on l'avait annoncé.

Est-il vrai qu'il y a eu un duel ?

N'y a-t-il pas eu dans sa conduite un peu trop d'emportement ?

Quand *il y eut eu* une explication, les esprits se calmèrent.

*N'y avait-il pas eu* un plus grand nombre de spectateurs ?

*Il y aura* demain un simulacre de combat naval.

Il n'y aura aucun de vous.

Y aura-t-il une bonne récolte cette année ?

N'y aura-t-il pas quelqu'un de votre famille ?

A coup sûr *il y aura eu* bien du désordre.

Sur cent personnes, il n'y en aura pas eu dix de satisfaites.

Y aura-t-il eu un bon soupé ?

N'y aura-t-il pas eu de mécontents ?

*Il aurait* de la malhonnêteté dans ce procédé.

Il n'y aurait pas grand mal à cela.

Y aurait-il quelqu'un assez hardi pour l'attaquer ?

N'y aurait-il pas quelqu'un assez charitable pour l'avertir de ce qu'on dit de lui ?

*Il y aurait eu* de l'imprudence à cela.

Il n'y aurait pas eu tant de mésintelligence, si l'on m'en avait cru,

Il n'y aurait pas eu dix personnes.

Y aurait-il eu de l'inconvénient ?

N'y aurait-il pas eu de jaloux pour le traverser dans ses projets ?

Je ne crois pas qu'il y ait un spectacle plus magnifique.

Je désirerais qu'il y eût moins de fausseté dans le commerce de la vie.

Je n'ai pas osé dire qu'il y ait eu hier des nouvelles du continent.

Auriez-vous cru qu'il y eût eu tant de personnes compromises dans cette affaire ?

#### *Phrases diverses.*

Sa vie, ses actions, ses paroles, son air même et sa démarche, tout prêche, tout édifie en lui.

*Is not it fifty-four miles from London to Brighton ?*

*There were already a great many people when I arrived.*

*There was hardly any body in the Park yesterday.*

*Were there violent debates ?*

*Were there not many curious people ?*

*I had seen him scarcely four-and-twenty hours before.*

*He had dined with me not two days before.*

*Was it so long since you had seen him ?*

*There was yesterday a ball at Mr. A's.*

*There was no play yesterday.*

*Was there a great deal of confusion and disorder ?*

*Were there not handsome fire-works ?*

*There was an immense crowd to-day at the public walks.*

*There has not been any ball as had been mentioned.*

*Is it true that there has been a duel ?*

*Was there not rather too much hastiness in his behaviour ?*

*After there had been an explanation, tranquillity was restored.*

*Was not there a great number of spectators ?*

*To-morrow there will be the representation of a sea-fight.*

*There will be none of you.*

*Will there be a good harvest this year ?*

*Will not there be some of your family ?*

*There must certainly have been much disorder.*

*Out of a hundred persons there will not have been ten satisfied.*

*Will there have been a good supper ?*

*Will there not have been some dissatisfied ?*

*Such a step would have been ungentle.*

*There would be no great harm in that.*

*Would there be any one bold enough to attack him ?*

*Would there be nobody kind enough to acquaint him with what is said of him ?*

*There would have been some imprudence in that.*

*There would not have been so great a misunderstanding had I been believed.*

*There would not have been ten persons ?*

*Would there have been any inconvenience ?*

*Would there not have been some envious person to thwart him in his designs ?*

*I do not think there can be a more superb spectacle.*

*I wish there were less duplicity in the concerns of life.*

*I have not heard that there was any news from the continent yesterday.*

*Could you have thought so many persons would have been exposed in that affair ?*

#### *Promiscuous Phrases.*

*His life, his actions, his very look and deportment, every thing in him instructs and edifies.*

On craignait qu'il n'arrivât quelque désordre dans l'assemblée, mais toutes choses s'y passèrent fort doucement.

La vigne et le lierre s'entortillent autour des ormes.

On ne disconvenait point qu'il ne soit brave, mais il est un peu trop fanfaron.

Le cadet est riche, mais l'aîné l'est encore davantage.

Le ciel est couvert de nuages, et l'orage est prêt à fondre.

Après qu'il eut franchi les Alpes avec ses troupes, il entra en Italie.

La frugalité rend les corps plus sains et plus robustes.

Ce discours est peut-être un des plus beaux morceaux d'éloquence, qu'il y ait jamais eu.

C'est un homme qui aime la liberté ; il ne se gêne pour lui que ce soit.

Il est plus haut que moi de deux doigts.

Irez-vous vous exposer à la barbarie et à l'inhospitalité de ces peuples ?

A la longue, les erreurs disparaissent, et la vérité surajuge.

Si vous le prenez avec moi sur ce ton de fierté, je serai aussi fier que vous.

C'est un homme rigide, qui ne pardonne rien, ni aux autres ni à lui-même.

Les uns montent, les autres descendent, ainsi va la roue de la fortune.

Je ne vois rien de solide dans tout ce que vous me proposez.

L'art n'a jamais rien produit de plus beau.

Lequel est-ce des deux qui a tort ?

On aime quelquefois la trahison, mais on hait toujours les traîtres.

*Continuation.*

L'éléphant se sert de sa trompe pour prendre et pour enlever tout ce qu'il veut.

Plus j'examine cette personne, plus je crois l'avoir vue quelque part.

La nuit vint, de façon que je fus contraint de me retirer.

Il faut vivre de façon qu'on ne fasse tort à personne.

Elle sut qu'on attaquait son mari et courut aussitôt tout éperdue pour le secourir.

Je trouvais ses parens tout éplorés.

Cet arbre pousse ses branches toutes droites.

J'en ai encore le mémoire toute fraîche.

Il a voulu faire voir par cet essai qu'il pouvait réussir en quelque chose de plus grand.

Il fut blessé au front et mourut de cette blessure.

Ces chevaux prirent le mors aux dents et entraînèrent le carrosse.

C'est un homme qui compose sans chaleur ni imagination ; tout ce qu'il écrit est froid et plat.

Cet bâtiment a plus de profondeur que de largeur.

Cet homme est un prodige de savoir, de science, de valeur, d'esprit, et de mémoire.

Il est attaché à l'un et à l'autre, mais plus à l'un qu'à l'autre.

Ils ont bien l'air l'un de l'autre.

*It was apprehended some disorder would take place in the assembly, but every thing went off very quietly.*

*The vine and ivy twist round the elms.*

*They do not deny that he is brave, but he boasts rather too much.*

*The youngest is rich, but the eldest is still more so.*

*The sky is covered with clouds, and the storm is preparing to burst.*

*After having crossed the Alps with his troops, he entered Italy.*

*Temperance imparts an increase of health and strength to the body.*

*This speech is perhaps one of the finest pieces of eloquence that was ever pronounced.*

*He is a man fond of liberty, he will be restrained by nobody.*

*He is taller than me by two inches.*

*Will you go and expose yourself to the barbarity and inhospitality of those nations ?*

*In time errors vanish and truth survives.*

*If you treat me with that haughtiness, I can be as haughty as you.*

*He is a stern character, who pardons nothing either in himself or others.*

*Some mount, others descend ; thus goes the wheel of fortune.*

*I see nothing certain in all you propose to me.*

*It is one of the finest productions of art.*

*Which of the two is in the wrong ?*

*We sometimes love the treason, but we always hate the traitor.*

*Continuation.*

*The elephant makes use of his trunk to take and lift whatever he pleases.*

*The more I look at that person, the more I think I have seen him (or her) somewhere.*

*Night came on, so that I was obliged to retire.*

*We must live in such a manner as to injure nobody.*

*She knew her husband was attacked, and in a state of distraction ran to his assistance.*

*I found his relations all in tears.*

*The branches of that tree grow quite straight.*

*It is still quite fresh in my memory.*

*He wished to show by that attempt that he could succeed in an enterprise of more consequence.*

*He was wounded in the forehead, and died of his wound.*

*Those horses ran away with the carriage.*

*He is a man that writes without the least warmth or animation : all his productions are cold and insipid.*

*That building is deeper than it is broad.*

*That man is a prodigy of knowledge, judgment, courage, sense, and memory.*

*He is attached to both, but to one more than to the other.*

*They very much resemble each other.*



Si l'on ruine cet homme-là, le contre-coup retombera sur vous :

Il serait mort, si on ne l'eût assisté avec soin.

Ce poème serait parfait, si les incidents, qui le font languir, n'interrompaient la continuité de l'action.

*Continuation.*

Quand je le voudrais, je ne le pourrais pas. Je serai toujours votre ami, quand même vous ne le voudriez pas.

Quand vous auriez réussi, que vous en serait-il revenu ?

Quand on découvrirait votre démarche, on ne pourrait la blâmer.

Quand vous auriez consulté quelqu'un sur votre mariage, vous n'auriez pas mieux réussi.

Le tonnerre et l'éclair ne sont sensibles que par la propagation du bruit et de la lumière jusqu'à l'œil et à l'oreille.

Le langage de la prose est plus simple et moins figuré que celui des vers.

Le commencement de son discours est toujours assez sage ; mais, dans la suite, à force de vouloir s'élever, il se perd dans les nues : on ne sait plus ni ce qu'on voit, ni ce qu'on entend.

C'est une faute excusable dans un autre homme, mais à un homme aussi sage que lui, elle ne se peut pardonner.

Il ne suffit pas de paraître honnête homme, il faut l'être.

Il nous a reçu avec bonté, et nous a écoutés avec patience.

Tout y est si bien peint, qu'on croit voir ce qu'il décrit.

On ne pense rien de vous, qui ne vous soit glorieux.

Les eaux de citerne ne sont que des eaux de pluie ramassées.

S'il n'est pas fort riche, du moins a-t-il de quoi vivre honnêtement.

Quel quantième du mois avons-nous ?

Il lui tarde qu'il soit majeur, il compte les jours et les mois.

Des qualités excellentes, jointes à de rares talents, font le parfait mérite.

Il a une mauvaise qualité, c'est qu'il ne saurait garder un secret.

*Modèles de phrases dans lesquelles, on doit faire usage de l'article.*

L'homme est sujet à bien des vicissitudes.

Les hommes d'un vrai génie sont rares.

Les hommes d'imagination sont rarement heureux.

L'homme, dont vous parlez, est un de mes amis.

La vie est un mélange de biens et de maux.

La perfection en tout genre est le but auquel on doit tendre.

La beauté, les grâces et l'esprit sont des avantages bien précieux, quand ils sont relevés par la modestie.

Voilà des tableaux d'une grande beauté.

Faites-vous des principes, dont vous ne vous écartiez jamais.

Cet arbre porte des fruits excellents.

Ces raisons sont des conjectures bien faibles.

If that man is ruined, his misfortune will recoil upon you.

He would have died, if he had not been kindly assisted.

That would be a perfect poem, if the incidents which give a heaviness to it, did not break the connexion of the subject.

*Continuation.*

If I were disposed I could not do it. I will always be your friend, even though you should not wish it.

Had you even succeeded, what were you to have derived from it ?

Should the steps you have taken be discovered, they could not be blamed.

Had you consulted somebody about your marriage, you could not have succeeded better.

Thunder and lightning are only perceptible by the transmission of sound and light to the ear and eye.

Prose language is much more simple and less figurative than poetic.

The beginning of his speech is always tolerably sensible ; but afterwards, by affecting the sublime, he loses himself, and we no longer understand either what we see or hear.

This fault would be excusable in another man, but in a man of his sense it is unfardonable.

It is not enough to seem an honest man, we must be so.

He received us with kindness, and heard us patiently.

Every thing in it is so well delineated, you think you see what he describes.

They think nothing of you but what is to your honour.

Cistern water is only rain-water collected.

If he is not rich, at least he has enough to live upon respectably.

What day of the month is it ?

He longs to be of age, and counts the days and months.

Excellent qualities, joined to distinguished talents, constitute perfect merit.

He has one bad quality, he cannot keep a secret.

*Examples of phrases in which the Article is used.*

Man is liable to a variety of changes.

Men of real genius are scarce.

Men of a visionary character are seldom happy.

The man you speak of is a friend of mine.

Life is a compound of good and evil.

Perfection in every thing ought to be our object.

Beauty, gracefulness, and wit, are valuable endowments when heightened by modesty.

These are very beautiful pictures.

Establish rules for yourself, and never deviate from them.

This tree bears very excellent fruit.

These reasons are very idle conjectures.



Servez-vous des termes établis par l'usage.

On doit éviter l'air de l'affectation.

Le Jupiter de Phidias était d'une grande beauté.

*Continuation des mêmes phrases.*

La mémoire est le trésor de l'esprit, le fruit de l'attention et de la réflexion.

J'achetai hier des gravures précieuses et rares.

La France est le plus beau pays de l'Europe.

L'intérêt de l'Allemagne était opposé à celui de la Russie.

La longueur de l'Angleterre du nord au sud est de 360 milles, et sa largeur de l'est à l'ouest est de 300.

Il arrive de la Chine, du Japon, et des Indes Orientales, &c.

Il arrive de l'Amérique, de la Barbade, de la Jamaïque, &c.

Il vient de la Flandre Française.

Il s'est établi dans la province de Middlesex.

Des petits-maîtres sont des êtres insupportables dans la société.

C'est l'opinion des nouveaux philosophes.

Elle a bien de la grâce dans tout ce qu'elle fait.

Cette étoffe se vend une guinée l'aune.  
Ce vin coûte 70 livres sterling la pièce.

Modèles de phrases dans lesquelles on ne doit pas faire usage de l'article.

Nos connaissances doivent être tirées de principes évidens.

Cet arbre porte d'excellens fruits.

Ces raisons sont de faibles conjectures.

Évitez tout ce qui a un air d'affectation.

Ces exemples peuvent servir de modèles.

Il a une grande présence d'esprit.

La mémoire de raison et d'esprit est plus utile que les autres sortes de mémoire.

Peu de personnes réfléchissent sur la rapidité de la vie.

Que d'événemens inconcevables se sont succédés les uns aux autres !

Il y a plus d'esprit, mais moins de connaissances, dans ce siècle que dans le siècle dernier.

On ne vit jamais autant d'effronterie.

Je pris hier beaucoup de peine pour rien.

Candie est une des îles les plus agréables de la Méditerranée.

Il arrive de Perse, d'Italie, d'Espagne, &c.

Il est revenu de Suisse, d'Allemagne, &c.

Les vins de France seront chers cette année ; les vignes ont coulé.

L'empire d'Allemagne est composé de grands et de petits états.

Les chevaux d'Angleterre sont excellens.

Après mon départ de Suisse, je me retirai à Rome.

*Continuation des mêmes phrases.*

Vous trouverez ce passage page 120, livre premier, chapitre dix.

Il s'est retiré en Angleterre.

Use the expressions established by custom.

We ought to avoid the appearance of affectation.

The Jupiter of Phidias was extremely beautiful.

The same Phrases continued.

Memory is the treasure of the mind, the result of attention and reflection.

I yesterday bought some valuable and scarce engravings.

France is the finest country in Europe.

The German interest was contrary to the Russian.

The length of England from north to south is 360 miles, and its breadth from east to west is 300.

He comes from China, Japan, and the East Indies.

He comes from America, Barbadoes, Jamaica, &c.

He comes from French Flanders.

He has settled in the county of Middlesex.

Coxcombs are unsufferable beings in society.

It is the opinion of the new philosophers. She does every thing most gracefully.

This stuff sells at a guinea the ell.

This wine costs seventy pounds a pipe.

Examples of phrases in which the Article is omitted.

Our knowledge ought to be derived from evident principles.

This tree produces excellent fruit.

These reasons are idle conjectures.

Avoid whatever bears the appearance of affectation.

These examples may serve as models.

He has great presence of mind.

The memory of reason and sense is more useful than any other kind of memory.

Few people reflect on the rapidity of life.

How many inconceivable events have followed in succession !

There is more wit and less knowledge in this age than in the last.

So much assurance never was met with.

I took a great deal of trouble yesterday about nothing.

Candia is one of the most agreeable islands in the Mediterranean.

He comes from Persia, Italy, Spain, &c.

He is returned from Switzerland, Germany, &c.

French wines will be dear this year ; the vines have been blighted.

The German empire is composed of great and small states.

The English horses are excellent.

After having Switzerland, I retired to Rome.

Continuation of the same phrases.

You will find this passage at page 120, book the first, chapter the tenth.

He has retired to England.

Il vit dans sa retraite *en vrai philosophe*.

Quand il réfléchit sur sa conduite, il en eut honte.

C'est un homme qui cherche *fortune*.  
Il entend *malice* à tout.

Ne portez *envie* à personne.

Si vous promettez, tenez *parole*.

Dans les affaires importantes ne vous décidez jamais sans prendre *conseil*.

Courage, *soldats*, tenons ferme ; la victoire est à nous.

Cette femme n'a ni *grâce* ni *beauté*.

Monseigneur le duc de, &c., *prince* du sang, alla hier à la campagne.

Montrer tant de faiblesse, c'est n'être pas *homme*.

Cet homme est une espèce de *misanthrope*, dont les brusqueries sont quelquefois très-plaisantes.

L'ananas est une sorte de fruit très-commun aux Antilles.

C'est un genre de *vie* qui ne me plaît point.

*Continuation des mêmes phrases.*

Cette dame plaît à tout le monde par son *bonneté* et sa douceur.

Tout homme a des défauts plus ou moins sensibles.

Cette conduite augmentait chaque jour le nombre des ses amis.

Tous les biens nous viennent de Dieu.

Vénus était la déesse de la beauté, et la mère de l'amour et des grâces.

Selon les païens, Jupiter était le premier des dieux.

Apollon était frère jumeau de Diane.

Rubens a été un grand peintre.

Homère et Virgile sont les deux plus grands poètes épiques.

London est la plus belle ville que je connaisse.

L'eau de rivière est douce, et l'eau de mer est salée.

C'est un excellent poisson de mer.

Voilà une superbe table de marbre.

L'eau de Seine est celle qu'on préfère à Paris.

Pauvreté n'est pas vice.

Citoyens, étrangers, grands, peuples, se sont montrés sensibles à cette perte.

*Formes de phrases sur le Pronom Le.*

Est-ce là votre opinion ?—ne doutez point qu'il en soit.

Sont-ce là vos domestiques ?—oui, ce les sont.

Mesdames, êtes-vous les étrangères qu'on m'a annoncées ?—oui, nous les sommes.

Madame, êtes-vous la malade pour laquelle on m'a appelé ?—oui, je la suis.

Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant ?—oui, je la suis.

Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de cette musique ?—oui, nous le sommes.

Elle est malheureuse, et je crains bien, qu'elle ne le soit toute la vie.

Madame, êtes-vous mère ?—oui, je le suis.

Madame, êtes-vous malade ?—oui, je le suis.

He lives in his retreat like a real philosopher.

When he reflected on his conduct, he was ashamed of it.

He is a man that seeks to make a fortune.

He puts a malicious construction on every thing.

Envy nobody.

If you promise, keep your word.

In matters of consequence never decide without advice.

Cheer up, soldiers, let us continue firm ; the day is our own.

This woman is destitute both of grace and beauty.

The duke of, &c., a prince of the blood, went yesterday into the country.

To show so much weakness is not acting like a man.

This man is a kind of misanthropist, whose oddities are sometimes comical.

The pine-apple is a kind of fruit very common in the Antilles.

It is a kind of life that is not agreeable to me.

The same sentences continued.

This lady pleases every one by her good breeding and mildness.

Every one has defects more or less obvious.

This behaviour daily increased the number of his friends.

Every blessing comes from God.

Venus was the goddess of beauty, and the mother of love and the graces.

According to the Heathens, Jupiter was the first of the gods.

Apollo was twin brother to Diana.

Rubens was a great painter.

Homer and Virgil are the two greatest epic poets.

London is the finest city that I know.

River water is sweet, and sea water is salt.

It is an excellent sea-fish.

There is a superb marble table.

The water of the Seine is preferred at Paris.

Poverty is not a vice.

Citizens, strangers, grandees, people, have shown themselves sensible of this loss.

Forms of phrases upon the pronoun Le.

Is that your opinion ?—do not question it.

Are these your servants ?—yes, they are.

Ladies, are you the strangers that have been announced to me ?—yes, we are.

Madam, are you the sick person for whom I have been called ?—yes, I am.

Madam, are you the mother of this child ?—yes, I am.

Ladies, are you pleased with this music ?—yes, we are.

She is unhappy, and I much fear she will continue so for life.

Madam, are you a mother ?—yes, I am.

Madam, are you sick ?—yes, I am.

Madame, depuis quel temps êtes-vous mariée?—Je le suis depuis un an.

Y a-t-il long-temps que vous êtes arrivée?—je le suis depuis quinze jours.

Aristote croyait que le monde était de toute éternité; mais Platon ne le croyait pas.

Quoique cette femme montre plus de fermeté que les autres, elle n'est pas pour cela la moins affligée.

Cette femme a l'art de répandre des larmes dans le temps même qu'elle est le moins affligée.

Modèles de phrases sur les différentes règles du participe passé.

La nouvelle pièce a-t-elle été applaudie?

Vos parens y seront-ils arrivés à temps?

Elle s'est donnée de belles robes.

Elles nous ont apporté de superbes œillets.

Cette ruse ne lui a pas réussi.

La vie tranquille que j'ai menée depuis dix ans, a beaucoup contribué à me faire oublier mes malheurs.

Les lettres, qui j'ai reçues, m'ont beaucoup affligé.

Que de peines vous vous êtes données!

Quelle tâche vous vous êtes imposée!

C'est une satire que j'ai retrouvée dans mes papiers.

Les lettres qu'a écrites Plinie le jeune, quelque agréables qu'elles soient, se ressentent néanmoins un peu de la décadence du goût parmi les Romains.

Je ne serais pas entré avec vous dans tous ces détails de grammaire, si je ne les avais crus nécessaires.

L'Egypte s'était rendue célèbre par la sagesse de ses lois long-temps avant que la Grèce sortit de la barbarie.

C'est une des plus grandes merveilles qu'on ait vues.

L'homme de lettres, dont vous m'avez parlé, a un goût exquis.

Vous avez très-bien instruit vos élèves.

Lucrèce s'est donnée la mort.

La sécheresse qu'il y a eu au printemps a fait périr tous les fruits.

Je n'ai point réussi, malgré les mesures que vous m'avez conseillé de prendre.

Quelle aventure vous est-il arrivé?

Cette femme s'est proposée pour modèle à ses enfans.

Cette femme s'est proposé d'enseigner la géographie et l'histoire à ses enfans.

Modèles de phrases sur les principaux rapports des modes et des temps.

Je l'attendais depuis long-temps, quand il vint me joindre.

Il sortit au moment même que j'entrais.

Je commençais à avoir des craintes sur la réussite de votre affaire, lorsque j'ai reçu votre lettre.

Dès que j'eus fait quelques visites indispensables, j'ai rentré chez moi, et je ne suis plus sorti.

J'avais déjà tout préparé pour mon dé-

Madam, how long have you been married?—a year.

Is it long since you arrived?—a fortnight.

Aristotle believed the world to have been from all eternity; but Plato did not.

Although this woman shows more resolution than the others, she is nevertheless not the least afflicted.

This woman has the art of shedding tears, even when she is least afflicted.

Forms of Phrases upon the different rules of the participle past.

Did the new piece meet with applause?

Will your relations arrive there in time?

She has given herself fine gowns.

They have brought us beautiful pinks.

He has not succeeded in this stratagem.

The quiet life I have led these ten years has greatly contributed to make me forget my misfortunes.

The letters I have received have afflicted me greatly.

What a deal of trouble you have given yourself!

What a task you have imposed on yourself!

It is a satire that I have again met with in my papers.

The letters which the younger Pliny has written, however agreeable they may be, savour, nevertheless, a little of the decline of taste among the Romans.

I would not have entered into these grammatical details with you, had I not thought them necessary.

Egypt had become celebrated for the wisdom of its laws long before Greece had emerged from barbarism.

It is one of the greatest wonders that has ever been seen.

The man of letters you spoke to me of has an excellent taste.

You have instructed your pupils extremely well.

Lucretia killed herself.

The dry weather we had in the spring has destroyed all the fruit.

I have not succeeded, notwithstanding the steps you advised me to take.

What adventures have you met with?

This woman proposed herself as a model for her children.

This woman proposed to teach geography and history to her children.

Forms of phrases upon the principal relations of modes and tenses.

I had waited a long time for him, when he came to me.

He was going out at the time I was entering.

I was beginning to be apprehensive of the success of your business when I received your letter.

As soon as I had paid some indispensable visits, I went home, and did not go out afterwards.

I had already made every preparation for

part, lorsque des affaires imprévues m'ont forcé à le différer de quelques jours.

Vous étiez déjà sorti, quand je me présentai chez vous.

J'avais déjà livré à l'impression mon ouvrage, lorsque vous me demandiez, si je le donnerais bientôt au public.

Lorsque j'ai eu terminé mon affaire vous avez commencé la vôtre.

Lorsque j'eus déjeuné, je montai à cheval, et je fus à Londres.

Lorsque j'aurai lu la nouvelle pièce, je vous dirai avec franchise ce que j'en pense.

Iriez-vous à Rome si vous le pouviez ? — oui, j'irais.

Auriez-vous consenti à ces conditions, si on vous les avait proposées ?

Irez-vous demain à Londres, si vous le pouvez ? — oui, j'irai.

Il sera sûrement parti, si vous l'avez voulu.

Vous eussiez laissé échapper une occasion si favorable, si l'on ne vous eût averti à temps.

*Continuation des mêmes phrases.*

On dit que vous partez aujourd'hui pour Paris.

Tout le monde soutient que vous accepterez la place qu'on vous offre.

On soupçonne que vous aviez hier reçu cette agréable nouvelle quand on vous rencontra.

Beaucoup de vos amis croient que vous partîtes hier pour la campagne.

Le bruit se répand que vous avez fait une grosse perte.

J'apprends dans l'instant que vous fusiez parti il y a trois jours, si des engagements, que vous aviez contractés depuis long-temps, ne vous avaient retenu.

N'est-il pas vrai que vous partiriez aujourd'hui, si vous le pouviez ?

Est-il vrai que vous seriez parti depuis long-temps pour la campagne, si votre amour pour les arts ne vous avait retenu à la ville ?

Je ne crois pas que vous partiez, quoique tout le monde l'assure.

Je ne croyais pas qu'il fût si-tôt de retour.

Il a fallu qu'il ait eu affaire à bien des personnes.

Je doute que votre ami fût venu à bout de ses projets, s'il n'avait pas été fortement protégé.

Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait, qui ne fût très-mortifié, s'il savait toute ce qu'on pense de lui.

Vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les affaires pussent si mal tourner.

*Modèles de Phrases sur la Négative Ne.*

Il n'y a pas beaucoup d'argent chez ces gens de lettres.

Il n'y a point de ressource dans une personne qui n'a point d'esprit.

C'est à tort que vous l'accusez de jouer ; je vous assure qu'il ne joue point.

my departure, when some unexpected business occurred, that obliged me to defer it for some days.

You were already gone out when I called upon you.

My work had been sent to be printed when you asked me if I should soon bring it out.

When my business was over, you began yours.

When I had done breakfast, I got on horseback, and went to London.

When I have read the new piece, I will candidly give you my opinion of it.

Would you go to Rome if it were in your power ? — Yes, I would.

Would you have agreed to those terms, had they been proposed to you ?

Shall you go to London to-morrow, if you can ? — Yes, I shall.

He will certainly have set out, if you wished it.

You would have let so favourable an opportunity slip, had you not been warned in time.

*The same phrases continued.*

It is said that you set off to-day for Paris.

Every one maintains that you will accept of this place that is offered to you.

It is suspected that you had received this agreeable intelligence when you were met yesterday.

Many of your friends believe that you set out yesterday for the country.

There is a report that you have met with a considerable loss.

I have this moment learnt that you would have set out three days since, had not engagements which you had formed long ago detained you.

Is it not true that you would set out to-day, if you could ?

Is it true that you would have set out for the country long since, had not your love for the arts detained you in town ?

I do not imagine that you will set out, although every body asserts it.

I did not believe he had gone back so soon.

He must have had business with a great many people.

I doubt that your friend would have succeeded in his plan, had he not been strongly patronised.

There is not a man, whatever merit he may possess, that would not be very much mortified, were he to know every thing that is thought of him.

You never persuaded yourself that matters could have taken so unfortunate a turn.

*Forms of Phrases on the Negative Ne.*

There is not much money to be found among men of letters.

There are no resources in a person with out sense.

You accuse him wrongfully of gaming ; I assure you he never games.



Entrez dans le salon ; vous pourrez lui parler ; il *ne* joue pas.

Si pour avoir du bien, il en coûte à la probité, je *n'en* veux point.

Rien n'est sûr avec les capricieux ; vous croyez être bien en faveur, *point* du tout : l'instant de la plus belle humeur est suivi de la plus fâcheuse.

Vous *ne* cessez de nous répéter les mêmes choses.

Je *n'aurais osé* vous en parler le premier.

Malgré ses protections, il *n'a pu* réussir dans ses projets.

Cet ouvrage serait fort bon, si ce n'était pour la négligence du style.

Y a-t-il quelqu'un dont elle *ne* médise.

J'ai pris tant de goût pour une vie retirée, que je *ne* sors presque jamais.

Voilà ce qui s'est passé ; *n'en* parlez à personne.

Mon parti est pris ; *ne* m'en parlez plus.

N'employez aucun de ces moyens : ils sont indignes de vous.

Rien n'est plus joli.

Je *ne* dis rien que je *ne* pense.

Je *ne* fais jamais d'excès que je *n'en* sois incommodé.

*Continuation des mêmes Phrases.*

C'est un homme pour qui je *n'ai ni* amour, *ni* estime.

Il *n'est ni* assez prudent *ni* assez éclairé.

Je vous assure que je *ne* le fréquente *ni* *ne* le vois.

*Ne* faire que parcourir les différentes branches des connaissances humaines sans s'arrêter à aucune, c'est moins chercher à s'instruire, qu'à tuer le temps.

Que *n'êtes-vous* toujours aussi complaisant ?

Il *ne* le fera pas, à moins que vous *ne* l'y engagiez.

Il *n'ira* pas, si vous *ne* l'en priez.

Il nous a menacés de se venger ; nous *n'avons* fait qu'en rire.

Trop d'insouciance *ne* peut que nuire.

Que devenez-vous ? *il y a* trois mois que nous *ne* vous avons vu ?

Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que nous *ne* vous avons vu ?

C'est bien pire qu'on *ne* le disait.

Peu s'en faut que je *n'aie* donné tête baissée dans le piège.

Dites la vérité en toute occasion ; on méprise toujours ceux qui parlent autrement qu'ils *ne* pensent.

*Ne désespérez* pas que la vérité *ne* se fasse jour à la longue.

Je *ne* disconviens pas que la chose *ne* soit ainsi.

Prenez garde qu'on *ne* vous entraîne dans quelque fausse démarche.

J'empêcherai bien qu'on *ne* vous nuise dans cette affaire.

Il *craint* qu'on *ne* le soupçonne d'avoir trempé dans ce complot.

Go into the room ; you may speak to him, he is not playing.

I do not wish to make a fortune, if it can only be done at the expense of honesty.

Nothing is certain with capricious people ; you think yourself in favour, by no means ; the moment of the best humour is followed by that of the worst.

You are constantly repeating the same thing to us.

I should not have dared to be the first to speak to you of it.

With all his interest, he has not been able to succeed in his plans.

This work would be very good, were it not for the negligence of the style.

Is there any one she does not slander ?

I have acquired so great a taste for retirement, that I seldom go abroad.

This is what has passed ; do not speak of it to any one.

My resolution is fixed ; talk to me no more of it.

Do not employ any one of these measures ; they are unworthy of you.

Nothing is more beautiful.

I never speak but what I think.

I never commit any excess without suffering by it.

*Continuation of the same Phrases.*

He is a man for whom I have neither love nor esteem.

He is neither sufficiently prudent nor enlightened.

I assure you I neither associate with him nor see him.

To go through the different branches of human knowledge only, without fixing upon any one of them, is not to seek for instruction, but to kill time.

Why are you not at all times equally complaisant ?

He will not do it, unless you persuade him to it.

He will not go, if you do not request it of him.

He has threatened us with vengeance ; we only laughed at him.

Too great supineness cannot but be hurtful.

What has become of you ? we have not seen you these three months.

How have you been since we saw you ?

It is much worse than was said.

I was near running headlong into the snare.

Tell the truth on all occasions : those who speak what they do not think are always despised.

Do not despair that truth will appear in time.

I admit that it is so.

Take care that you are not led into some false step.

I shall prevent them from doing you any harm in this business.

He is apprehensive that he is suspected of being concerned in this plot.

On lui a donné d'excellens conseils, de crainte qu'il ne manquât l'occasion de faire connaître ce qu'il est en état de faire.

J'y ai long-temps travaillé ; je ne saurais en venir à bout.

Vous feriez mieux de vous taire : vous ne savez ce que vous dites.

Vous ne sauriez me faire un plus grand plaisir.

*Phrases sur quelques Délicatesses de la Langue Française.*

Irez-vous ce soir à l'opéra ?—oui, j'irai.

Iriez-vous avec plaisir à Rome ?—oui, j'irais.

La justice qui nous est quelquefois refusée par nos contemporains, la postérité sait nous la rendre.

Cette grandeur qui vous étonne si fort, il la doit à votre nonchalance.

Il périt, ce héros, si cher à son pays.

Je l'avais bien prévu que ce haut degré de grandeur serait la cause de sa ruine.

Citoyens, étrangers, ennemis, peuples, rois, empereurs, le plaignent et le révèrent.

L'assemblée finie, chacun se retira chez soi.

Heureux le peuple qu'un sage roi gouverne.

Il refusa les plus grands honneurs, content de les mériter.

Prières, remontrances, commandemens, tout est inutile.

Le vent renverse tours, cabanes, palais, églises.

Notre réputation ne dépend pas du caprice des hommes ; mais elle dépend des actions louables que nous faisons.

Il y a beaucoup de choses qu'il n'importe point du tout de savoir.

La vue de l'esprit a plus d'étendue que la vue du corps.

Ce qui sert à la vanité, n'est que vanité.

Tout ce qui n'a que le monde pour fondement, se dissipe et s'évanouit avec le monde.

C'est le privilège des grands hommes de vaincre l'envie ; le mérite la fait naître, le mérite la fait mourir.

L'amour-propre est plus habile que le plus habile homme du monde.

En quittant le monde, on ne quitte le plus souvent ni les erreurs, ni les folles passions du monde.

*They have given him excellent advice, lest he should lose the opportunity of showing what he was capable of doing.*

*I have been long employed & cannot accomplish it.*

*You had better be silent, you do not know what you are saying.*

*You cannot do me a greater favour.*

*Phrases on some Delicacies of the French Language.*

*Shall you go to the opera this evening?—yes, I shall.*

*Would you cheerfully go to Rome?—yes, I would.*

*Posterity knows how to do us that justice which is sometimes refused us by our contemporaries.*

*That greatness which so much astonishes you, he owes to your indifference.*

*That hero, so dear to his country, perished.*

*I forebaw that the greatness of his elevation would be his ruin.*

*Citizens, strangers, enemies, nations, kings, emperors, pity and respect him.*

*The assembly being over, each returned home.*

*Happy are the people who are governed by a wise king.*

*He refused the greatest honours, satisfied with having deserved them.*

*Entreaties, remonstrances, injunctions, are all useless.*

*The wind overturns towers, cottages, palaces, churches.*

*Our reputation does not depend on the caprice of men, but on the commendable actions we perform.*

*There are many things which it is of no consequence at all to know.*

*The eye of the mind reaches much farther than the bodily eye.*

*What promotes vanity is only vanity.*

*All that is confined to this lower world, disperses and vanishes with the world.*

*It is the prerogative of great men to conquer envy ; merit gives it birth, and merit destroys it.*

*Self-love is more ingenious than the most ingenious man in the world.*

*In renouncing the world, we generally renounce neither the errors nor giddy passions of the world.*



Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

**Preservation Technologies**





LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 003 117 923 3

